This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

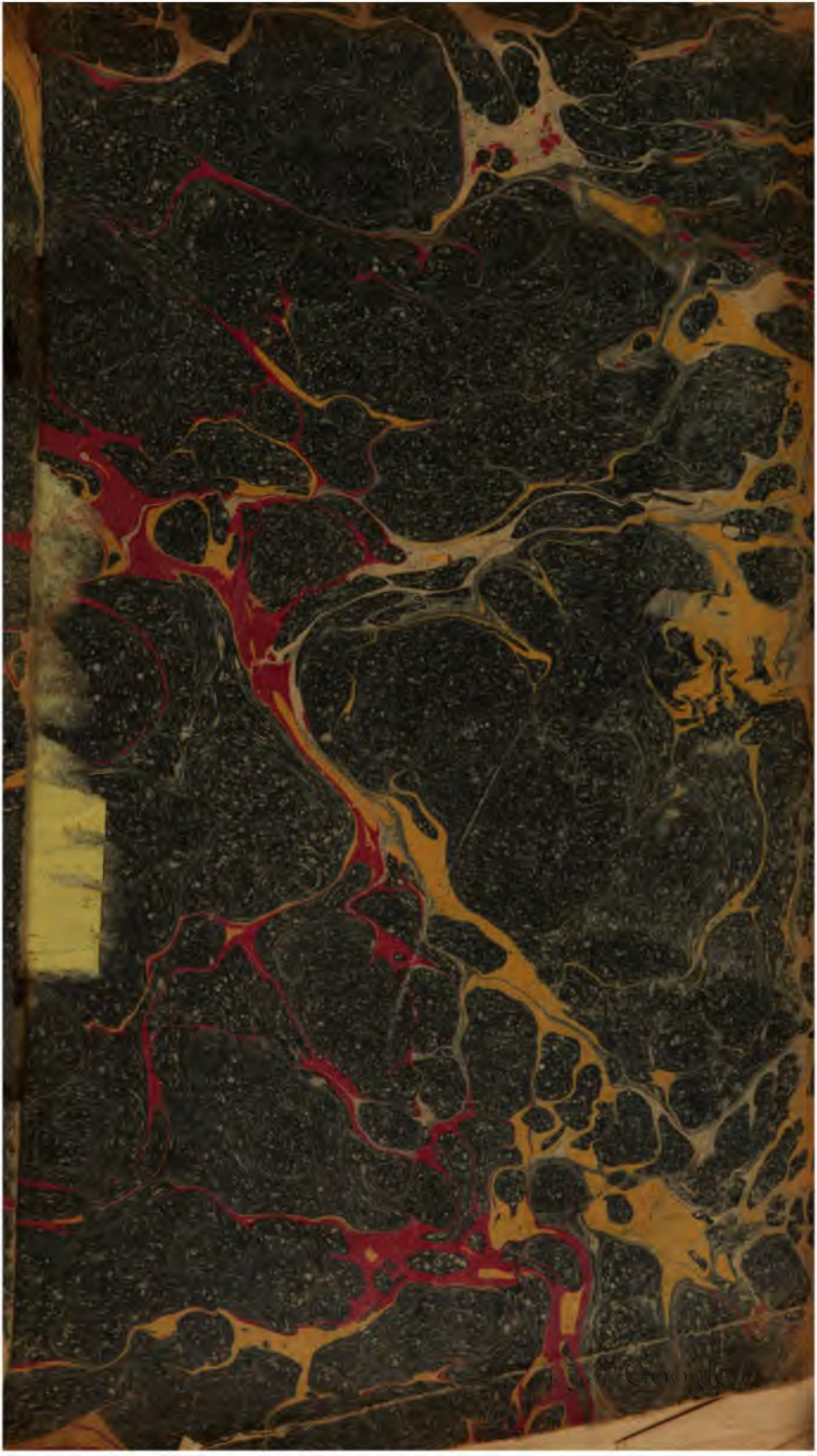
About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

Digitized by Google

BEQUEST OF
ARTHUR LYON CROSS
PROFESSOR OF ENGLISH HISTORY
TO THE
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
1940

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

825
F459
1806

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE

WORKS

OF

HENRY FIELDING, ESQ.

WITH

AN ESSAY

ON

HIS LIFE AND GENIUS,

BY ARTHUR MURPHY, ESQ.

A NEW EDITION, IN TEN VOLUMES.

VOL. VIII.

LONDON:

Printed for J. Johnson; J. Nichols and Son; R. Baldwin; F. and C. Rivington; Otridge and Son; W. J. and J. Richardson; R. Faulder: G. Nicol and Son; T. Payne; W. Lowndes; Wilkie and Robinson; Ogilvie and Son; Scatcherd and Letterman; Lane and Newman; J. Walker; Vernor and Hood; R. Lea; J. Nunn; Lackington, Allen, and Co.; Cuthell and Martin; Wynne and Son; C. Law; Longman, Hurst, Rees, and Orme; Cadell and Davies; T. Booker; S. Bagster; J. Mawman; J. Asperne; and Joseph Harding.

1806.

Digitized by Google

Marchant, Printer, 3, Greville-Street, Holborn.

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS

OF THE

EIGHTH VOLUME.

Page

PHILOSOPHICAL TRANSACTIONS for the Year 1742 and 1743 1

The First OLYNTHIAC of DEMOSTHENES 17

Of the Remedy of Affliction for the Loss of our Friends 29

A DIALOGUE between ALEXANDER the Great, and DIOGENES the Cynic . 47

An INTERLUDE between JUPITER, JUNO, APOLLO, and MERCURY, which was originally intended as an Introduction to a Comedy called JUPITER'S *Descent on Earth* 61

The TRUE PATRIOT 71

The JACOBITE'S JOURNAL 130

AMELIA 141

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Bequest
of
A. L. Cross
1-18-41

PHILOSOPHICAL

TRANSACTIONS.

FOR THE YEAR 1742-3.

THE CONTENTS.

Several Papers *relating to the* Terrestrial CHRYSIPUS, GOLDEN-FOOT, *or* GUINEA, *an* Insect, *or* Vegetable, *which has this surprising* Property, *that being cut into several pieces, each piece lives, and in a short time becomes as perfect an Insect, or Vegetable, as that of which it was originally only a Part.*

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Abstract of *Part* of a Letter from the *Heer Rottenscrach*, in *Germany*, communicating Observations on the CHRYSIPUS.

SIR,

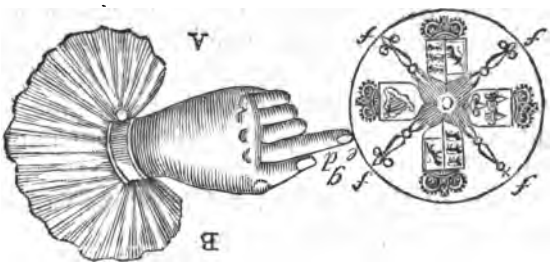
SOME time since died here of old age, one Petrus Gualterus, *a man well known in the learned world, and famous for nothing so much as for an extraordinary collection which he had made of the* Chrysipi, *an animal or vegetable; of which I doubt not but there are still some to be found in England: however, if that should be difficult, it may be easy to send some over to you; as they are at present very plentiful in these parts. I can answer for the truth of the facts contained in the Paper I send you, as there is not one of them but what I have seen repeated above twenty times; and I wish others may be encouraged to try the experiments over again, and satisfy themselves of the truth by their own eyes. The accounts of the* Chrysipi, *as well as the collection itself, were found in the cabinet of the abovementioned* Petrus, *after his death; for he could never be prevailed on to communicate a sight of either, while alive. I am,*

SIR, &c.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

The Figure of the TERRESTRIAL CHRYSIPUS *sticking to a Finger.*



Observations and Experiments upon the TERRESTRIAL CHRYSIPUS, *or* GUINEA, *by Mynheer* Petrus Gualterus.

Translated from the FRENCH *by* P. H. I. Z. C. G. S.

THE animal in question is a terrestrial vegetable or insect, of which mention is made in the *Philosophical Transactions* for several years, as may be seen in N° 000. Art. 0000. and N° 00. Art. 002. and N° —— Art. 18.

This animal or vegetable is of a rotund, orbicular, or round form, as represented in the figure annexed; in which A, denotes the ruffle; B, the hand; *g*, the thumb of that hand; *d*, the finger; *e*, the part of that finger to which the CHRYSIPUS sticks: *f*, *f*, *f*, *f*, four tubes, representing the Πέος,* or *man's staff*, mentioned by Galen in his Treatise *de Usu Partium;* and by Aristotle, in that

* See *Philos. Transact.* concerning the *arbor vitæ*, *anno* 1732.

Digitized by Google

little book called his Ἀρχιβιβλιόν, or *Master-piece.* The το θηλυκον, or *woman's pipe,* an oblong perforated substance, to which the said Πεῆ directly tend, is represented by the letter C. *The mouth of the* Chrysipus *is in this anteriour middle, it opens into the stomach, which takes up the whole length of the body.* The whole body forms but one pipe, a sort of gut, which can be opened but at one end, *i. e.* at letter C.

The size of the body of a Chrysipus varies according to its different species.

I know two species only, differing in extent almost one-half; which, for distinction sake, I call the *whole Chrysipus,* and the *hemi-Chrysipus.* The latter of these is by no means so valuable as the former. The length of the Πεῆ differ likewise in proportion to the different size or extension of these two.

The Πεῆ of those of a modern growth are so imperfect and invisible to the naked eye, that it is much to be feared the species will soon be entirely lost among us; and, indeed, in England, they are observed of late to be much rarer than formerly, especially in the country, where at present there are very few of them to be found; but at the same time it is remarked, that in some places of the Continent, particularly in a certain part of Germany, they are much plentier; being to be found in great numbers, where formerly there were scarce any to be met with.

I have not, after the minutest observation, been able to settle with any degree of certainty, whether this be really an animal or vegetable, or whether it be not strictly neither, or rather both. For as I have, by the help of my microscope, discovered some of its parts to resemble those of a lion; I have at other times taken notice of something not unlike the *Flower-de-luce.* Not to repeat those parts abovementioned, which bear great analogy to the Αἰδοια of the human body. On their ex-

Digitized by Google

tremities (if they are not very old) may be seen certain letters forming the names of several of our kings; whence I have been almost inclined to conclude, that these are the flowers mentioned by Virgil, and which appear to have been so extremely scarce in his time.

Dic quibus in terris inscripti nomina regum
Nascuntur flores.

Particularly as he adds,

—— *Et Phyllida solus habeto.*

Of which we shall take notice hereafter, when we come to speak of its properties. What hath principally dissuaded me from an opinion of its being an animal, is, that I could never observe any symptoms of voluntary motion; but indeed the same may be said of an oyster, which I think is not yet settled by the learned to be *absolutely* a vegetable.

But though it hath not, or seems not to have any progressive motion of its own, yet is it very easy to communicate a motion to it. Indeed, some persons have made them fly all over the town with great volocity.

What is said of the *Polypus*, in a late excellent paper cummunicated to the Royal Society, is likewise applicable to the *Chrysipus*.

"They make use of their progressive motion, "when communicated to them, to place themselves conveniently, so as to catch their prey. "They are voracious animals; their Πεῆ are so "many snares which they set for numbers of small "*insects*. As soon as any of them touches one of "the Πεῆ, it is caught."

But then it differs from the *Polypus* in the consequence; for instead of making the *insect* its prey, it becomes itself a prey to it, and instead of conveying an *insect* twice as large as its own mouth into it, in imitation of the *Polypus*, the

Digitized by Google

poor *Chrysipus* is itself conveyed into the *Loculus* or pouch of an *insect* a thousand times as large as itself. Notwithstanding which, this wretched animal (for so I think we may be allowed to call it) is so eager after its prey, that if the *insect* (which seldom happens) makes any resistance, it summons other *Chrysipi* to its aid, which in the end hardly ever fail of subduing it, and getting into its pouch.

The learned *Gualterus* goes on in these words: "A *Chrysipus*, by the simple contact of my own "finger, has so closely attached itself to my hand, "that by the joint and indefatigable labour of "several of my friends, it could by no means be "severed, or made to quit its hold."

As to the generation of the *Chrysipus*, it differs from all other animals or vegetables whatever; for though it seems the best supplied for this natural function, nature having provided each female part with four male ones, which one would think sufficient; yet it may be said, as of the *Polypus*, they have no distinguished place by which they bring forth their young.

Gualterus judiciously remarks:* "I have (says "he) some of them, that have greatly *multiplied* "*under my eyes*, and of which I might almost say, "that they have produced young ones from all "the exterior parts of their body.

"I have learned by a *continual attention* to the "two species of them, that all the individuals of "these species produce young ones.

"I have for sixty years had under my eye thou-"sands of them; and though I have OBSERVED "THEM CONSTANTLY, and with ATTENTION, so "as to watch them night and day, I never ob-"served any thing like the common animal-co-"pulation.

"I tried at first two of them; but these I found "would not produce a complete *Chrysipus*; at least

* Vid. Remarks on the *Polypus*, pag. 6.

Digitized by Google

"I had reason to think the operation would be so "slow, that I must have waited some years for its "completion. Upon this, I tried a hundred of "them together; by whose marvellous union "(whether it be, that they mix total, like those "heavenly spirits mentioned by Milton, or by any "other process not yet revealed to human wit) "they were found in the year's end to produce "three, four, and sometimes five complete *Chrysipi*. "I have indeed often made them in that space "produce ten or twenty; but this hath been by "some held a dangerous experiment, not only to "the parent *Chrysipi* themselves, which have by "these means been utterly lost and destroyed, "but even to the philosopher who hath attempted "it; for as some curious persons have, by hermetic "experiments, endangered the loss of their teeth, "so we, by a too intense application to this *Chry-* "*sipean* philosophy, have been sometimes found "to endanger our ears." He then proceeds thus:

* "Another fact, which I have observed, has "proved to me, that they have the faculty of mul- "tiplying, before they are severed from their parent. "I have seen a *Chrysipus*, still adhering, bring "forth young ones; and those young ones them- "selves have also brought forth others. Upon "supposition, that perhaps there was some *copula-* "*tion between the parent and young ones*, whilst "they were yet united; or between the young "ones coming from the body of the same parent; "I made divers experiments to be sure of the fact; "but not one of those experiments ever led me to "any thing that could give the idea of a copu- "lation."

I now proceed to the singularities resulting from the operation I have tried upon them.

A *Chrysipus* of the larger kind may be divided into one-and-twenty substances (whether animal

* Remarks, pag. 7.

Digitized by Google

or vegetable we determine not), every substance being at least as large as the original *Chrysipus*. These may again be subdivided, each of them into twenty-four; and what is very remarkable, every one of these parts is heavier, and rather larger than the first *Chrysipus*. The only difference in this change, is that of the colour; for the first sort are yellow, the second white, and the third resemble the complexion and substance of many human faces.

These subdivided parts are by some observed to lose in a great degree their adherescent quality; notwithstanding which, *Gualterus* writes, that, from the minutest observations upon his own experience, they all adhered with equal tenacity to his own fingers.

The manner of dividing a *Chrysipus* differs, however, greatly from that of the *Polypus*; for whereas we are taught in that excellent treatise above-mentioned, that

* "If the body of a *Polypus* is cut into two parts "transversely, each of those parts becomes a com- "plete *Polypus:* on the very day of the operation, "the first part, or anterior end of the *Polypus*, "that is, the head, the mouth, and the arms: this "part, I say, lengthens itself, it creeps, and "eats.

"The second part, *which has no head, gets one;* "a mouth forms itself at the anterior end; and "shoots forth arms. This reproduction comes "about more or less quickly, according as the "weather is more or less warm. In summer, I "have seen arms begin to sprout out twenty- "four hours after the operation, and *the new "head perfected in every respect in a few days.*

"Each of those parts thus becomes a perfect "*Polypus*, performs absolutely all its functions. "It creeps, it eats, it grows, and it multiplies;

* See *Polypus*, pag. 8, 9, 10.

Digitized by Google

" *and all that*, as much as a *Polypus* which " never had been cut.

" In whatever place the body of a *Polypus* is cut, " whether in the middle, or more or less near the " head, or the posterior part, the experiment has " always the same success.

" If a *Polypus* is cut transversely at the same " moment, into three or four parts, they all equally " become so many complete ones.

" The animal is too small to be cut at the same " time into a great number of parts; *I therefore* " *did it successively.* I first cut a *Polypus* into " four parts, and let them grow; next, I cut those " quarters again; and at this rate I proceeded, *till* " *I had made 50 out of one single one:* and here I " stopped, for there would have been *no end of the* " *experiment.*

" I have now actually by me several parts of the " same *Polypus* cut into pieces above a year ago; " since which time they have produced a great " number of young ones.

" *A Polypus may also be cut in two, lengthways.* " *Beginning by the head, one first splits the said* " *head, and afterwards the stomach:* the *Polypus* " being in the form of a pipe, each half of what is " thus cut lengthways forms a half pipe: the an- " terior extremity of which is terminated by the " half of the head, the half of the mouth, and part " of the arms. It is not long before the two edges " of those half-pipes close after the operation; " they generally begin at the posterior part, and " close up by degrees to the anterior part. *Then* " *each half-pipe becomes a whole one complete*: a " stomach is formed, in which nothing is want- " ing; and *out of each half-mouth a whole one is* " *formed also.*

" I have seen all this done in less than an hour; " and that the *Polypus* produced from each of " those halves, at the end of that time, did not

Digitized by Google

" differ from the whole ones, except that it had " fewer arms; but in a few days more grew out.

" I have cut a *Polypus* lengthways, between " seven and eight in the morning; and between " two and three in the afternoon, *each of the parts* " *has been able to eat a worm as long as itself.*

" If a *Polypus* is cut lengthways, beginning at " the head, and the section is not carried quite " through; the result is, a *Polypus* with two bo- " dies, two heads, and one tail. Some of those " bodies and heads may again be cut lengthways " soon after. In this manner I have *produced a* " Polypus *that had several bodies, as many heads,* " *and one tail.* I afterwards at once cut off the " seven heads of this new *Hydra:* seven others " grew again; *and the heads that were cut off, be-* " *came each a complete* Polypus.

" I cut a *Polypus*, transversely, into two parts: " I put these two parts close to each other again, " and they reunited where they had been cut. " The *Polypus*, thus reunited, eat the day after it " had undergone this operation: it is since grown, " and has multiplied.

" *I took the posterior part of one* Polypus, *and* " *the anterior of another, and I have brought them* " *to reunite in the same manner as the foregoing.* " Next day, the *Polypus that resulted*, eat: it " has continued well these two months since the " operation: it is grown, and has put forth young " ones from each of the parts of which it was " formed. The two foregoing experiments do not " always succeed; it often happens, that the two " parts will not join again.

" In order to comprehend the experiment I am " now going to speak of, one should recollect, that " the whole body of a *Polypus* forms only one " pipe, a sort of gut, or pouch.

" *I have been able to turn that pouch, that body* " *of the* Polypus, INSIDE-OUTWARDS; AS ONE " MAY TURN A STOCKING.

Digitized by Google

"I have several by me, that have remained "turned in this manner; THEIR INSIDE IS BE-"COME THEIR OUTSIDE, AND THEIR OUTSIDE "THEIR INSIDE: they eat, they grow, and they "multiply, as if they had never been turned."

Now, in the division and subdivision of our *Chrysipus*, we are forced to proceed in quite a different manner; namely, by the metabolic or mutative, not by the schystic or divisive. Some have indeed attempted this latter method; but like that great philosopher the elder Pliny, they have perished in their disquisitions, as he did, by suffocation. Indeed, there is a method called the *Kleptistic*, which hath been preferred to the metabolic: but this is too dangerous; the ingenious Gualterus never carried it farther than the metabolic, contenting himself sometimes to divide the original *Chrysipus* into twenty-two parts, and again to subdivide these into twenty-five; but this requires great art.

It can't be doubted but that Mr. Trembley will, in the work he is pleased to promise us, give some account of the longevity of the *Polypus*. As to the age of the *Chrysipus*, it differs extremely; some being of equal duration with the life of man, and some of scarce a moment's existence. The best method of preserving them is, I believe, in bags or chests, in large numbers; for they seldom live long when they are alone. The great Gualterus says, he thought he could never put enough of them together. If you carry them in your pockets singly, or in pairs, as some do, they will last a very little while, and in some pockets not a day.

* We are told of the *Polypus*, "That they are "to be looked for in such ditches whose water is "stocked with small insects. Pieces of wood, "leaves, aquatic plants, in short, every thing is to "be taken out of the water, that is met with at

* *Polypus*, pag. 1, 2.

Digitized by Google

" the bottom, or on the surface of the water, on " the edges, and in the middle of the ditches. " What is thus taken out, must be put into a glass " of clear water, and these insects, if there are " any, will soon discover themselves; especially if " the glass is let stand a little, without moving it: " for thus the insects, which contract themselves " when they are first taken out, will again extend " themselves when they are at rest, and become " thereby so much the more remarkable."

The *Chrysipus* is to be looked for in scrutores, and behind wainscots in old houses. In searching for them, particular regard is to be had to the persons who inhabit, or have inhabited, in the same houses, by observing which rule, you may often prevent throwing away your labour. They love to be rather with old than young persons, and detest finery so much, that they are seldom to be found in the pockets of laced clothes, and hardly ever in gilded palaces. They are sometimes very difficult to be met with, even though you know where they are, by reason of *pieces of wood, iron*, &c. which must be removed away before you can come at them. There are, however, several sure methods of procuring them, which are all ascertained in a treatise on that subject, composed by Petrus Gualterus, which, now he is dead, will shortly see the light.

I come now, in the last place, to speak of the virtues of the *Chrysipus:* In these it exceeds not only the *Polypus*, of which not one single virtue is recorded, but all other animals and vegetables whatever. Indeed, I intend here only to set down some of its chief qualities; for to enumerate all, would require a large volume.

First, then, A single *Chrysipus* stuck on to the finger, will make a man talk for a full hour, nay, will make him say whatever the person who sticks it on desires: and again, if you desire silence, it will as effectually stop the most loquacious tongue.

Digitized by Google

Sometimes, indeed, one or two, or even twenty, are not sufficient; but if you apply the proper number, they seldom or never fail of success. It will likewise make men blind or deaf, as you think proper; and all this without doing the least injury to the several organs.

Secondly, It hath a most miraculous quality of turning black into white, or white into black. Indeed it hath the powers of the prismatic glass, and can, from any object, reflect what colour it pleases.

Thirdly, It is the strongest love-powder in the world, and hath such efficacy on the female sex, that it hath often produced love in the finest women to the most worthless and ugly, old and decrepit of our sex.

To give the strongest idea in one instance, of the salubrious quality of the *Chrysipus:* it is a medicine which the physicians are so fond of taking themselves, that few of them care to visit a patient, without swallowing a dose of it.

To conclude, *facts like these I have related, to be admitted*, require the most convincing proofs. *I venture to say, I am able to produce such proofs.* In the mean time, I refer my curious reader to the treatise I have above mentioned, which is not yet published, and perhaps never may.

POSTSCRIPT.

Since I composed the above treatise, I have been informed, that these animals swarm in England all over the country, like the locusts, once in SEVEN years; and like them too, they generally cause much mischief, and greatly ruin the country in which they have swarmed.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE FIRST

OLYNTHIAC

OF

DEMOSTHENES.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE FIRST

OLYNTHIAC

OF

DEMOSTHENES.

THE ARGUMENT.

Olynthus was a powerful free City of Thrace, on the Confines of Macedonia. By certain alluring Offers, Philip had tempted them into an Alliance with him, the Terms of which were a joint War against the Athenians, and if a Peace, a joint Peace. The Olynthians, some Time after, becoming jealous of his growing Power, detach themselves from his Alliance, and make a separate Peace with the Athenians. Philip, exclaiming against this as a Breach of their former Treaty, and glad of an Opportunity, which he had long been seeking, immediately declares War against them, and besieges their City. Upon this, they dispatch an Embassy to Athens for Succour. The Subject of this Embassy coming to be debated among the Athenians, Demosthenes gives his Sentiments in the following Oration.

NO treasures, O Athenians! can, I am confident, be so desirable in your eyes, as to discover what is most advantageous to be done for this city, in the affair now before you. And since it is of so

Digitized by Google

important a nature, the strictest attention should be given to all those who are willing to deliver their opinions; for not only the salutary counsels which any one may have premeditated, are to be heard and received, but I consider it as peculiar to your fortune and good genius, that many things, highly expedient, may suggest themselves to the speakers, even extemporarily, and without premeditation; and then you may easily, from the whole, collect the most useful resolutions. The present occasion wants only a tongue to declare, that the posture of these affairs requires your immediate application, if you have any regard for your preservation. I know not what disposition we all entertain; but my own opinion is, that we vote a supply of men to the Olynthians, and that we send them immediately; and thus by lending them our assistance now, we shall prevent the accidents which we have formerly felt, from falling again on us. Let an embassy be dispatched, not only to declare these our intentions, but to see them executed. For my greatest apprehension is, that the artful Philip, who well knows to improve every opportunity, by concessions, where they are most convenient, and by threats, which we may believe him capable of fulfilling, at the same time objecting our absence to our allies, may draw from the whole some considerable advantage to himself. This however, O Athenians! will give some comfort, that the very particular circumstance which adds the greatest strength to Philip, is likewise favourable to us. In his own person he unites the several powers of general, of king, and of treasurer; he presides absolutely in all councils, and is constantly at the head of his army. This indeed will contribute greatly to his successes in the field, but will have a contrary effect, with regard to that truce which he is so desirous to make with the Olynthians; who will find their contention not to be for glory, nor for the enlargement of dominion;

Digitized by Google

the subversion or slavery of their country is what they fight against. They have seen in what manner he hath treated those Amphipolitans who surrendered their city to him; and those Pydnæans who received him into theirs: and indeed, universally, a kingly state is, in my opinion, a thing in which republics will never trust; and above all, if their territories border on each other. These things therefore, O Athenians! being well known to you, when you enter on this debate, your resolutions must be for war, and to prosecute it with as much vigour as you have formerly shewn on any occasion. You must resolve to raise supplies with the utmost alacrity; to muster yourselves; to omit nothing; for no longer can a reason be assigned, or excuse alleged, why you should decline what the present exigency requires. For the Olynthians, whom with such universal clamours you have formerly insisted on our fomenting against Philip, are now embroiled with him by mere accident; and this most advantageously for you; since, had they undertaken the war at your request, their alliance might have been less stable, and only to serve a present turn: but since their animosity arises from injuries offered to themselves, their hostility will be firm; as well on account of their fears, as of their resentment. The opportunity which now offers is not, O Athenians! to be lost, nor should you suffer what you have already often suffered. For had we, when we returned from succouring the Eubœans, when Hierax and Stratrocles from the Amphipolitans, in this very place, besought you to sail to their assistance, and to receive their city into your protection; had we then consulted our own interest with the same zeal with which we provided for the safety of the Eubœans, we had then possessed ourselves of Amphipolis, and escaped the troubles which have since perplexed us. Again, when we were first acquainted with the sieges of Pydna, Potidæa, Methone, Pagasæ, and others

Digitized by Google

(for I will not waste time in enumerating all), had we then assisted only one of these with proper vigour, we should have found Philip much humbler, and easier to be dealt with: whereas now, by constantly pretermitting the opportunities when they presented themselves, and trusting in fortune for the good success of future events, we have encreased the power, O Athenians! of Philip ourselves, and have raised him higher than any king of Macedonia ever was. Now then an opportunity is come. What is it? why this which the Olynthians have of their own accord offered to this city; nor is it inferior to any of those we have formerly lost. To me, O Athenians! it appears, that if we settle a just account with the gods, notwithstanding all things are not as they ought to be, they are entitled to our liberal thanksgivings. For as to our losses in war, they are justly to be set down to our own neglect: but that we formerly suffered not these misfortunes, and that an alliance now appears to balance these evils, if we will but accept it: this, in my opinion, must be referred to the benevolence of the gods. But it happens as in the affair of riches, of which, I think, it is proverbially said, that if a man preserves the wealth he attains, he is greatly thankful to fortune; but if he insensibly consumes it, his gratitude to fortune is consumed at the same time. So in public affairs, if we make not a right improvement of opportunities, we forget the good offered us by the gods; for from the final event, we generally form our judgements of all that preceded. It is therefore highly necessary, O Athenians! to take effectual care, that by making a right use of the occasion now offered us, we wipe off the stains contracted by our former conduct: for should we, O Athenians! desert these people likewise, and Philip be enabled to destroy Olynthus, will any man tell me what afterwards shall stop his future progress, wherever he desires to extend it? But consider,

Digitized by Google

O Athenians! and see, by what means this Philip, once so inconsiderable, is now become so great. He first became master of Amphipolis, secondly of Pydna, next of Potidæa, and then of Methone. After these conquests, he turned his arms towards Thessaly, where having reduced Phera, Pagasæ, Magnesia, he marched on to Thrace. Here, after he had dethroned some kings, and given crowns to others, he fell sick. On a small amendment of health, instead of refreshing himself with repose, he fell presently on the Olynthians. His expeditions against the Illyrians, the Pæonians, against Arymba, and who can recount all the other nations I omit. But should any man say, why therefore do you commemorate these things to us now? my answer is, that you may know, O Athenians! and sensibly perceive these two things: First, how pernicious it is to neglect the least article of what ought to be done; and, secondly, that you may discern the restless disposition of Philip to undertake, and his alacrity to execute: whence we may conclude, he will never think he hath done enough, nor indulge himself in ease. If then his disposition be to aim still at greater and greater conquests, and ours to neglect every brave measure for our defence; consider, in what event we can hope these things should terminate! Good gods! is there any of you so infatuated, that he can be ignorant that the war will come home to us, if we neglect it? and if this should happen, I fear, O Athenians! that we shall imitate those who borrow money at great usury, who, for a short affluence of present wealth, are afterwards turned out of their original patrimony. So we shall be found to pay dearly for our sloth; and by giving our minds entirely up to pleasure, shall bring on ourselves many and grievous calamities, against our will shall be at last reduced to a necessity of action, and to contend even for our own country. Perhaps some one may object, that to find fault is

Digitized by Google

easy, and within any man's capacity; but to advise proper measures to be taken in the present exigency, is the part of a counsellor. I am not ignorant, O Athenians! that not those who have been the first causes of the misfortune, but those who have afterwards delivered their opinions concerning it, fall often under your severe displeasure, when the success doth not answer their expectations. Be that as it will, I do not so tender my own safety, that from any regard to that, I should conceal what I imagine may conduce to your welfare.

The measures you are to take are, in my opinion, two: First, to preserve the Olynthian cities, by sending a supply of men to their assistance; secondly, to ravage the country of the enemy; and this by attacking it both by sea and land. If either of these be neglected, I much fear the success of your expedition: for should he, while you are wasting his territories, by submitting to suffer this, take Olynthus; he will be easily able to return home, and defend his own. On the other hand, if you only send succours to the Olynthians; when Philip perceives himself safe at home, he will set down before Olynthus, and employing every artifice against the town, will at length master it. We must therefore assist the Olynthians with numerous forces, and in two several places. This is my advice concerning the manner of our assisting them. As for the supply of money to be raised; you have a treasury, O Athenians! you have a treasury fuller of money, set apart for military uses, than any other city of Greece: this fund you may apply according to your pleasure, on this occasion; if the army be supplied this way, you will want no tax: if not, you will hardly find any tax sufficient. What? says some one, do you move to have this fund applied to the army? not I, truly; I only suggest that an army should be levied; that this fund should be applied to it;

Digitized by Google

that those who do their duty to the public, should receive their reward from it; whereas, in celebrating the public festivals, much is received by those who do nothing for it.

As to the rest, I think, all should contribute largely, if much wanted, less, if little. Money is wanted, and without it, nothing which is necessary to be done can be performed. Others propose other means of raising it; of which do you fix on that which seems most advantageous, and apply yourselves to your preservation, while you have an opportunity: for you ought to consider and weigh well the posture in which Philip's affairs now stand: for it appears to me, that no man, even though he hath not examined them with much accuracy, can imagine them to be in the fairest situation. He would never have entered into this war, had he thought it would have been protracted. He hoped, at his very entrance to have carried all things before him, which expectation hath deceived him. This, therefore, by falling out contrary to his opinion, hath given him the first shock, and much dejected him. Then the commotions in Thessaly: for these are by nature the most perfidious of mortals, and have always proved so; as such he hath now sufficiently experienced them. They have decreed to demand Pagasæ of him, and to forbid the fortifying Magnesia. I have moreover heard it said, that the Thessalians would no longer open their ports to him; nor suffer his fleets to be victualled in their markets; for that these should go to the support of the republics of Thessaly, and not to the use of Philip. But should he be deprived of these, he will find himself reduced to great straits to provide for his auxiliaries. And further; can we suppose that Pæonia and Illyria, and all the other cities, will chuse rather to be slaves than free, and their own masters? They are not inured to bondage, and the man is, as they say, prone to insa-

Digitized by Google

lence; which is indeed very credible; for unmerited success entirely perverts the understanding in weaker minds; whence it is often more difficult to retain advantages than it was to gain them. It is our parts then, O Athenians! to take advantage of this distress of Philip, to undertake the business with the utmost expedition; not only to dispatch the necessary embassies, but to follow them with an army, and to stir up all his other enemies against him: for we may be assured of this, that had Philip the same opportunity, and the war was near our borders, he would be abundantly ready to invade us. Are you not then ashamed through fear to omit bringing that on him, when you have an opportunity, which he, had he that opportunity, would surely bring on you? Besides, let none of you be ignorant, that you have now your option, whether you shall attack him abroad, or be attacked by him at home; for if the Olynthians, by your assistance, are preserved, the kingdom of Philip will be by your forces invaded; and you may then retain your own dominions, your own city in safety; but should Philip once master the Olynthians, who would oppose his march hither? the Thebans? let me not be thought too bitter, if I say, they would be ready to assist him against us. The Phocians? they are not able to save themselves, unless you, or some one else will assist them. But, my friend, says one, Philip will have no desire to invade us.——I answer, it would surely be most absurd, if what he imprudently now threatens us with, he would not, when he conveniently could, perform. As to the difference, whether the war be here or there, there is, I think, no need of argument; for if it was necessary for you to be thirty days in the field within your own territories, and to sustain your army with your own product, supposing no enemy there at the same time; I say, the losses of your husbandmen, who supply those provisions, would be greater than the

Digitized by Google

whole expense of the preceding war. But if an actual war should come to our doors, what losses must we then expect? Add to this, the insults of the enemy, and that which to generous minds is not inferior to any loss, the disgrace of such an incident. It becomes us all, therefore, when we consider all these things, to apply our utmost endeavours to expel this war from our borders; the rich, that for the many things they possess, parting with a little, they may secure the quiet possession of the rest; the young men, that having learnt experience in the art of war, at Philip's expense, in his country, they may become formidable defenders of their own; the orators, that they may be judicially vindicated in the advice they have given to the republic; since according to the success of the measures taken in consequence of their opinions, so you will judge of the advisers themselves. May this success be happy, for the sake of every one!

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

OF THE

REMEDY

OF

AFFLICTION

FOR THE LOSS OF OUR

FRIENDS.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

OF THE

REMEDY

OF

AFFLICTION

FOR THE LOSS OF OUR

FRIENDS.

IT would be a strange consideration (saith Cicero) that while so many excellent remedies have been discovered for the several diseases of the human body, the mind should be left without any assistance to alleviate and repel the disorders which befal it. The contrary of this he asserts to be true, and prescribes philosophy to us, as a certain and infallible method to assuage and remove all those perturbations which are liable to affect this nobler part of man.

Of the same opinion were all those wise and illustrious ancients, whose writings and sayings on this subject have been transmitted to us. And when Seneca tells us, that *virtue* is sufficient to subdue all our passions, he means no other (as he explains it in many parts of his works) than *that exalted divine philosophy*, which consisted not in vain pomp, or useless curiosity, nor even in the search of more profitable knowledge, but in acquiring solid lasting habits of virtue, and ingrafting them into our character. It was not the bare knowing the right way, but the constant and steady walking in it, which those glorious writers recommended and dignified by the august names of *philosophy*

Digitized by Google

and *virtue;* which two words, if they did not always use in a synonymous sense, yet they all agreed in this, that virtue was the consummation of true philosophy.

Now that this supreme philosophy, this habit of virtue, which strengthened the mind of a Socrates, or a Brutus, is really superior to every evil which can attack us, I make no doubt; but in truth, this is to have a sound, not a sickly constitution. With all proper deference, therefore, to such great authorities, they seem to me to assert no more than that health is a remedy against disease; for a soul once possessed of that degree of virtue which can without emotion look on poverty, pain, disgrace, and death, as things indifferent; a soul, as Horace expresses it,

Totus teres atque rotundus;

or, according to Seneca, *which derives all its comfort from* WITHIN, *not from* WITHOUT; which can look down on all the ruffling billows of fortune, as from a rock on shore we survey a tempestuous sea with unconcern; such a soul is surely in a state of health which no vigour of bodily constitution can resemble.

And as this health of the mind exceeds that of the body in degree, so doth it in constancy or duration. In the latter, the transition from perfect health to sickness is easy, and often sudden; whereas the former being once firmly established in the robust state above described, is never afterwards liable to be shocked by any accident or impulse of fortune.

It must be confessed, indeed, that those great masters have pointed out the way to this philosophy, and have endeavoured to allure and persuade others into it; but as it is certain that few of their disciples have been able to arrive at its perfection; nay, as several of the masters themselves have done little honour to their precepts,

Digitized by Google

their examples, there seems still great occasion for a mental physician, who should consider the human mind (as is often the case of the body) in too weak and depraved a situation to be restored to firm vigour and sanity, and should propose rather to palliate and lessen its disorders, than absolutely to cure them.

To consider the whole catalogue of diseases to which our minds are liable, and to prescribe proper remedies for them all, would require a much longer treatise than what I now intend; I shall confine myself therefore to one only, and to a particular species of that one, *viz.* to *affliction for the death of our friends.*

This is a malady to which the best and worthiest of men are chiefly liable. It is, like a fever, the distemper of a rich and generous constitution. Indeed, we may say of those base tempers which are totally incapable of being affected with it, what a witty physician of the last age said of a shattered and rotten carcass, that they are not worth preserving.

For this reason the calm demeanour of Stilpo the philosopher, who, when he had lost his children at the taking *Megara*, by *Demetrius*, concluded, *he had lost nothing, for that he carried all which was his own about him*, hath no charms for me. I am more apt to impute such sudden tranquillity at so great a loss, to ostentation or obduracy, than to consummate virtue. It is rather wanting the affection than conquering it. To overcome the affliction arising from the loss of our friends, is great and praiseworthy; but it requires some reason and time. This sudden unruffled composure is owing to mere insensibility; to a depravity of the heart, not goodness of the understanding.

But in a mind of a different cast, in one susceptible of a tender affection, fortune can make no other ravage equal to such a loss. It is tearing the heart, the soul from the body; not by a momen-

Digitized by Google

tary operation, like that by which the most cruel tormentors of the body soon destroy the subject of their cruelty; but by a continued, tedious, though violent agitation; the soul having this double unfortunate superiority to the body, that its agonies, as they are more exquisite, so they are more lasting.

If however this calamity be not in a more humane disposition to be presently or totally removed, an attempt to lessen it is, however, worth our attention. He who could reduce the torments of the gout to one-half or a third of the pain, would, I apprehend, be a physician in much vogue and request; and surely, some palliative remedies are as much worth our seeking in the mental disorder; especially if this latter should (as appears to me who have felt both) exceed the former in its anguish a hundred fold.

I will proceed, therefore, without further apology, to present my reader with the best prescriptions I am capable of furnishing; many of which have this uncommon recommendation, that I have tried them upon myself with some success. And if Montaigne be right in his choice of a physician, who had himself had the disease which he undertook to cure, I shall at least have that pretension to some confidence and regard.

And first, by way of preparative; while we yet enjoy our friends, and no immediate danger threatens us of losing them, nothing can be wholesomer than frequent reflections on the certainty of this loss, however distant it may then appear to us; for if it be worth our while to prepare the body for diseases which may possibly (or at most probably) attack us, how much more necessary must it seem to furnish the mind with every assistance to encounter a calamity which our own death only, or the previous determination of our friendship, can prevent from happening to us.

It hath been mentioned as one of the first ingre-

Digitized by Google

dients of a *wise* man, that nothing befalls him entirely unforeseen, and unexpected. And this is surely the principal means of taking his happiness or misery out of the hands of fortune. Pleasure or pain, which seize us unprepared, and by surprise, have a double force, and are both more capable of subduing the mind, than when they come upon us looking for them, and prepared to receive them. That pleasure is heightened by long expectation, appears to me a great though vulgar error. The mind, by constant premeditation on either, lessens the sweetness of the one, and bitterness of the other. It hath been well said of lovers who for a long time procrastinate and delay their happiness, that they have loved themselves out before they come to the actual enjoyment; this is as true in the more ungrateful article of affliction. The objects of our passions, as well as of our appetites, may be in a great measure devoured by imagination; and grief, like hunger, may be so palled and abated by expectation, that it may retain no sharpness when its food is set before it.

The thoughts which are to engage our consideration on this head are too various, and many of them too obvious, to be enumerated; the principal are surely, First, the certainty of the dissolution of this alliance, however sweet it be to us, or however closely the knot be tied. Secondly, the extreme shortness of its duration, even at the best. And, Thirdly, the many accidents by which it is daily and hourly liable of being brought to an end.

Had not the wise man frequently meditated on these subjects, he would not have coolly answered the person who acquainted him with the death of his son—I KNEW *I had begot a Mortal.* Whereas, by the behaviour of some on these occasions, we might be almost induced to suspect they were disappointed in their hopes of their friend's immortality; that something uncommon, and beyond

Digitized by Google

the general fate of men, had happened to them. In a word, that they had flattered their fondness for their children and friends as enthusiastically as the poets have their works, which

——— nec Jovis ira nec ignis,
Nec poterit ferrum, nec edax abolere vetustas.

Nor is there any dissuasive from such contemplation: It is no breach of friendship, nor violence of paternal fondness; for the event we dread and detest is not by these means forwarded, as simple persons think their own death would be by making a will. On the contrary, the sweetest and most rapturous enjoyments are thus promoted and encouraged: for what can be a more delightful thought than to assure ourselves, after such reflections, that the evil we apprehend, and which might so probably have happened, hath been yet fortunately escaped. If it be true, that the loss of a blessing teaches us its true value, will not these ruminations on the certainty of losing our friends, and the uncertainty of our enjoyment of them, add a relish to the present possession? Shall we not, in a word, return to their conversation, after such reflections, with the same eagerness and ecstasy, with which we receive those we love into our arms, when we first wake from a dream which hath terrified us with their deaths?

Thus then we have a double incentive to these meditations; as they serve as well to heighten our present enjoyment, as to lessen our future loss, and to fortify us against it. I shall now proceed to give my reader some instructions for his conduct, when this dreadful catastrophe hath actually befallen him.

And here I address myself to common men, and who partake of the more amiable weaknesses of human nature; not to those elevated souls whom the consummation of virtue and philosophy hath

Digitized by Google

raised to a divine pitch of excellence, and placed beyond the reach of human calamity; for which reason I do not expect this loss shall be received with the composure of Stilpo. Nay, I shall not regard tears, lamentations, or any other indulgence to the first agonies of our grief on so dreadful an occasion, as marks of effeminacy; but shall rather esteem them as the symptoms of a laudable tenderness, than of a contemptible imbecility of heart.

However, though I admit the first emotions of our grief to be so far irresistible, that they are not to be instantly and absolutely overcome, yet we are not, on the other side, totally to abandon ourselves to them. Wisdom is our shield against all calamity, and this we are not cowardly to throw away, though some of the sharper darts of fortune may have pierced us through it. The mind of a wise man may be ruffled and disordered, but cannot be subdued; in the former, it differs from the perfection of the Deity; in the latter, from the abject condition of a fool.

With whatever violence our passions at first attack us, they will in time subside. It is then that reason is to be called to our assistance, and we should use every suggestion which it can lend to our relief; our utmost force being to be exerted to repel and subdue an enemy when he begins to retreat: this, indeed, one would imagine, should want little or no persuasion to recommend it; inasmuch as we all naturally pursue happiness and avoid misery.

There are, however, two causes of our unwillingness to hearken to the voice of reason on this occasion. The first is, a foolish opinion, that friendship requires an exorbitant affliction of us; that we are thus discharging our duty to the dead, and offering (according to the superstition of the ancients) an agreeable sacrifice to their manes; the other, and perhaps the commoner motive is, the immediate satisfaction we ourselves feel in this indulgence;

Digitized by Google

which, though attended with very dreadful consequences, gives the same present relief to a tender disposition, that air or water brings to one in a high fever.

Now what can possibly, on the least examination, appear more absurd than the former of these? When the grave, beyond which we can enter into no engagement with one another, hath dissolved all bonds of friendship between us, and removed the object of our affection far from the reach of any of our offices; can any thing be more vain and ridiculous, than to nourish an affliction to our own misery, by which we can convey neither profit nor pleasure to our friend! But I shall not dwell on an absurdity so monstrous in itself that the bare first mention throws it in a light which no illustration nor argument can heighten.

And as to the second, it is, as I have said, like those indulgencies which, however pleasant they may be to the distemper, serve only to increase it, and for which we are sure to pay the bitterest agonies in the end. Nothing can indeed betray a weaker or more childish temper of mind than this conduct; by which, like infants, we reject a remedy, if it be the least distasteful; and are ready to receive any grateful food, without regarding the nourishment which at the same time we contribute to the disease.

Without staying, therefore, longer to argue with such, I shall first recommend to my disciple or patient, of another complexion, carefully to avoid all circumstances which may revive the memory of the deceased, whom it is now his business to forget as fast, and as much as possible; whereas, such is the perverseness of our natures, we are constantly endeavouring, at every opportunity, to recal to our remembrance the words, looks, gestures, and other particularities of a friend. One carries about with him the picture; a second the hair; and others, some little gift or token of the dead, as a

Digitized by Google

memorial of their loss. What is all this less than being self-tormentors, and playing with afflictions? Indeed, time is the truest and best physician on these occasions; and our wisest part is to lend him the utmost assistance we can; whereas, by pursuing the methods I have here objected to, we withstand with all our might the aid and comfort which that great reliever of human misery so kindly offers us.

Diversions of the lightest kind have been recommended as a remedy for affliction; but for my part, I rather conceive they will increase than diminish it; especially where music is to make up any part of the entertainment; for the nature of this is to sooth or inflame, not to alter our passions. Indeed, I should rather propose such diversions by way of trial than of cure; for when they can be pursued with any good effect, our affliction is, I apprehend, very little grievous or dangerous.

To say the truth, the physic for this, as well as every other mental disorder, is to be dispensed to us by philosophy and religion. The former of these words (however unhappily it hath contracted the contempt of the pretty gentlemen and fine ladies) doth surely convey, to those who understand it, no very ridiculous idea. Philosophy, in its purer and stricter sense, means no more than the love of wisdom; but in its common and vulgar acceptation it signifies, the search after wisdom; or often, wisdom itself; for to distinguish between wisdom and philosophy (says a great writer), is rather matter of vain curiosity than of real utility.

Now from this fountain (call it by which of the names we please) may be drawn the following considerations:

First, the injustice of our complaint, who have been only obliged to fulfil the condition on which we first received the good, whose loss we deplore, *viz.* that of parting with it again. We are tenants at will to fortune, and as we have advanced no

Digitized by Google

consideration on our side, can have no right to accuse her caprice in determining our estate. However short-lived our possession hath been, it was still more than she promised, or we could demand. We are already obliged to her for more than we can pay; but, like ungrateful persons, with whom one denial effaces the remembrance of an hundred benefits, we forget what we have already received; and rail at her, because she is not pleased to continue those favours, which of her own free-will she hath so long bestowed on us.

Again, as we might have been called on to fulfil the condition of our tenure long before, so, sooner or later, of necessity we must have done it. The longest term we could hope for is extremely short, and compared by Solomon himself to the length of a span. Of what duration is this life of man computed? A scrivener, who sells his annuity at fourteen years and a half, rejoices in his cunning, and thinks he hath outwitted you at least half a year in the bargain.

But who will ensure these fourteen years? No man. On the contrary, how great is the premium for insuring you one? and great as it is, he who accepts it, is often a loser.

I shall not go into the hackneyed common-place of the numberless avenues to death; a road almost as much beaten by writers, as those avenues to death are by mankind: Tibullus sums them up in half a verse,

—— *Leti mille repente viæ.*

Surely no accident can befal our friend which should so little surprise us; for there is no other which he may not escape. In poverty, pain, or other instances, his lot may be harder than his neighbour's. In this the happiest and most miserable, the greatest and lowest, richest and poorest of mankind share all alike.

It is not then, it cannot be, death itself (which

Digitized by Google

is a part of life) that we lament should happen to our friend, but it is the time of his dying. We desire not a pardon, we desire a reprieve only. A reprieve, for how long? *Sine die.* But if he could escape this fever, this small-pox, this inflammation of the bowels, he may live twenty years. He may so; but it is more probable he will not live ten; it is very possible, not one. But suppose he should have twenty, nay thirty years to come. In prospect, it is true, the term seems to have some duration; but, cast your eyes backwards, and how contemptible the span appears: for it happens in life (however pleasant the journey may be) as to a weary traveller, the plain he is yet to pass extends itself much larger to his eye than that which he hath already conquered.

And suppose fortune should be so generous to indulge us in the possession of our wish, and give us this twenty years longer possession of our friend, should we be then contented to resign? Or shall we not, in imitation of a child who desires its mamma to stay five minutes, and it will take the potion, be still as unwilling as ever? I am afraid the latter will be the case; seeing that neither our calamity, nor the child's physic, becomes less nauseous by the delay.

But, admitting this condition to be never so hard, will not philosophy shew us the folly of immoderate affliction? Can all our sorrow mend our case? Can we wash back our friend with our tears, or waft him back with our sighs and lamentations? It is a foolish mean-spiritedness in a criminal, to blubber to his judge when he knows he shall not prevail by it; and it is natural to admire those more who meet their fate with a decent constancy and resignation. Were the sentences of fate capable of remission; could our sorrows or sufferings restore our friends to us, I would commend him who outdid the fabled Niobe in weeping: But since no such event is to be expected; since *from*

Digitized by Google

that Bourne no Traveller returns; surely it is the part of a wise man to bring himself to be content in a situation which no wit or wisdom, labour or art, trouble or pain, can alter.

And let us seriously examine our hearts, whether it is for the sake of our friends or ourselves, that we grieve. I am ready to agree with a celebrated French writer, That *the lamentation expressed for the loss of our dearest friends is often, in reality, for ourselves; that we are concerned at being less happy, less easy, and of less consequence than we were before; and thus the dead enjoy the honour of those tears which are truly shed on account of the living:* concluding, that *in these afflictions men impose on themselves.* Now, if, on the inquiry, this should be found to be our case, I shall leave the patient to seek his remedy elsewhere, having first recommended to him an assembly, a ball, an opera, a play, an amour, or, if he please, all of them; which will very speedily produce his cure. But, on the contrary, if, after the strictest examination, it should appear (as I make no doubt is sometimes the case) that our sorrow arises from that pure and disinterested affection which many minds are so far from being capable of entertaining, that they can have no idea of it; in a word, if it be manifest that our fears are justly to be imputed to our friend's account, it may be then worth our while to consider the nature and degree of this misfortune which hath happened to him; and if, on duly considering it, we should be able to demonstrate to ourselves, that this supposed dreadful calamity should exist only in opinion, and all its horrors vanish, on being closely and nearly examined; then, I apprehend, the very foundation of our grief will be removed, and it must, of necessary consequence, immediately cease.

I shall not attempt to make an estimate of human life, which to do in the most concise manner, would fill more pages than I can here allow it; nor

Digitized by Google

will it be necessary for me, since admitting there was more real happiness in life than the wisest men have allowed; as the weakest and simplest will be ready to confess that there is much evil in it likewise; and as I conceive every impartial man will, on casting up the whole, acknowledge that the latter is more than a balance for the former, I apprehend it will appear sufficiently for my purpose, that death is not that king of terrors as he is represented to be.

Death is nothing more than the negation of life. If therefore life be no general good, death is no general evil. Now, if this be a point in judgement, who shall decide it? Shall we prefer the judgement of women and children, or of wise men? If of the latter, shall I not have all their suffrages with me? Thales, the chief of the sages, held life and death as things indifferent. Socrates, the greatest of all the philosophers, speaks of death as of a deliverance. Solomon, who had tasted all the sweets of life, condemns the whole as vanity and vexation: and Cicero (to name no more) whose life had been a very fortunate one, assures us in his old age, that *if any of the gods would frankly offer him to renew his infancy, and live his life over again, he would strenuously refuse it.*

But if we will be hardy enough to fly in the face of these and numberless other such authorities; if we will still maintain that the pleasures of life have in them something truly solid, and worthy our regard and desire, we shall not, however, be bold enough to say, that these pleasures are lasting, certain, or the portion of many among us. We shall not, I apprehend, insure the possession of them to our friend, nor secure him from all those evils which, as I have before said, none have ever denied the real existence of; nor shall we surely contend, that he may not more likely have escaped the latter, than have been deprived of the former.

Digitized by Google

I remember the most excellent of women, and tenderest of mothers, when, after a painful and dangerous delivery, she was told she had a daughter, answering; *Good God! have I produced a creature who is to undergo what I have suffered!* Some years afterwards, I heard the same woman, on the death of that very child, then one of the loveliest creatures ever seen, comforting herself with reflecting, that *her child could never know what it was to feel such a loss as she then lamented.*

In reality, she was right in both instances; and however instinct, youth, a flow of spirits, violent attachments, and above all, folly may blind us, the day of death is (to most people at least) a day of more happiness than that of our birth, as it puts an end to all those evils which the other gave a beginning to. So just is that sentiment of Solon, which Crœsus afterwards experienced the truth of, and which is couched in these lines:

——— ultima semper
Expectanda dies homini, dicique beatus
Ante obitum nemo, postremaque funera debet.

If therefore death be no evil, there is certainly no reason why we should lament its having happened to our friend; but if there be any whom neither his own observation, nor what Plato hath advanced in his apology for Socrates, in his Crito, and his Phædon; or Cicero, in the first and third books of his Tusculan questions; or Montaigne (if he hath a contempt for the ancients), can convince, that death is not an evil worthy our lamentation, let such a man comfort himself, that the evil which his friend hath suffered, he shall himself shortly have his share in. As nothing can be a greater consolation to a delicate friendship than this, so there is nothing we may so surely depend on. A few days may, and a few years most infallibly will bring this about, and we shall then reap one benefit from the cause of our present af-

Digitized by Google

fliction, that we are not then to be torn from the person we love.

These are, I think, the chief comforts which the voice of human philosophy can administer to us on this occasion. Religion goes much farther, and gives us a most delightful assurance, that our friend is not barely no loser, but a gainer by his dissolution; that those virtues and good qualities which were the objects of our affection on earth, are now become the foundation of his happiness and reward in a better world.

Lastly; it gives a hope, the sweetest, most endearing and ravishing, which can enter into a mind capable of, and inflamed with friendship—the hope of again meeting the beloved person, of renewing and cementing the dear union in bliss everlasting. This is a rapture which leaves the warmest imagination at a distance. *Who can conceive* (says Sherlock, in his Discourse on Death) *the melting caresses of two souls in Paradise?* What are all the trash and trifles, the bubbles, bawbles and gewgaws of this life, to such a meeting? This is a hope which no reasoning shall ever argue me out of, nor millions of such worlds as this should purchase; nor can any man shew me its absolute impossibility, till he can demonstrate that it is not in the power of the Almighty to bestow it on me.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

A

DIALOGUE

BETWEEN

ALEXANDER THE GREAT,

AND

DIOGENES THE CYNIC.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

A

DIALOGUE

BETWEEN

ALEXANDER THE GREAT,

AND

DIOGENES THE CYNIC.

ALEXANDER.

WHAT fellow art thou, who darest thus to lie at thy ease in our presence, when all others, as thou seest, rise to do us homage? Dost thou not know us?

DIOGENES.

I cannot say I do: but by the number of thy attendants, by the splendor of thy habit; but, above all, by the vanity of thy appearance, and the arrogance of thy speech, I conceive thou mayst be Alexander the son of Philip.

ALEXANDER.

And who can more justly challenge thy respect, than Alexander, at the head of that victorious

Digitized by Google

army, who hath performed such wonderful exploits,* and, under his conduct, hath subdued the world?

DIOGENES.

Who? why the tailor who made me this old cloke.

ALEXANDER.

Thou art an odd fellow, and I have a curiosity to know thy name.

DIOGENES.

I am not ashamed of it: I am called Diogenes: a name composed of as many and as well-sounding syllables as Alexander.

ALEXANDER.

Diogenes, I rejoice at this encounter. I have heard of thy name, and been long desirous of seeing thee; in which wish, since fortune hath accidentally favoured me, I shall be glad of thy conversation a while: and that thou likewise mayst be pleased with our meeting, ask me some favour; and as thou knowest my power, so shalt thou experience my will to oblige thee.

DIOGENES.

Why, then, Alexander the Great, I desire thee to stand from between me and the sun; whose beams thou hast withheld from me some time, a blessing which it is not in thy power to recompense the loss of.

* This is an anachronism; for Diogenes was of Sinope, and the meeting between him and Alexander fell out while the latter was confederating the Grecian states in the Peloponnese before his Asiatic expedition; but that season would not have furnished sufficient matter for this dialogue; we have therefore fixed the time of it at the conqueror's return from India.

Digitized by Google

ALEXANDER.

Thou hast a very shallow opinion of my power, indeed; and if it was a just one, I should have travelled so far, undergone so much, and conquered so many nations, to a fine purpose, truly.

DIOGENES.

That is not my fault.

ALEXANDER.

Dost thou not know that I am able to give thee a kingdom?

DIOGENES.

I know thou art able, if I had one, to take it from me; and I shall never place any value on that which such as thou art can deprive me of.

ALEXANDER.

Thou dost speak vainly in contempt of a power which no other man ever yet arrived at. Hath the Granicus yet recovered the bloody colour with which I contaminated its waves? Are not the fields of Issus and Artela still white with human bones? Will Susa shew no monuments of my victory? Are Darius and Porus names unknown to thee? Have not the groans of those millions reached thy ears, who, but for the valour of this heart, and the strength of this arm, had still enjoyed life and tranquillity? Hath then this son of Jupiter, this conqueror of the world, adored by his followers, dreaded by his foes, and worshipped by all, lived to hear his power contemned, and the offer of his favour slighted, by a poor philosopher, a wretched Cynic, whose cloke appears to be his only possession!

Digitized by Google

DIOGENES.

I retort the charge of vanity on thyself, proud Alexander! for how vainly dost thou endeavour to raise thyself on the monuments of thy disgrace! I acknowledge indeed all the exploits thou hast recounted, and the millions thou hast to thy eternal shame destroyed. But is it hence thou wouldst claim Jupiter for thy father? Hath not then every plague or pestilential vapour the same title? If thou art the dread of wretches to whom death appears the greatest of evils, is not every mortal disease the same? And if thou hast the adoration of thy servile followers, do they offer thee more than they are ready to pay to every tinsel ornament, or empty title? Is then the fear or worship of slaves of so great honour, when at the same time thou art the contempt of every brave honest man, though, like me, an old cloke should be his only possession?

ALEXANDER.

Thou seemest, to my apprehension, to be ignorant, that in professing this disregard for the glory I have so painfully achieved, thou art undermining the foundation of all that honour which is the encouragement to, and reward of, every thing truly great and noble; for in what doth all honour, glory, and fame consist, but in the breath of that multitude, whose estimation, with such ill-grounded scorn, thou dost affect to despise? A reward which hath ever appeared sufficient to inflame the ambition of high and exalted souls; though, from their meanness, low minds may be incapable of tasting, or rather, for which pride, from the despair of attaining it, may inspire thee to feign a false and counterfeit disdain. What other reward than this have all those heroes proposed to themselves, who rejected the enjoyments which ease, riches, pleasure, and power, have held forth to them in their native country, have deserted their

Digitized by Google

homes, and all those things which to vulgar mortals appear lovely or desirable, and, in defiance of difficulty and danger, invaded and spoiled the cities and territories of others; when their anger hath been provoked by no injury, nor their hope inspired by the prospect of any other good than of this very glory and honour, this adoration of slaves, which thou, from having never tasted its sweets, hast treated with contempt?

DIOGENES.

Thy own words have convinced me (stand a little more out of the sun, if you please), that thou hast not the least idea of true honour. Was it to depend on the suffrages of such wretches, it would indeed be that contemptible thing which you represent it to be estimated in my opinion: but true honour is of a different nature; it results from the secret satisfaction of our own minds, and is decreed us by wise men and the gods; it is the shadow of wisdom and virtue, and is inseparable from them; nor is it either in thy power to deserve, nor in that of thy followers to bestow. As for such heroes as thou hast named, who, like thyself, were born the curses of mankind, I readily agree they pursue another kind of glory, even that which thou hast mentioned, the applause of their slaves and sycophants; in this instance, indeed, their masters, since they bestow on them the reward, such as it is, of all their labours.

ALEXANDER.

However, as you would persuade me you have so clear a notion of my honour, I would be glad to be on a par with you, by conceiving some idea of yours; which I can never obtain of the shadow, till I have some clearer knowledge of the substance, and understand in what your wisdom and virtue consist.

Digitized by Google

DIOGENES.

Not in ravaging countries, burning cities, plundering and massacring mankind.

ALEXANDER.

No, rather in biting and snarling at them.

DIOGENES.

I snarl at them because of their vice and folly; in a word, because there are among them many such as thee and thy followers.

ALEXANDER.

If thou wouldst confess the truth, envy is the true source of all thy bitterness; it is that which begets thy hatred, and from hatred comes thy railing; whereas the thirst of glory only is my motive. I hate not those whom I attack, as plainly appears by the clemency I shew to them when they are conquered.

DIOGENES.

Thy clemency is cruelty. Thou givest to one what thou hast by violence and plunder taken from another; and in so doing, thou only raisest him to be again the mark of fortune's caprice, and to be tumbled down a second time by thyself, or by some other like thee. My snarling is the effect of my love; in order, by my invectives against vice, to frighten men from it, and drive them into the road of virtue.

ALEXANDER.

For which purpose thou hast forsworn society, and art retired to preach to trees and stones.

DIOGENES.

I have left society, because I cannot endure the evils I see and detest in it.

Digitized by Google

ALEXANDER.

Rather because thou canst not enjoy the good thou dost covet in it. For the same reason I have left my own country, which afforded not sufficient food for my ambition.

DIOGENES.

But I come not like thee abroad, to rob and plunder others. Thy ambition hath destroyed a million, whereas I have never occasioned the death of a single man.

ALEXANDER.

Because thou has not been able; but thou hast done all within thy power, by cursing and devoting to destruction almost as many as I have conquered. Come, come, thou art not the poor-spirited fellow thou wouldst appear. There is more greatness of soul in thee than at present shines forth. Poor circumstances are clouds which often conceal and obscure the brightest minds. Pride will not suffer thee to confess passions which fortune hath not put it in thy power to gratify. It is, therefore, that thou deniest ambition; for hadst thou a soul as capacious as mine, I see no better way which thy humble fortune would allow thee of feeding its ambition, than what thou hast chosen; for when alone in this retreat which thou hast chosen, thou mayst contemplate thy own greatness. Here no stronger rival will contend with thee; nor can the hateful objects of superior power, riches, or happiness, invade thy sight. But, be honest and confess, had fortune placed thee at the head of a Macedonian army——

DIOGENES.

Had fortune placed me at the head of the world, it could not have raised me in my own opinion. And is this mighty soul, which is, it seems, so much

Digitized by Google

more capacious than mine, obliged at last to support its superiority on the backs of a multitude of armed slaves? And who in reality have gained these conquests, and gathered all these laurels, of which thou art so vain? Hadst thou alone past into Asia, the empire of Darius had still stood unshaken. But though Alexander had never been born, who will say the same troops might not, under some other general, have done as great, or perhaps greater mischiefs? The honour, therefore, such as it is, is by no means justly thy own. Thou usurpest the whole, when thou art, at most, entitled to an equal share only. It is not, then, Alexander, but Alexander and his army are superior to Diogenes. And in what are they his superiors? In brutal strength — in which they would be again excelled by an equal number of lions, or wolves, or tigers. An army which would be able to do as much more mischief than themselves, as they are than Diogenes.

ALEXANDER.

Then thy grief broke forth. Thou hatest us because we can do more mischief than thyself. And in this I see thou claimest the precedence over me; that I make use of others as the instruments of my conquests, whereas all thy raillery and curses against mankind proceed only out of thy own mouth. And if I alone am not able to conquer the world, thou alone art able to curse it.

DIOGENES.

If I desired to curse it effectually, I have nothing more to do, than to wish thee long life and prosperity.

ALEXANDER.

But then thou must wish well to an individual, which is contrary to thy nature, who hatest all.

Digitized by Google

DIOGENES.

Thou art mistaken. Long life, to such as thee, is the greatest of curses; for, to mortify thy pride effectually, know, there is not in thy whole army, no, nor among all the objects of thy triumph, one equally miserable with thyself; for if the satisfaction of violent desires be happiness, and a total failure of success in most eager pursuits, misery (which cannot, I apprehend, be doubted), what can be more miserable, than to entertain desires which we know never can be satisfied? And this a little reflection will teach thee is thy own case; for what are thy desires? not pleasures; with that Macedonia would have furnished thee. Not riches; for, capacious as thy soul is, if it had been all filled with avarice, the wealth of Darius would have contented it. Not power; for then the conquest of Porus, and the extending thy arms to the farthest limits of the world,* must have satisfied thy ambition. Thy desire consists in nothing certain, and therefore with nothing certain can be gratified. It is as restless as fire, which still consumes whatever comes in its way, without determining where to stop. How contemptible must thy own power appear to thee, when it cannot give thee the possession of thy wish; but how much more contemptible thy understanding, which cannot enable thee to know certainly what that wish is?

ALEXANDER.

I can at least comprehend thine, and can grant it. I like thy humour, and will deserve thy friendship. I know the Athenians have affronted thee, have contemned thy philosophy, and suspected thy morals, I will revenge thy cause on them. I will lead my army back, and punish their ill usage of thee. Thou thyself shalt accompany us; and,

* Which was then known to the Greeks.

Digitized by Google

when thou beholdest their city in flames, shalt have the triumph of proclaiming, that thy just resentment hath brought this calamity on them.

DIOGENES.

They do indeed deserve it at my hands; and though revenge is not what I profess, yet the punishment of such dogs may be of good example. I therefore embrace thy offer; but let us not be particular, let Corinth and Lacedæmon share the same fate. They are both the nest of vermin only, and fire alone will purify them. Gods! what a delight it will be to see the rascals, who have so openly in derision called me a snarling cur, roasting in their own houses.

ALEXANDER.

Yet, on a second consideration, would it not be wiser to preserve the cities, especially Corinth, which is so full of wealth, and only massacre the inhabitants?

DIOGENES.

D—n their wealth; I despise it.

ALEXANDER.

Well, then, let it be given to the soldiers, as the demolition of it will not encrease the punishment of the citizens, when we have cut their throats.

DIOGENES.

True——Then you may give some of it to the soldiers; but as the dogs have formerly insulted me with their riches, I will, if you please, retain a little—perhaps a moiety, or not much more, to my own use. It will give me at least an opportunity of shewing the world, I can despise riches when I possess them, as much as I did before in my poverty.

Digitized by Google

ALEXANDER.

Art not thou a true dog? Is this thy contempt of wealth? This thy abhorrence of the vices of mankind? To sacrifice three of the noblest cities of the world to thy wrath and revenge! And hast thou th impudence to dispute any longer the superior ith me, who have it in my power to punis y enemies with death, while thou only canst ersecute with evil wishes?

DIOGENES.

I have still the same superiority over thee, which thou dost challenge over thy soldiers. I would have made thee the tool of my purpose. But I will discourse no longer with thee; for I now despise and curse thee more than I do all the world besides. And may perdition seize thee, and all thy followers!

[*Here some of the army would have fallen upon him, but Alexander interposed.*

ALEXANDER.

Let him alone. I admire his obstinacy; nay, I almost envy it.——Farewel, old Cynic; and if it will flatter thy pride, be assured, I esteem thee so much, that *was I not* Alexander, *I could desire to be* Diogenes.

DIOGENES.

Go to the Gibbet, and take with thee as a mortification; that *was I not* Diogenes, *I could almost content myself with being* Alexander.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

AN

INTERLUDE

BETWEEN

JUPITER, JUNO, APOLLO,

AND

MERCURY.

Which was originally intended as an

INTRODUCTION TO A COMEDY,

CALLED

JUPITER'S DESCENT ON EARTH.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

AN

INTERLUDE

BETWEEN

JUPITER, JUNO, APOLLO,

AND

MERCURY.

SCENE I.

JUPITER, JUNO.

JUPITER.

PRAY be pacified.

JUNO. It is intolerable, insufferable, and I never will submit to it.

JUP. But, my dear——

JUNO. Good Mr. Jupiter, leave off that odious word; you know I detest it. Use it to the trollop Venus, and the rest of your sluts. It sounds most agreeable to their ears, but it is nauseous to a goddess of strict virtue.

JUP. Madam, I do not doubt your virtue.

JUNO. You don't? That is, I suppose, humbly insinuating that others do: but who are their divinities? I would be glad to know who they are; they are neither Diana nor Minerva, I am well assured; both of whom pity me, for they know your tricks; they can neither of them keep a maid of honour for you. I desire you will treat me with good manners at least. I should have

Digitized by Google

had that, if I had married a mortal, though he had spent my fortune, and lain with my chambermaids, as you suffer men to do with impunity—highly to your honour be it spoken!

JUP. Faith! Madam, I know but one way to prevent them, which is, by annihilating mankind; and I fancy your friends below, the ladies, would hardly thank you for obtaining that favour at my hands.

JUNO. I desire you would not reflect on my friends below; it is very well known, I never shewed any favour, but to those of the purest, unspotted characters. And all my acquaintance, when I have been on the earth, have been of that kind; for I never return a visit to any other.

JUP. Nay, I have no inclination to find fault with the women of the earth; you know I like them very well.

JUNO. Yes, the trollops of the earth, such as Venus converses with. You never shew any civility to my favourites, nor make the men do it.

JUP. My dear, give me leave to say, your favourites are such, that man must be new made before he can be brought to give them the preference; for when I moulded up the clay of man, I put not one ingredient in to make him in love with ugliness, which is one of the most glaring qualities in all your favourites, whom I have ever seen; and you must not wonder, while you have such favourites, that the men slight them.

JUNO. The men slight them! I'd have you know, Sir, they slight the men; and I can, at this moment, hear not less than a thousand railing at mankind.

JUP. Ay, as I hear at this instant several grave black gentlemen railing at riches, and enjoying them, or at least coveting them, at the same time.

JUNO. Very fine! Very civil! I understand your comparison.——Well, Sir, you may go on giving an example of a bad husband, but I will not give the example of a tame wife; and if you will not

Digitized by Google

make men better, I will go down to the earth and make women worse; that every house may be too hot for a husband, as I will shortly make heaven for you.

JUP. That I believe you will——but if you begin your project of making women worse, I will take Hymen, and hang him; for I will take some care of my votaries, as well as you of yours.

SCENE II.

Enter APOLLO.

APOL. Mr. Jupiter, good-morrow to you.

JUP. Apollo, how dost thou?——You are a wise deity, Apollo; prithee will you answer me one question?

APOL. To my best ability.

JUP. You have been much conversant with the affairs of men, what dost thou think the foolishest thing a man can do?

APOL. Turn poet.

JUP. That is honest enough, as it comes from the god of poets; but you have missed the mark, for certainly the foolishest thing a man can do, is to marry.

APOL. Fie! What is it then in a god? Who, besides that he ought to be wiser than man, is tied for ever by his immortality, and has not the chance which you have given to man, of getting rid of his wife.

JUP. Apollo, thy reproof is just: but let us talk of something else; for when I am out of the hearing my wife, I beg I may never hear of her.

APOL. Have you read any of those books I brought you, just sent me by my votaries upon earth?

JUP. I have read them all.——The poem is extremely fine, and the similies most beautiful.—There is indeed one little fault in the similies.

APOL. What is that?

Digitized by Google

JUP. There is not the least resemblance between the things compared together.

APOL. One half of the simile is good, however.

JUP. The dedications please me extremely, and I am glad to find there are such excellent men upon earth.———There is one whom I find two or three authors agree to be much better than any of us in heaven are. This discovery, together with my wife's tongue, has determined me to make a trip to the earth, and spend some time in such godlike company. Apollo, will you go with me?

APOL. I would with all my heart, but I shall be of disservice to you; for when I was last on earth, though I heard of these people, I could not get admission to any of them: you had better take Plutus with you, he is acquainted with them all.

JUP. Hang him, proud rascal, of all the deities he is my aversion; I would have kick'd him out of heaven long ago, but that I am afraid, if he was to take his residence entirely upon the earth, he would foment a rebellion against me.

APOL. Your fear has too just a ground, for the god of riches has more interest there than all the other gods put together: nay, he has supplanted us in all our provinces; he gives wit to men I never heard of, and beauty to women Venus never saw.——Nay, he ventures to make free with Mars himself; and sometimes, they tell me, puts men at the head of military affairs, who never saw an enemy, nor of whom an enemy ever could see any other than the back.

JUP. Faith! it is surprising, that a god whom I sent down to earth when I was angry with mankind, and who has done them more hurt than all the other deities, should ingratiate himself so far into their favour.

APOL. You may thank yourself, you might have made man wiser if you would.

JUP. What to laugh at? No, Apollo, believe me, man far outdoes my intention; and when I

Digitized by Google

read in those little histories, called dedications, how excellent he is grown, I am eager to be with him, that I may make another promotion to the stars; and here comes my son of fortune to accompany us.

SCENE III.

MERCURY, JUPITER, APOLLO.

[MERCURY *kneels.*]

MER. Pray, father Jupiter, be pleased to bless me.

JUP. I do, my boy. What part of heaven, pray, have you been spending your time in?

MER. With some ladies of your acquaintance, Apollo. I have been at blind-man's-buff with the nine muses; but before we began to play, we had charming sport between Miss Thally and one of the poets; such a scene of courtship or invocation as you call it. *Say, O Thalia,* cries the bard; and then he scratches his head; and then, *Say, O Thalia,* again; and repeated it a hundred times over; but the devil a word would she say.

APOL. She's a humorsome little jade, and if she takes it into her head to hold her tongue, not all the poets on earth can open her lips.

JUP. I wish Juno had some of her frolicks, with all my heart.

MERC. No, my mother-in-law is of a humour quite contrary——

JUP. Ay; for which reason I intend to make an elopement from her, and pay a short visit to our friends on earth. Son Mercury, you shall along with me.

MERC. Sir, I am at your disposal: but pray what is the reason of this visit?

JUP. Partly my wife's tempetr and partly some informations I have lately received of the prodigious virtue of mankind; which, if I find as great

Digitized by Google

as represented, I believe I shall leave Madam Juno for good-and-all, and live entirely amongst men.

MERC. I shall be glad to be introduced by you into the company of these virtuous men; for I am quite weary of the little rogues you put me at the head of. The last time I was on the earth, I believe I had three sets of my acquaintance hang'd in one year's revolution, and not one man of any reputable condition among them; there were indeed one or two condemned, but, I don't know how, they were found to be honest at last. And I must tell you, Sir, I will be god of rogues no longer, if you suffer it to be an established maxim, that no rich man can be a rogue.

JUP. We'll talk of that hereafter. I'll now go put on my travelling clothes, order my charger, and be ready for you in half an hour.

SCENE IV.

APOLLO, MERCURY.

MERC. Do you know the true reason of this expedition?

APOL. The great virtue of mankind, he tells us.

MERC. The little virtue of womankind rather. ——Do you know him no better, than to think he would budge a step after human virtue; besides, where the devil should he find it, if he would?

APOL. You have not read the late dedications of my votaries.

MERC. Of my votaries, you mean: I hope you will not dispute my title to the dedications, as the god of thieves. You make no distinction, I hope, between robbing with a pistol and with a pen.

APOL. My votaries robbers! Mr. Mercury?

MERC. Yes, Mr. Apollo; did not my Lord Chancellor Midas decree me the lawyers for the same reason. Would not he be a rogue who should take a man's money for persuading him he was a lord or a baronet, when he knew he was no such thing?

Digitized by Google

Is not he equally such, who picks his pocket by heaping virtues on him which he knows he has no title to? These fellows prevent the very use of praise, which, while only the reward of virtue, will always invite men to it; but when it is to be bought, will be despised by the true deserving, equally with a ribbon or a feather, which may be bought by any one in a milliner's or a minister's shop.

APOL. Very well! at this rate you will rob me of all my panegyrical writers.

MERC. Ay, and of your satirical writers too, at least a great many of 'em; for unjust satire is as bad as unjust panegyric.

APOL. If it is unjust indeed——But, Sir, I hope you have no claim to my writers of plays, poems which have neither satire nor panegyric in 'em.

MERC. Yes, Sir, to all who are thieves, and steal from one another.

APOL. Methinks, Sir, you should not reflect thus on wits to me, who am the god of wit.

MERC. Heyday, Sir, nor you on thieves, to me who am the god of thieves. We have no such reason to quarrel about our votaries, they are much of the same kind; for as it is a proverb, That all poets are poor; so it is a maxim, That all poor men are rogues.

APOL. Sir, Sir, I have men of quality that write.

MERC. Yes, Sir, and I have men of quality that rob; but neither are the one poets, or the other rogues; for as the one can write without wit, so can the other rob without roguery. They call it privilege, I think: Jupiter I suppose gave it them; and instead of quarrelling with one another, I think it would be wiser in us to unite in a petition to my father, that he would revoke it, and put them on a footing with our other votaries.

APOL. It is in vain to petition him any thing against mankind at present, he is in such good humour with them; if they should sour his temper,

Digitized by Google

at his return perhaps he may be willing to do us justice.

MERC. It shall be my fault if he is not in a worse humour with them; at least I will take care he shall not be deceived; and that might happen; for men are such hypocrites, that the greatest part deceive even themselves, and are much worse than they think themselves to be.

APOL. And Jupiter, you know, though he is the greatest, is far from being the wisest of the gods.

MERC. His own honesty makes him the less suspicious of others; for, except in regard to women, he is as honest a fellow as any deity in all the Elysian Fields; but I shall make him wait for me —Dear Mr. Apollo, I am your humble servant.

APOL. My dear Mercury, a good journey to you; at your return, I shall be glad to drink a bottle of nectar with you.

MERC. I shall be proud to kiss your hands.

Digitized by Google

THE

TRUE PATRIOT.

N° 1. TUESDAY, NOVEMBER 5, 1745.

ILLE EGO, *qui quondam* ——

FASHION is the great governor of this world; it presides not only in matters of dress and amusement, but in law, physic, politics, religion, and all other things of the gravest kind; indeed, the wisest of men would be puzzled to give any better reason, why particular forms in all these have been, at certain times, universally received, and at others universally rejected, than that they were in or out of fashion.

Men as well as things are in like manner indebted to the favour of this *grand monarque*. It is a phrase commonly used in the polite world, that such a person is in fashion; nay, I myself have known an individual in fashion, and then out of fashion, and then in fashion again. Shakespeare hath shared both these fates in poetry, and so hath Mr. Handel in music; so hath my Lord Coke in law, and in physic the great Sydenham; and as to politics and religion, I am sure every man's memory will suggest to himself very great masters in both, even in the present age, who have been, in the highest degree, both in and out of fashion.

Digitized by Google

It is, therefore, the business of every man to accommodate himself to the fashion of the times; which if he neglects, he must not be surprised if the greatest parts and abilities are totally disregarded. If Socrates himself was to go to court in an antique dress, he would be neglected, or perhaps ridiculed; or if old Hippocrates was to visit the college of physicians, and there talk the language of his aphorisms, he would be despised; the college, as Moliere says, *having altered all that* at present.

But of all mankind, there are none whom it so absolutely imports to conform to this golden rule, as an author; by neglecting this, Milton himself lay long in obscurity, and the world had nearly lost the best poem which perhaps it hath ever seen. On the contrary, by adhering to it, Tom Durfey, whose name is almost forgot, and many others, who are quite forgotten, flourished most notably in their respective ages, and eat and were read very plentifully by their cotemporaries.

In strict obedience to this sovereign power, being informed by my bookseller, a man of great sagacity in his business, *that nobody at present reads any thing but newspapers*, I have determined to conform myself to the reigning taste. The number indeed of these writers at first a little staggered us both; but upon perusal of their works, I fancied I had discovered two or three little imperfections in them all, which somewhat diminished the force of this objection, and gave me hopes that the public will expel some of them to make room for their betters.

The first little imperfection in these writings, is, that there is scarce a syllable of TRUTH in any of them. If this be admitted to be a fault, it requires no other evidence than themselves, and the perpetual contradictions which occur not only on comparing one with the other, but the same author with himself at different days.

Digitized by Google

2*dly*, There is no SENSE in them; to prove this likewise, I appeal to their works.

3dly, There is, in reality, NOTHING *in them at all.* And this also must be allowed by their readers, if paragraphs which contain neither wit, nor humour, nor sense, nor the least importance, may be properly said to contain nothing. Such are the arrival of my Lord ——— *with a great equipage*, the marriage of Miss ——— *of great beauty and merit*, and the death of Mr. ——— *who was never heard of in his life*, &c. &c.

Nor will this appear strange, if we consider who are the authors of such tracts; namely, the journeymen of booksellers, of whom, I believe, much the same may be truly predicated, as of these their productions.

But the encouragement with which these lucubrations are read, may seem more strange and more difficult to be accounted for. And here I cannot agree with my bookseller, that their eminent badness recommends them. The true reason is, I believe, simply the same which I once heard an economist assign for the content and satisfaction with which his family drank water-cyder, *viz.* because they could procure no other liquor. Indeed, I make no doubt, but that the understanding, as well as the palate, though it may out of necessity swallow the worse, will in general prefer the better.

In this confidence I have resolved to provide the public a better entertainment than it hath lately been dieted with; and as it is no great assurance in an Author to think himself capable of excelling such writings as have been mentioned above, so neither can he be called too sanguine in promising himself a more favourable reception from the Public.

It is not usual for us of superior eminence in our profession, to hang out our names on the sign-post; however, to raise some expectation in the mind of every reader, as well as to give a slight direction

Digitized by Google

to those conjectures which he will be apt to make on this occasion, I shall set down some few hints, by which a sagacious guesser may arrive at sufficient certainty concerning me.

And *first*, I faithfully promise him, that I do not live within a mile of Grub-street; nor am I acquainted with a single inhabitant of that place.

2dly, I am of no party; a word which I hope, by these my labours, to eradicate out of our constitution; this being indeed the true source of all those evils which we have reason to complain of.

3dly, I am a gentleman; a circumstance from which my reader will reap many advantages; for at the same time that he may peruse my paper, without any danger of seeing himself, or any of his friends traduced with scurrility, so he may expect, by means of my intercourse with people of condition, to find here many articles of importance concerning the affairs and transactions of the great world (which can never reach the ears of vulgar news-writers), not only in matters of state and politics, but amusement. All routs, drums, and assemblies, will fall under my immediate inspection, and the adventures which happen at them, will be inserted in my paper, with due regard, however, to the character I here profess, and with strict care to give no offence to the parties concerned.

Lastly, As to my learning, knowledge, and other qualifications for the office I have undertaken, I shall be silent, and leave the decision to my reader's judgement; of whom I desire no more than that he would not despise me before he is acquainted with me.

And to prevent this, as I have already given some account *what* I am, so I shall proceed to throw forth a few hints *who* I am; a matter commonly of the greatest importance towards the recommendation of all works of literature.

First, then, It is very probable I am Lord *B——ke*. This I collect from my style in writing,

Digitized by Google

and knowledge in politics. Again, it is as probable that I am the B——p of ****, from my zeal for the Protestant religion. When I consider these, together with the wit and humour which will diffuse themselves through the whole, it is more than possible I may be Lord *C*—— himself, or at least he may have some share in my paper.

From some, or all of these reasons, I am very likely Mr. *W*——*n*, Mr. *D*——*n*, Mr. *L*——*n*, Mr. *F*——*g*, *T*——*n*, or, indeed, any other person who hath ever distinguished himself in the republic of letters.

This at least is very probable, that some of these gentlemen may contribute a share of their abilities to the carrying on this work; in which, as nothing shall ever appear in it inconsistent with decency, or the religion and true civil interest of my country, no person, how great soever, need be ashamed of being imagined to have a part; unless he should be weak enough to be ashamed of writing at all; that is, of having more sense than his neighbours, or of communicating it to them.

I come now to consider the only remaining article, *viz.* the price, which is one-third more than my cotemporary weekly historians set on their labours.

And here I might, with modesty enough, insist, that if I am either what or who I pretend to be, I have sufficient title to this distinction. It is well known that, among mechanics, a much larger advance is often allowed only for a particular name. A genteel person would not be suspected of dealing with any other than the most eminent in his trade, though he is convinced he pays an additional price by so doing. And I hope the polite world, especially when they consider the regard to fashion which I have above professed, will not scruple to allow me the same pre-eminence.

But, in reality, this is the cheapest paper which was ever given to the Public, both in quality, of

Digitized by Google

which enough hath been said already, and in which light a shilling would, I apprehend, be a more moderate price than the three halfpence which is demanded by some others: And *secondly*, (which my bookseller chiefly insists on) in quantity; as I shall contain, he says, full three times as many letters as the abovementioned papers; and for which reason he at first advised me to demand fourpence at least, for that one-ninth part would be still abated to the Public. To be serious, I would desire my reader to weigh fairly with himself, whether he doth not gain six times the knowledge and amusement by my paper, compared to any other; and then I think he will have no difficulty to determine in my favour.

Indeed, the prudent part of mankind will be considerable gainers by purchasing my paper; for as it will contain every thing which is worth their knowing, all others will become absolutely needless: and I leave to their determination, whether three pennyworth of truth and sense is not more worth their purchasing, than all the rubbish and nonsense of the week, which will cost them twenty times as much. In other words, is it not better to give their understanding an entertainment once a week, than to surcharge it every day with coarse and homely fare?

I shall conclude the whole in the words of the fair and honest tradesman: Gentlemen, upon my word and honour, I can afford it no cheaper; and I believe there is no shop in town will use you better for the price.

Digitized by Google

N° 3. TUESDAY, NOVEMBER 19, 1745.

——— Furit ensis et ignis
Quo que caret flammâ scelerum est locus.
SIL. ITAL.

THE rebellion having long been the universal subject of conversation in this town, it is no wonder that what so absolutely engages our waking thoughts should attend us to the pillow, and represent to us in dreams or visions those ideas which fear had before suggested to our minds.

It is natural, on all occasions, to have some little attention to our private welfare, nor do I ever honour the patriot the less (I am sure I confide in him much the more) whose own good is involved in that of the Public. I am not, therefore, ashamed to give the Public the following dream or vision, though my own little affairs, and the private consequences which the success of this rebellion would produce to myself, form the principal object; for, I believe, at the same time, there are few of my readers who will not find themselves interested in some parts of it.

Methought, I was sitting in my study, meditating for the good and entertainment of the Public, with my two little children (as is my usual course to suffer them) playing near me; when I heard a very hard knock at my door, and immediately afterwards several ill-looked rascals burst in upon me, one of whom seized me with great violence, saying, I was his prisoner, and must go with him. I asked him for what offence. Have you the impudence to ask that, said he, when the words True Patriot lie now before you? I then bid him shew me his warrant. He answered, *there it is*, pointing to several men, who were in Highland

Digitized by Google

dresses, with broad swords by their sides. My children then ran towards me, and bursting into tears, exprest their concern for their poor papa. Upon which one of the ruffians seized my little boy, and pulling him from me, dashed him against the ground; and all immediately hurried me away out of my room and house, before I could be sensible of the effects of this barbarity.

My concern for my poor children, from whom I had been torn in the above manner, prevented me from taking much notice of any objects in the streets, through which I was dragged with many insults.—Houses burnt down, dead bodies of men, women and children, strewed every where as we passed, and great numbers of Highlanders, and Popish priests in their several habits, made, however, too forcible an impression on me to be unobserved.

My guard now brought me to Newgate, where they were informed that jail was too full to admit a single person more. I was then conducted to a large booth in Smithfield, as I thought, where I was shut in with a great number of prisoners, amongst whom were many of the most considerable persons in this kingdom. Two of these were in a very particular manner reviled by the Highland guards (for all the soldiers were in that dress), and these two I presently recollected to be the A-chb-sh-p of Y—k, and the B—p of Win—r.

As there is great inconsistency of time and place in most dreams, I now found myself, by an unaccountable transition, in a court which bore some resemblance to the court of King's Bench; only a great cross was erected in the middle; and instead of those officers of justice who usually attend that court, a number of Highlanders, with drawn swords, stood there as sentinels; the judges too were persons whose faces I had never seen before. I was obliged, I thought, to stand some time at the bar, before my trial came on, the court being

Digitized by Google

busied in a cause where an abbot was plaintiff, in determining the boundaries of some abbey land, which they decided for the plaintiff, the chief justice declaring, it was his majesty's pleasure, in all doubtful cases, that judgement should be in favour of the church.

A charge of high-treason was then, I dreamed, exhibited against me, for having writ in defence of his present majesty King GEORGE, and my paper of the True Patriot was produced in evidence against me.

Being called upon to make my defence, I insisted entirely on the statute of Hen. 7. by which all persons are exempted from incurring the penalties of treason, in defence of the King *de facto*. But the chief justice told me in broken English, That if I had no other plea, they should presently overrule that; for that his majesty was resolved to make an example of all who had any ways distinguished themselves, in opposition to his cause.

Methought I then replied, with a resolution which I hope every Englishman would exert on such an occasion, THAT THE LIFE OF NO MAN WAS WORTH PRESERVING, LONGER THAN IT WAS TO BE DEFENDED BY THE KNOWN LAWS OF HIS COUNTRY; and that if the King's arbitrary pleasure was to be that law, I was indifferent what he determined concerning myself.

The court having put it to the vote (for no jury, I thought, attended), and unanimously agreed that I was guilty, proceeded to pass the sentence usual in cases of high treason, having first made many elogiums on the Pope, the Roman Catholic religion, and the King, who was to support both, and be supported by them.

I was then delivered into the hands of the executioner, who stood ready, and was ordered to allow me only three hours to confess myself, and be reconciled to the church of Rome. Upon which a priest, whose face I remember to have seen at a

Digitized by Google

placed called an oratory, and who was, for his good services, preferred to be the ordinary of Newgate, immediately advanced, and began to revile me, saying, I was the wickedest heretic in the kingdom, and had exerted myself with more impudence against his majesty and his holiness than any other person whatsoever: but he added, as I had the good fortune to make some atonement for my impiety by being hanged, if I would embrace his religion, confess myself and receive absolution, I might possibly, after some expiation in purgatory, receive a final pardon.

I was hence conducted into a dungeon, where, by a glimmering light, I saw many wretches my fellow-prisoners, who, for various crimes, were condemned to various punishments.

Among these appeared one in a very ragged plight, whom I very well knew, and who, the last time I saw him, appeared to live in great affluence and splendor. Upon my inquiring the reason of his being detained in that region of horror, he very frankly told me it was for stealing a loaf. He acknowledged the fact; but said, he had been obliged to it for the relief of his indigent family. I see, continued he, your surprise at this change of my fortune; but, you must know, my whole estate was in the funds, by the wiping out of which I was at once reduced to the condition in which you now see me. I rose in the morning with 40,000*l.* I had a wife whom I tenderly loved, and three blooming daughters. The eldest was within a week of her marriage, and I was to have paid down 10,000*l.* with her. At noon I found a royal decree had reduced me to downright beggary. My daughter hath lost her marriage, and is gone distracted. My wife is dead of a broken heart, and my poor girls have neither clothes to cover them, nor meat to feed them: so that I may truly say,

——— *Miser, O miser, omnia ademit*
Una dies infesta mihi tot præmia vitæ.

Digitized by Google

Here, methought, he stopt, and a flood of tears gushed from his eyes. I should perhaps have been a greater sharer in his sorrow, had not the consideration of his children's ruin represented to me the situation of my own. Good gods! what were the agonies I then felt, though in a dream? Racks, wheels, gibbets were no longer the objects of terror. My children possessed my whole mind, and my fearful imagination run through every scene of horror which villains can act on their fellow-creatures. Sometimes I saw their helpless hands struggling for a moment with a barbarous cut-throat. Here I saw my poor boy, my whole ambition, the hopes and prospect of my age, sprawling on the floor, and weltering in his blood; there my fancy painted my daughter, the object of all my tenderness, prostituted even in her infancy to the brutal lust of a ruffian, and then sacrificed to his cruelty. Such were my terrors, when I was relieved from them by the welcome presence of the executioner, who summoned me immediately forth, telling me, since I had refused the assistance of the priest, he could grant me no longer indulgence.

The first sight which occurred to me as I passed through the streets (for common objects totally escape the observation of a man in my present temper of mind), was a young lady of quality, and the greatest beauty of this age, in the hands of two Highlanders, who were struggling with each other for their booty. The lovely prize, though her hair was dishevelled and torn, her eyes swollen with tears, her face all pale, and some marks of blood both on that and her breast, which was all naked and exposed, retained still sufficient charms to discover herself to me, who have always beheld her with wonder and admiration. Indeed, it may be questioned whether perfect beauty loses or acquires charms by distress. This sight was matter of entertainment to my conductors, who, however, hurried me presently from it, as I wish they had also

Digitized by Google

from her screams, which reached my ears to a great distance.

After such a spectacle as this, the dead bodies which lay every where in the streets (for there had been, I was told, a massacre the night before), scarce made any impression; nay, the very fires in which Protestants were roasting, were, in my sense, objects of much less horror; nay, such an effect had this sight wrought on my mind, which hath been always full of the utmost tenderness for that charming sex, that for a moment it obliterated all concern for my children, from whom I was to be hurried for ever without a farewel, or without knowing in what condition I left them; or indeed, whether they had hitherto survived the cruelty which now methought raged every where, with all the fury which rage, zeal, lust, and wanton fierceness could inspire into the bloody hearts of Popish priests, bigots, and barbarians. Of such a scene my learned reader may see a fine picture drawn by Silius Italicus, in his second book, where he describes the sacking the brave city of Saguntum by a less savage army.

I then overheard a priest admonish the executioner to exert the utmost rigour of my sentence towards me; after which, the same priest advancing forwards, and putting on a look of compassion, advised me, for the sake of my soul, to embrace the holy communion. I gave him no answer, and he turned his back, thundering forth curses against me.

At length I arrived at the fatal place which promised me a speedy end to all my sufferings. Here, methought, I saw a man who by his countenance and actions exprest the highest degree of despair. He stamped with his feet, beat his face, tore his hair, and uttered the most horrid execrations. Upon inquiring into the circumstances of this person, I was informed by one of the bye-standers, that he was a non-juror, who had lent considerable

Digitized by Google

assistance to the Pretender's cause, out of principle; and was now lamenting the consequences which the success of it had brought on such honest gentlemen as myself. My informer added, with a smile, the wise man expected his majesty would keep his word with heretics.

The executioner then attempted to put the rope round my neck, when my little girl entered my bedchamber, and put an end to my dream, by pulling open my eyes, and telling me that the tailor had brought home my clothes for his majesty's birthday.

The sight of my dear child, added to the name of that gracious Prince, at once deprived me of every private and public fear; and the joy which now began to arise, being soon after heightened by consideration of the day, the sound of bells, and the hurry which prevailed every where, from the eagerness of all sorts of people to demonstrate their loyalty at this season, gave me altogether as delightful a sensation as perhaps the heart of man is capable of feeling; of which I have the pleasure to know every reader must partake, who hath had good-nature enough to sympathize with me in the foregoing part of this vision.

N° 4. TUESDAY, NOVEMBER 26, 1745.

Ambubaiarum collegia, pharmacopolæ,
Mendici, mimi, balatrones; hoc genus omne
Mœstum & solicitum est.———

HOR.

THE Author of the Serious Address to the People of Great Britain (a pamphlet which ought to be in every man's hands at this season), hath incontestibly shewn the danger of this rebellion to all who have any regard for the Protestant religion, or the laws and liberties of their country.

Digitized by Google

We have further endeavoured, in our last paper, to give a lively picture of the utter misery and desolation it would introduce, and the insecurity of our estates, properties, lives and families, under the government of an absolute Popish Prince (for absolute he would plainly be), introduced by the conquering arms of France, Spain, and the Highlands.

So that every good and worthy Protestant in this nation, who is attached to his religion and liberties, or who hath any estate or property, either in church-lands or in the funds (which includes almost every man who hath either estate or property in the kingdom), is concerned, in the highest degree, to oppose the present rebellion.

I am however aware, that there yet remains a party to be spoken to, who are not strictly concerned in interest in any of the preceding lights; I mean those gentlemen who have no property, nor any regard either for the religion or liberty of their country.

Now if I can make it appear, that those persons likewise are interested in opposing the Pretender's cause, I think we may then justly conclude, he cannot have a single partisan in this nation (the most bigoted Roman Catholics excepted) who is sensible enough to know his own good.

And first, the most noble party of free-thinkers, who have no religion, are most heartily concerned to oppose the introduction of Popery, which would obtrude one on them, one not only inconsistent with free-thinking, but indeed with any thinking at all. How would a man of spirit, whose principles are too elevated to worship the great Creator of the universe, submit to pay his adoration to a rabble of saints, most of whom he would have been justly ashamed to have kept company with while alive!

But besides the slavish doctrines which he must believe, or, at least, meanly pretend to believe, how would a genius who cannot conform to the little acts of decency required by a Protestant church,

Digitized by Google

support the slavish impositions of auricular confession, penance, fasting, and all the tiresome forms and ceremonies exacted by the church of Rome!

Lastly, whereas the said free-thinkers have long regarded it as an intolerable grievance, that a certain body of men called *parsons*, should, for the useless services of praying, preaching, catechising, and instructing the people, receive a certain fixed stipend from the public, which the law foolishly allows them to call their own: how would these men brook the restoration of abbey-lands, impropriations, and the numberless flowers which the reformation hath lopped off from the church, and which the re-establishment of Popery would most infallibly restore to it.

Again, there are many worthy persons who, though very little concerned for the true liberty of their country, have, however, the utmost respect for what is by several mistaken for it; I mean licentiousness, or a free power of abusing the king, ministry, and every thing great, noble, and solemn.

The impunity with which this liberty hath been of late years practised, must be acknowledged by every man of the least candour. Indeed, to such a degree, that power and government, instead of being objects of reverence and terror, have been set up as the butts of ridicule and buffoonery, as if they were only intended to be laughed at by the people.

Now this is a liberty which hath only flourished under this royal family. His present majesty, as he hath less deserved than his predecessors to be the object of it, so he hath supported it with more dignity and contempt than they have done; but how impatient the Pretender will be under this liberty, and how certainly he will abolish it, may be concluded, not only from the absolute power which he infallibly brings with him; but from the many ears and noses which his family, without such power, have heretofore sacrificed on these occasions.

And this is a loss not only to be deplored by

Digitized by Google

those men of genius, who have exerted and may exert their great talents this way. There are many who, without the capacity of writing, have that of reading, and have done their utmost to support and encourage such authors and their works. These will lose their favourite amusement, all those laughs and shrugs which they have formerly vented at the expense of their superiors.

But if these concerns should appear chimerical, I come now to pecuniary considerations; to a large body of men whose whole trade would be ruined by this man's success. The reader will be, perhaps, in doubt what trade can be carried on by such persons as I have described in the beginning of this paper: how much more will he be surprised to hear, that it is the principal trade which of late years hath been carried on in this kingdom. To keep him therefore no longer in suspense, I mean the honest method of selling ourselves, which hath flourished so notably for a long time among us. A business which I have ventured to call honest, notwithstanding the objections raised by weak and scrupulous people against it.

I know indeed many answers have been given to these objections by a late philosopher of great eminence, and by the followers of his school; such as, *that all mankind are rascals; that they are only to be governed by corruption*, &c. But to say the truth, there is no occasion of having recourse to these deep and obscure doctrines for this purpose; there is a much fuller and plainer answer to be given, and which is founded on principles the very reverse of those which were taught in this school, namely, the principles of common sense and common honesty; for if it be granted, as surely it will be, that we are freemen, we have certainly a right to ourselves; and whatever we have a right to, we have also a right to sell. And, perhaps, it was a doubt in that great philosopher, *whether we were*

Digitized by Google

freemen or no, that led him into those doctrines I have mentioned.

Now this trade, by which alone so many thousands have got an honest livelihood for themselves and families, must be totally ruined; for, if this nation should be once enslaved, it would be impossible for an honest man to carry on this business any longer. A freeman (as hath been proved) may justly sell himself, but a slave cannot.

And if a man should be so dishonourable and base as to offer at carrying on this trade in an enslaved country, contrary to all the rules of honesty, and all the most solemn ties of slavery, yet who would buy him? The reasons against such a purchase are too obvious to be mentioned. Indeed, we may say in general, that as it is dishonest in a slave to sell, so it as foolish in a slave to buy; for as the one hath no property to part with, so neither can the other acquire any.

For these reasons, I think it is visibly the interest of all that part of the nation, to whom I have addressed myself in the beginning of this paper, to exclude Popery and arbitrary power.

There is, however, one objection, which I foresee may and will be made to this conclusion; and that is, whereas the estates of all the lords and commons of this kingdom will be forfeited, and at the disposal of the conqueror, and the personal fortunes of all others will, in the confusion at least, be liable to plunder, that such honest gentlemen may have a sufficient chance abundantly to repair or compensate all their losses.

I own there is something very plausible in this argument, and it might, perhaps, have great force, if the Pretender's son had landed in England, as he did in Scotland; and had been pleased to place that confidence in an English rabble, with which he hath vouchsafed rather to honour these Highland banditti. In this case, I grant, no man could justly have been blamed who had fixed the eyes of his

Digitized by Google

affection on his neighbour's estate, gardens, house, purse, wife, or daughter, for joining the young man's cause, provided the success of it had been probable; such a behaviour would then have been highly consistent with all the rules taught in that school of philosophy above mentioned, and none but a musty moralist, for whose doctrine great men have doubtless an adequate contempt, would have condemned it.

But the fact is otherwise: The *Highlanders* are those to whom he must owe any success he may attain; these are therefore to be served before you; and I easily refer to your own consideration, when Rome, and France, and Spain, are repaid their demands, when a vast army of hungry Highlanders, and a larger army of as hungry priests, are satisfied, how miserable a pittance will remain to your share? indeed, so small a one must this be, that the greatest adept in our philoso-political school would think it scarce worth his while to sacrifice his conscience to the certainty of obtaining it.

These latter considerations I earnestly recommend to the most serious attention of the gentlemen for whose use this paper is calculated; and I am certain that any argument for the Pretender's cause, drawn from the hopes of plundering their neighbours (with which, perhaps, some honest men have too fondly flattered themselves), will have very little weight with any person. Nay, I must remind them, that they will not be suffered to rifle the very churches themselves, upon whose small riches, most probably, the said gentlemen have cast their eyes.

It appears then, that none will be, or can be gainers by this rebellion, but Popish priests and Highlanders; and I have too good an opinion of my country to apprehend that her religion, liberties, and properties, can ever be endangered by such adversaries.

Digitized by Google

N° 7. TUESDAY, DECEMBER 17, 1745.

TO THE TRUE PATRIOT.

MY WORTHY FRIEND,

I RECEIVED your paper, intituled the True Patriot, numbers one and two, inclosed in the franks of my great and most honoured patron, for which I have the highest thanks for you both. I am delighted, and that greatly, with many passages in these papers. The moderation which you profess towards all parties, perfectly becomes a Christian. Indeed I have always thought, that moderation in the shepherd was the best, if not only, way to bring home all the straggling sheep to his flock. I have intimated this at the vestry, and even at visitation before the archdeacon:

Sed Cassandræ non creditum est.

I like your method of placing a motto from the classics at the head of every paper. It must give some encouragement to your readers, that the author understands (at least) one line of Latin, which is perhaps more than can be safely predicated of every writer in this age.

You desire me, Sir, to write you something proper to be seen, *et quidem*, by the Public; as therefore a subject worthy their most serious attention now offers itself, *viz.* The ensuing fast ordained by authority, I have communicated my thoughts

Digitized by Google

to you thereon, which you may suppress or publicate as you think meet.

——— ἔρχευ ἐπ' ἔργον
Θεοῖσιν ἐπευξάμενος τελέσαι.

PYTHAGORAS.

——"Go upon the work,
"Having first prayed to the gods for success."

As it is impossible for any man to reflect seriously on the progress of the present unnatural rebellion, without imputing such unparalleled success to some other cause than has yet appeared, some other strength than what any visible human means hath placed in the hands of the rebels; so will it be extremely difficult to assign any adequate cause whatsoever, without recurring to one, of whose great efficacy we have frequent examples in sacred history. I mean the just judgement of God against an offending people.

And that this is really so, we may conclude from these two considerations: First, from the rapidity of the rebels progress, so unaccountable from all human means; for can history produce an instance parallel to this, of six or seven men landing in a great and powerful nation, in opposition to the inclination of the people, in defiance of a vast and mighty army (for though the greater part of this army was not then in the kingdom, it was so nearly within call, that every man of them might, within the compass of a few days or weeks at farthest, have been brought home and landed in any part of it). If we consider, I say, this handful of men landing in the most desolate corner, among a set of poor, naked, hungry, disarmed slaves, abiding there with impunity, till they had, as it were, in the face of a large body of his majesty's troops, collected a kind of army, or rather rabble, together; if we view this army intimidating the King's forces from approaching them by their

Digitized by Google

situation; soon afterwards quitting that situation, marching directly up to the northern capital, and entering it without surprise or without a blow. If we again view this half-armed, half-disciplined mob, without the assistance of a single piece of artillery, march up to, attack, and *smite* a superior number of the king's regular troops, with cannon in their front to defend them. If we consider them returning from this complete victory to the capital, which they had before taken; there remaining, for near two months, in contempt of twelve millions of people, above a hundred thousand of which have arms in their hands, and one-half of these the best troops in Europe. If we consider them afterwards, at the approach of a large army, under a general of great experience and approved merit, bending their course, though not in a direct line, towards this army; and then, by long and painful marches, over almost inaccessible mountains, through the worst of roads, in the worst of seasons; by those means, I say, slipping that army, and leaving it behind them. If we view them next march on towards another army still greater, under a young, brave, vigilant, and indefatigable prince, who were advancing in their front to meet, as the others were in their rear to pursue them. If we consider, I say, these Banditti, not yet increased to full 6000, and above a third of these old men and boys, not to be depended on, proceeding without a check through a long tract of country, through many towns and cities, which they plundered, at least to a degree, up within a few miles of this third army, sent to oppose them; then, by the advantage of a dark night, passing by this army likewise, and by a most incredible march getting between that and the metropolis, into which they struck a terror scarce to be credited. Though besides the two armies at their heels, there was still one in this very metropolis infinitely superior to these rebels,

Digitized by Google

not only in arms and discipline, but in numbers Who, I say, can consider such things as these, and retain the least doubt, whether he shall impute them to a judgement inflicted on this sinful nation; especially when, in the second place, we must allow such judgement to be most undoubtedly our due.

To run through every species of crimes with which our *Sodom* abounds, would fill your whole paper. Indeed, such monstrous impieties and iniquities have I both seen and heard of, within these three last years, during my sojourning in what is called the world, particularly the last winter, while I tarried in the great city, that while I verily believe we are the silliest nation under heaven in every other light, we are wiser than *Sodom* in wickedness. If we would avoid, therefore, that final judgement which was denounced against that city; if we would avoid that total destruction with which we are threatened, not remotely and at a distance, but immediately and at hand; if we would pacify that vengeance which hath already begun to operate by sending rebels, foreign enemies, pestilence, the forerunner of famine, and poverty among us; if we would pacify that vengeance which seems already bent to our destruction, by breathing the breath of folly, as well as perfidy, into the nostrils of the great; what have we to do, but to set about THE WORK recommended by the wise and pious, though Heathen philosopher, in my motto? And what is THIS WORK but a thorough amendment of our lives, a perfect alteration of our ways? But before we begin this, let us, in obedience to the rule of that philosopher, prescribed above, first apply ourselves by fasting and prayer to the throne of offended grace. My lords the bishops have wisely set apart a particular day for this solemn service. A day, which I hope will be kept universally through this kingdom, with all those marks of true piety and

Digitized by Google

repentance, which our present dreadful situation demands. Indeed, the wretch whose hard heart is not seriously in earnest on this occasion, deserves no more the appellation of a good Englishman, than of a good churchman, or a true Christian. All sober and wise nations have, in times of public danger, instituted certain solemn sacrifices to their gods; now the Christian sacrifices are those of fasting and prayer: and if ever these were in a more extraordinary manner necessary, it is surely now, when the least reflection must convince us that we do in so eminent a manner deserve the judgement of God, and when we have so much reason to apprehend it is coming upon us. I hope, therefore, (I repeat it once more), that this day will be kept by us ALL, in the most solemn manner, and that not a man will dare refuse complying with those duties which the state requires of us; but I must, at the same time, recommend to my countrymen a caution, that they would not mistake THE WORK itself for what is only the beginning of, or preface to it. Let them not vainly imagine, that when they have fasted and prayed for a day; nay, even for an age, that THE WORK is done. It is a total amendment of life, a total change of manners, which can bring THE WORK to a conclusion, or produce any good effects from it. Here again, to give particular instances, would be to enumerate all those vices which I have already declined recounting, and would be too prolix. They are known, they are obvious, and few men who resolve to amend their lives, will, I believe, want any assistance to discover what parts of them stand in need of amendment. I shall, however, point out two or three particulars, which I the rather single out, because I have heard, that there are some who dispute whether they are really vices or no, though every polity, as well as the Christian, have agreed in condemning them as such. The first of these is

Digitized by Google

lying. The devil himself is, in scripture, said to be the father of lies; and liars are, perhaps, some of the vilest and wickedest children he has. Nay, I think the morals of all civilized eations have denied even the character of a gentleman to a liar. So heinous is this vice, that it has not only stigmatized particular persons, but whole communities, with infamy. And yet have we not persons, ay, and very great persons too, so famous for it, that their credit is a jest, and their words mere wind? I need not point them out, for they take sufficient care to point out themselves. Luxury is a second vice, which is so far from being acknowledged as criminal, that it is ostentatiously affected. Now this is not only a vice in itself, but it is in reality a privation of all virtue. For first, in lower fortunes it prevents men from being honest; and, in higher situations, it excludes that virtue without which no man can be a Christian, namely charity. For as surely as charity covereth a multitude of sins, so must a multitude of dishes, pictures, jewels, houses, horses, servants, *&c.* cover all charity. I remember dining last winter at a great man's table, where we had among many others, one dish, the expense of which would have provided very liberally for a poor family a whole twelvemonth. In short, I never saw, during my abode in the great city, a single man who gave me reason to think, that he would have enabled himself to be charitable, by retrenching the most idle superfluity of his expense. Perhaps the large subscriptions which have prevailed all over the kingdom at this season, may be urged as an instance of charity. To this I answer, in the words of a very great and generous friend of mine, who disclaimed all merit from a very liberal subscription, saying, "It was rather "sense than goodness, to sacrifice a small part for "the security of the whole." Now true charity is of another kind, it has no self-interested motives, pursues no immediate return nor worldly good,

Digitized by Google

well knowing that it is laying up a much surer and much greater reward for itself. But, indeed, who wonders that men are so backward in sacrificing any of their wealth to their consciences, who before had sacrificed their consciences to the acquisition of that very wealth. Can we expect to find charity in an age, when scarce any refuse to own the most profligate rapaciousness! when no man is ashamed of avowing the pursuit of riches through every dirty road and track? To speak out, in an age when every thing is venal; and when there is scarce one among the mighty who would not be equally ashamed at being thought not to set *some price* on himself, as he would at being imagined to set too low a one? This is an assertion whose truth is too well known. Indeed, my four years knowledge of the world hath scarce furnished me with examples of any other kind. I believe I have already exceeded my portion of hour-glass; I shall, therefore, reserve what I have farther to say on this subject to some other opportunity.

I am, &c.

ABRAHAM ADAMS.

N° 9. TUESDAY, DECEMBER 31, 1745.

Non hoc ista sibi tempus spectacula poscit. VIRG.

THE following letter came attended with a small present of Bologna sausages, Naples soap, Florence oil, and a paper of maccaroni.

SIGNIOR SAR,

'ME be inform, dat you be de Patriat, dat is 'to say, van parson who take part vor de muny; 'now, Sar, dat be commodity me did forget to

Digitized by Google

'bring over vid me; but ven me ave got one two 'tousand pound me sal send you sum; me desire, 'darefor, dat you woud rite sumting to recomend 'de opera, or begar me sal be oblige to go back 'to Italy like one fool as me did cum, and dey 'will laff at me for bring no muny from an coun-'try vich ave give so much muny for song.

'Me be, Signior Sar,

'Of your excellence, de most umble sclave,

'GIOVANI CANTILENA.'

Though I by no means admit that character of patriotism which the signior hath conceived, whether in Italy or England I will not determine, yet as I think it one part of integrity to dare oppose popular clamour, I shall, in compliance with my good friend, and in return for this kind present, offer such thoughts as occur to me in favour of a diversion, against which so much disgust seems to prevail at this season.

And in the first place, I think it should be considered, that these poor Italians, whose property is their throats, did not come over of their own accord; but were invited hither. Nor is the rebellion a sufficient excuse to send them back unrewarded, since the poverty and distress of this nation, even before this rebellion, occasioned by debts, wars, and almost every public calamity, must have deterred any persons from such an undertaking, who had not resolved to have an opera at any rate, and in any situation.

But, perhaps, this melancholy situation of our affairs was a principal reason for the introduction of this opera. Is any thing more proper to soften and compose the mind in misfortunes than music? Hath it not always been found the most effectual remedy in grief? And was accordingly used as such by the great Nero, to calm and compose the

Digitized by Google

agonies of his mind, while his own city was in flames; and Homer informs us, that Achilles used to assuage the wrath and impetuosity of his temper by the music which old Chiron had taught him. Nay, it hath been prescribed, by physicians, as a medicine for a diseased mind; and we are told by Josephus, that "when Saul was agitated with "fits, like a dæmoniac, his *physicians not being* "*able to give any natural or philosophical account* "*of the distemper*, only advised the having some- "body about him that could sing or play upon the "harp well, that might be ready at hand to give "him the diversion of an hymn or an air. This ad- "vice was taken, and David sent for, who by his "voice and harp cured the patient."

The great power over the passions, which the ancient philosophers assigned to music, is almost too well known to be mentioned. Socrates learned to sing in his old age. Plato had so high an opinion of music, that he considered the application of it to amusement only, as a high perversion of its institution; for he imagined it given by the gods to men for much more divine and noble purposes. And Pythagoras (to mention no more) is known to have held, that virtue, peace, health, and all other good things was nothing but harmony. Hence perhaps arose that notion maintained by some of the Greeks, from observing the sympathy between them, that the soul of man was something very like the sound of a fiddle.

And this power music is not only capable of exercising to allay and compose, it is altogether as efficacious in rousing and animating the passions. Thus Xenophantus is recorded to have incited Alexander to arms with his music. And Plutarch, in his Laconic Apophthegms, tells us, that Agesilaus being asked why the Spartans marched (or rather danced) up to the enemy to some tune? answered, That music discovered the brave man from the

Digitized by Google

coward; for those same notes which made the eyes of the valiant sparkle with fire, overspread the timorous face with paleness, and every other mark of terror.

This, therefore, is a second good reason for an opera at present, provided the music be properly adapted to the times, be chiefly martial, and consist mostly of trumpets and kettle-drums. The subject likewise of the drama (though that is generally considered as a matter of little consequence in those compositions) may lend some assistance; as suppose, for instance, the famous opera in which the celebrated Nicolini formerly killed a lion with so much bravery, should be revived on this occasion. Such an example would almost animate the ladies, nay, even the beaus, to take up arms in defence of their country.

And what are the objections which our antimusical enemies make to this entertainment?

First, I apprehend it hath been said, that the softness of Italian music is calculated to enervate the mind. This hath been obviated already. But admitting the objection true, where is its validity, when we consider of what persons the audiences will be composed? for not only the common soldiers, but all inferior officers, are excluded by the price. Indeed, the audience at an opera consists chiefly of fine gentlemen, fine ladies, and their servants, and except a few general officers, whose courage we ought to imagine superior to the power of a languishing air, scarce a person is ever present, who is likely to see a camp, or handle a musket; unless the opera, by being regulated as above, should inspire a martial spirit into them.

Secondly, it is said, that the immoderate expense of this diversion, at a season when poverty spreads its black banner over the whole nation, and when much the greater part are reduced to the most miserable degrees of want and necessity, is

Digitized by Google

an argument of most abandoned extravagance, and indecent profligacy, scarce to be equalled by any example in history.

This, I conceive, is the objection on which our adversaries principally rely. I shall apply myself, therefore, in a very particular manner, to answer it.

And here I must premise, that this objection proceeds on a tacit admission of what is by no means true, *viz.* That the sums expended on an opera subscription would otherwise be employed in the public service of the nation, or at least in private charity, to some of the numberless objects of it.

But this would certainly not be the case; for the person who could think of promoting such a diversion, in the midst of so much calamity, must have neither heart nor head good enough to feel the distresses of a fellow-creature, much less to relieve them; and surely it cannot be supposed, that these people will advance any thing in defence of his majesty, when they fly in his sacred face, by attempting an opera, though he hath himself (or I am grossly misinformed) been pleased to declare, it is not now a time for operas.

We must therefore conclude, that this money, if not exhausted for the present good purpose, would either remain dormant in the purse of its owner, or would otherwise be sacrificed at cards, or lavished on some less innocent article of luxury or wantonness.

The expense then of this entertainment, however great it should be, will not injure the Public. On the contrary, such will be its political utility, that I question whether this opera may not preserve the nation.

For, in the first place, can any thing tend more to raise the public credit abroad, or so effectually to refute the slanders of those enemies, who have endeavoured to represent us in a bankrupt condition, than this very undertaking? It hath been

Digitized by Google

esteemed a master-stroke of Roman policy, as well as greatness, that in their highest distress, they endeavoured, by all kinds of art, to insinuate their great strength, and assert their independency; for which purpose was that ever memorable puff, with which they refused the presents of king Hiero, after the battle of Thrasimene.

I cannot help regarding our sending for a troop of Italian singers, in this time of distress, as a state puff of the same kind. Indeed I am convinced it was done with this design; for are not the very persons who are the forwardest in promoting this diversion courtiers, and consequently friends to the present establishment? Are they not people of fortune, and therefore highly interested in the preservation of national credit? Nor can I help observing, as a proof of the policy of this measure, another piece of state craft, tending to shew our great inward strength and security; for while we sent for this troop of singers into England, we left several troops of our soldiers abroad. And in what part of Europe could this policy be played off with such advantage as in Italy, where our principal enemies reside, and where the scheme of our destruction is supposed to have been laid? The success with which this scheme hath been attended, must have answered our expectation, since it is apparent, by the arrival of these singers, that they are *fairly taken in*, and imposed upon to believe we have still as much money as ever.

In this light then the opera, and those who encourage it, will deserve our highest encomiums; and the subscription to it may be ranked with the other public subscriptions at this season. And in this light we ought to see the intention of those who have promoted it, for the reasons above-mentioned: to which I will add the humane maxim, of always assigning the best motive possible to the actions of every one.

But, on the contrary, should we be so cruel to

Digitized by Google

deny any such good purpose to be at the bottom; nay, should we derive this desire of an opera at present from the most depraved levity of mind, an utter insensibility of public good or evil, yet we may still draw advantages from our opera, though I must own I could be scarce sanguine enough to derive them from design. For could it be imagined of any nation, at such a season of danger and distress (which I decline painting at length, as the picture is disagreeable, and already sufficently known), that considerable numbers of the inhabitants, instead of contributing all the assistance in their several capacities to the Public, should employ their time and their money in endeavouring to promote an expensive foreign diversion, composed of all the ingredients of softness and luxury, such a nation would not be worth invading. No powerful prince could look on such a people with any eyes of fear or jealousy, nor no wise one would send his subjects among them, for fear of enervating their minds, and debauching their morals.

Such a nation could inspire no other ideas into its neighbours, than those of contempt and ridicule. We ought to be considered as the silly swan, whose last breath goes out in a cantata. And as nothing but wanton cruelty could move any power to attack us, so would the conquest of us be no less infamous than barbarous; and we should, from the same reason, be as safe in the neighbourhood of France, as the little commonwealth of Lucca was in that of her great sister of Rome.

For all these reasons I am for an opera; but I must then insist on it, that we strike up immediately, otherwise I must desire that Ghost of an advertisement, calling for latter payment from the subscribers, which hath haunted the public papers this month, without having (as it seems) been spoken to by any one, to disappear immediately;

Digitized by Google

for I would by no means have all Europe imagine, that *we want nothing* to establish our opera at present, *but money.*

N° 10. TUESDAY, JANUARY 7, 1746.

Tu, Jupiter, quem statorem hujus urbis atque imperii verè nominamus: HUNC *et* HUJUS *socios à tuis aris ceterisque templis, à tectis urbis ac mœnibus, à vita fortunisque civium omnium arcebis: et omnes bonorum inimicos, hostes patriæ, latrones Italiæ, scelerum fœdere inter se ac nefaria societate conjunctos, æternis suppliciis, vivos mortuosque mactabis.*

CIC. IN L. CATIL.

TO THE TRUE PATRIOT.

DEAR SIR, Dec. 14, 1745.

THOUGH I live on a small fortune, in great obscurity, yet I cannot but be interested in our present troubles. My thoughts sometimes lead me to meditate, what we are likely to expect, should success attend the present ravagers of our country. Nay, I have even gone so far as to suppose them actual victors, and have in this light framed an imaginary journal of events, with which I here present you, as with a waking dream.

The person of my drama, or journalist, I suppose to be an honest tradesmen, living in the busy part of the city.

January 1, 1746.

THIS day the supposed conqueror was proclaimed at Stocks Market, amidst the loud acclamations of Highlanders and friars. I was enabled, from my own windows, to view this ceremony;

Digitized by Google

Walbrook church, the Mansion-house, and several others adjoining, having been burnt and razed in the massacre of last week. Father O-Blaze, an Irish dominican, read upon the occasion a speech out of a paper, which he styled an extempore address. Melancholy as I was, I could not help smiling at one of his expressions, when speaking of the new year, he talked of *Janus*'s faces, each of which looked both backward and forward.

Jan. 2. A proclamation issued for a free parliament (according to the declaration) to meet the 20th instant. The twelve judges removed, and twelve new ones appointed; some of whom had scarce ever been in Westminster-hall before.

Jan. 3. Queen Anne's statue in St. Paul's churchyard taken away, and a large crucifix erected in its room.

Jan. 4, 5, 6. The cash, transfer-books, *&c.* removed to the Tower, from the Bank, South-sea and India houses, which ('tis reported) are to be turned into convents.

Jan. 10. Three anabaptists committed to Newgate, for pulling down the crucifix in St. Paul's churchyard.

Jan. 12. Being the first Sunday after Epiphany, father Mac-dagger, the royal confessor, preached at St. James's—sworn afterwards of the privy-council—arrived the French ambassador with a numerous retinue.

Jan. 20. The free parliament opened—the speech and addresses filled with sentiments of civil and religious liberty.—An act of grace proposed from the crown, to pardon all treasons committed under pretext of any office, civil or military, before the first declarations being promulgated, which was in the Isle of Mull, about 19 months ago. The judges consulted, whether all persons throughout Great Britain were intended to be bound by this promulgation, as being privy to it. 'Twas held they were, because *ignorantia legis non excusat.*

Digitized by Google

Jan. 22. Three members, to wit, Mr. D——n, Mr. P—t, and Mr. L——n, were seized in their houses, and sent to the Tower, by a warrant from a secretary of state. The same day I heard another great man was dismissed from his place, but his name I could neither learn nor guess.

Jan. 23. His highness sends a message to the house, that he would make no further removals, till he saw better reason.

Jan. 24. A great court at St. James's, at which were present * and * and * and * and *, and all kissed hands.

Jan 24. The three anabaptists abovementioned tried for their offence, and sentenced to be hanged. Executed the same day, attended by Mr. Machenly the ordinary. Their teacher, Mr. Obadiah Washum, the currier, was refused access from their first commitment.

Jan. 26. This day the Gazette informs us, that Portsmouth, Berwick, and Plymouth, were delivered into the hands of French commissaries, as cautionary towns; and also twenty ships of the line, with their guns and rigging, pursuant to treaty.

Jan. 27. Tom Blatch, the old small-coal-man, committed to the Compter, for a violent assault on father Mac-dagger and three young friars. 'Twas the talk about town, that they had attempted the chastity of his daughter Kate.

Jan. 28. A bill brought into the commons, and twice read the same day, to repeal the act of habeas corpus, and that by which the writ *de hæretico comburendo* was abolished. A mutiny the same day among the Highland soldiers—quelled by doubling their pay.

Jan. 31. The above bill passed, and the royal assent given. A motion made about the restoration of abbey lands,——rejected by the lords, seven English Roman Catholic peers being in the majority.

Digitized by Google

February 1. All peerages declared void since the revolution, and 24 new peers created, without a foot of land in the island. A second mutiny among the soldiery.

Feb. 2. Long-acre and Covent-garden allotted out in portions to the Highland guards. Two watermen and a porter committed to the Lollards tower at Lambeth for heresy.

Feb. 3. Father Poignardini, an Italian jesuit, made privy-seal. A bill proposed against the liberty of the press, and to place the nomination of jurors, exempt from challenge, in the crown. Several catholic lords and gentlemen, being English, quit the court, and retire into the country. More heretics sent to Lambeth.

Feb. 5. A promotion of 18 general officers, three only of which were English. Lord John Drummond made colonel of the first regiment of foot guards, the duke of Perth of the second, and lord George Murray of the third.

Feb. 6. Various grants passed the privy-seal of lands in various counties to generals, ecclesiastics, and other favourites, all foreigners.

Feb. 9. A petition from various persons, sufferers by the said grants, setting forth their fidelity to the government, and that particularly in the late troubles, though they had never entered into any schemes in favour of his present Highness, yet they had constantly declined all subscriptions, associations, *&c.* to his prejudice. Father Macdagger brought them for answer, that the associators and subscribers had at least shewn their attachment to some government, but that an indifference to all government deserved favour from none; and that therefore their petition was rejected.

Feb. 13. Four heretics burnt in Smithfield—— Mr. Mac-henly attended them, assisted on this extraordinary occasion by father O-Blaze, the dominican.

Feb. 19. Rumours of a plot. More heretics com-

Digitized by Google

mitted. The judges declare the power of the crown to suspend laws. Father Mac-dagger made president of Magdalen college in Oxford.

Feb. 21. Four lords and two commoners taken into custody for the plot, all English, and two of them Roman catholics. The deanry of Christ Church given to father Poignardini, and the bishoprics of Winchester and Ely, to the general of the jesuits order, resident in Italy.

Feb. 28. Six more heretics burnt in Smithfield. A fresh motion made to restore the abbey lands—carried in the lords house, but rejected by the commons. Several members of the lower house sent to the Tower by a secretary of state's warrant, and the next day expelled, and fined by the privy council 1000*l.* each.

March 1. The French ambassador made a duke, with precedence. The motion for restoring abbey lands carried, and an address of both houses prepared upon the occasion. Cape Breton given back to the French, and Gibraltar and Portmahon to the Spaniards.

March 2. Seven more heretics burnt. A message from the crown, desiring the advice of the free parliament touching the funds. An humble address immediately voted by way of answer, praying that his Highness would take such methods, as they might be effectually and speedily annihilated.

March 4. An eminent physician fined 200 marks in the King's Bench, for an inuendo at Batson's, that Bath water was preferable to holy water. Three hundred Highlanders, of the opposite party, with their wives and children, massacred in Scotland. The Pope's nuncio arrived this evening at Greenwich.

March 7. The Pope's nuncio makes his public entry——met at the Royal Exchange by my lord mayor (a Frenchman) with the aldermen, who have all the honour to kiss his toe——proceeds to

Digitized by Google

Paul's-churchyard—met there by father O-Blaze, who invites him, in the name of the new vicar-general and his doctors, to a *combustio hæreticorum*, just then going to be celebrated. His eminence accepts the offer kindly, and attends them to Smithfield, where the ordinary is introduced and well received——The nuncio proceeds thence to St. James's, where he had been expected for five hours——the nobility and great officers of state all admitted to kiss his toe—A grand office opened the same night in Drury-lane for the sale of pardons and indulgences.

March 9. My little boy Jacky taken ill of the itch. He had been on the parade with his godfather the day before, to see the life-guards, and had just touched one of their plaids.

March 12. His Highness sends a message to the commons, acquainting them with his design of equipping a large fleet for the assistance of his good brother of France, and for that purpose demanding two millions to be immediately raised by a capitation. A warm debate thereon. His Highness goes to the house of commons at 12 at night, places himself in the speaker's chair, and introduces the French ambassador. His excellency makes a long speech, setting forth the many services which his master had done this nation, and the great goodwill he had always borne towards them, and concluding with many haughty menaces, in case they should prove ungrateful for all his favours. He is seconded by the laird of Keppoch, chancellor of the exchequer. The speaker stands up, and utters the word privilege, upon which he is sent to the Tower. Then Mr. Chancellor of the exchequer moved, that the members against the motion might have leave to withdraw; and several having left the house, the question was put, and carried in the affirmative, *nemine contradicente.*

March 16. Lord C. J. W——les, and admiral

Digitized by Google

V——n, hanged at Tyburn. Several others were reprieved on the merit of having been enemies to those two great men, and were only ordered to be wh pt at the cart's tail.

March 17. Fresh rumours of a plot——a riot in the city——a rising in the north——a descent in the west—confusions, uproars, commitments, hangings, burnings, *&c. &c.*

——— *verbum non amplius addam.*

N° 11. TUESDAY, JANUARY 14, 1746.

Τὰ χρηματ' ἀνθρώποισιν τιμιώτατα
Δύναμίν τε πλείστην τῶν ἐν' ἀνθρώποις ἔχει.
EURIP. IN PHÆNISS.

TO THE TRUE PATRIOT,

SIR,

I AM a citizen, a haberdasher by trade, and one of those persons to whom the world allow the epithets of wise and prudent. And I enjoy this character the more, as I can fairly assure myself I deserve it; nor am indebted, on this account, to any thing but my own regular conduct, unless to the good instructions with which my father launched me into the world, and upon which I formed this grand principle, "That there is no real "value in any thing but money."

The truth of this proposition may be argued from hence, that it is the only thing in the value of which mankind are agreed; for, as to all other matters, while they are held in high estimation by

Digitized by Google

some, they are disregarded and looked on as cheap and worthless by others. Nay, I believe it is difficult to find any two persons, who place an equal valuation on any virtue, good or great quality whatever.

Now having once established this great rule, I have, by reference to it, been enabled to set a certain value on every thing else; in which I have governed myself by two cautions: 1st, Never to purchase too dear; and 2dly, (which is a more uncommon degree of wisdom), Never to overvalue what I am to sell; by which latter misconduct I have observed many persons guilty of great imprudence.

It is not my purpose to trouble you with exemplifications of the foregoing rule, in my ordinary calling: I shall proceed to acquaint you with my conduct concerning those things which some silly people call invaluable, such as reputation, virtue, sense, beauty, &c. all which I have reduced to a certain standard: For, as your friend Mr. Adams says, in his letter on the late fast, I imagine every man, woman, and thing, to have their price. His astonishment at which truth made me smile, as I dare swear it did you; it is, indeed, agreeable enough to the simplicity of his character.

But to proceed——In my youth I fell violently in love with a very pretty woman. She had a good fortune; but it was 500*l.* less than I could with justice demand (I was heartily in love with her, that's the truth of it); I therefore took my pen and ink (for I do nothing without them), and set down the particulars in the following manner:

Digitized by Google

Mrs. Amey Fairface debtor to Stephen Grub.

	£.	s.	d.
For fortune, as *per* marriage	5000	00	00

Per *contra* creditor.

	£.	s.	d.
Imprimis, To cash	4500	00	00
Item, To beauty (for she had a great deal, and I had a great value for it)	100	00	00
Item, To wit as *per* conversation . .	2	10	00
Item, To her affection for me	30	00	00
Item, To good housewifery, a sober, chaste education, and being a good workwoman at her needle, in all	50	00	00
Item, To her skill in music	1	01	00
Item, To dancing	00	00	06
	4683	11	06
Mrs. Amey debtor	5000	00	00
Per contra creditor	4683	11	06
Due to balance	316	08	06

You see, Sir, I strained as hard as possible, and placed a higher value (perhaps) on her several perfections, than others would have done; but the balance still remained against her, and I was reduced to the necessary alternative of sacrificing that sum for ever, or of quitting my mistress. You may easily guess on which a prudent man would determine.——Indeed, I had sufficient reason to be afterwards pleased with my prudence, as she proved to be a less valuable woman than I imagined; for, two years afterwards, having had a considerable loss in trade, by which the balance above was satisfied, I renewed my addresses, but the false-hearted creature (forsooth) refused to see me.

Digitized by Google

A second occasion which I had for my pen and ink, in this way, was, when the situation of my affairs, after some losses, was such, that I could clearly have put 1500*l.* in my pocket by breaking. The account then stood thus:

	£.	s.	d.
Stephen Grub, debtor to cash	1500	00	00

Per contra creditor.

	£.	s.	d.
To danger to soul as *per* perjury . .	105	00	00
To danger to body as *per* felony . .	1000	00	00
To loss of reputation	500	00	00
To conscience as *per* injuring others	00	02	06
To incidental charges, trouble, *&c.* .	100	00	00

I am convinced you are so good a master of figures, that I need not cast up the balance, which must so visibly have determined me to preserve the character of an honest man.

Not to trouble you with more instances of a life, of which you may easily guess the whole by this specimen; for it hath been entirely transacted by my golden rule; I shall hasten to apply this rule, by which I suppose many other persons in this city conduct themselves, to the present times.

And here, Sir, have we not reason to suppose, that some good men, for want of duly considering the danger of their property, *&c.* from the present rebellion, and low state of public credit, have been too tenacious of their money on the present occasion; for, if we admit that the whole is in danger, surely it is the office of prudence to be generous of the lesser part, in order to secure the greater.

Let us see how this stands on paper; for thus only we can argue with certainty.

Suppose, then, the given sum of your property be 20,000*l.*

The value of securing this will be more or less, in proportion to the danger; for the truth of which

Digitized by Google

I need not only appeal to the common practice of insurance.

If the chance then be twenty to one, it follows that the value of insurance is at an average with 1000*l.*

And proportionally more or less, as the danger is greater or less.

There are, besides, two other articles, which I had like to have forgot, to which every man almost affixes some value. These are religion and liberty. Suppose therefore we set down

	£	s.	d.
Religion at	00	15	00
And liberty at	00	02	06

And I think none but a profligate fellow can value them at a lower rate; it follows, that to secure them from the same proportion of danger as above, is worth 10½*d.*

Now this last sum may be undoubtedly saved, as it would not be missed or called for, if men would only seriously consider the preservation of what is so infinitely more valuable, their property; and advance their money in its defence, in due proportion to the degree of its danger. And as there is nothing so pleasant as clear gain, it must give some satisfaction to every thinking man, that while he risks his money for the preservation of his property, his religion and liberty are tossed him into the bargain.

You see, Sir, I have fairly balanced between those hot-headed zealots, who set these conveniencies above the value of money, and those profligate wicked people, who treat them as matters of no concern or moment.

I have therefore been a little surprised at the backwardness of some very prudent men on this occasion; for it would be really doing them an injury to suspect they do not set a just value on money, while every action of their lives demon-

Digitized by Google

strates the contrary. I can therefore impute this conduct only to a firm persuasion that there will be foolish people enow found, who, from loyalty to their king, zeal for their country, or some other ridiculous principle, will subscribe sufficient sums for the defence of the public; and so they might save their own money, which will still encrease in value, in proportion to the distress and poverty of the nation.

This would be certainly a wise and right way of reasoning; and such a conduct must be highly commendable, if the fact supposed was true; for as nothing is so truly great as to turn the penny while the world suspects your ruin; so to convert the misfortunes of a whole community to your own emolument must be a thing highly eligible by every good man, *i. e.* every Plumb. But I am afraid this rule will reach only private persons at most, and cannot extend to those whose examples, while they keep their own purses shut, lock up the purses of all their neighbours.

A fallacy of the same kind I am afraid we fall into, when we refuse to lend our money to the government at a moderate interest, in hopes of extorting more from the public purse; with which thought a very good sort of man, a Plumb, seemed yesterday to hug himself, in a conversation which we had upon this subject; but upon the nearest computation I could make with my pen, which I handled the moment he left me, I find that this very person, who proposed to gain 1 *per cent.* in 20,000*l.* would, by the consequential effect on the public credit, be a clear loser of $2\frac{1}{2}$.

In short, I am afraid certain persons may at this time run the hazard of a fate which too often attends very wise men, who have not on all occasions a recourse to figures, and may incur the censure of an old proverb, by being 'Penny wise and 'pound foolish.' And since I may be involved,

Digitized by Google

against my will, in the calamity, I shall he obliged to you if you will publish these cautions from,

SIR,

Your humble Servant,

STEPHEN GRUB.

N. B. As your paper supplies the place of three evening posts, I save 1½*d. per* week by it; for which pray accept my acknowledgement.

N° 13. TUESDAY, JANUARY 28, 1746.

Qui non rectè instituunt atque erudiunt liberos, non solùm liberis sed et reipublicæ faciunt injuriam.

CICERO.

MR. Adams having favoured me with a second letter, I shall give it the public without any apology. If any thing in it should at first a little shock those readers who know the world better, I hope they will make allowances for the ignorance and simplicity of the writer.

TO THE TRUE PATRIOT.

MY WORTHY FRIEND,

I AM concerned to find, by all our public accounts, that the rebels still continue in the land. In my last I evidently proved, that their successes were owing to a judgement denounced against our sins, and concluded with some exhortations for

Digitized by Google

averting the divine anger, by the only methods which suggested themselves to my mind. These exhortations, by the event, I perceive have not had that regard paid to them I had reason to expect. Indeed, I am the more confirmed in this conjecture, by a lad whom I lately met at a neighbouring baronet's, where I sojourned the two last days of the year, with my good friend Mr. Wilson.

This lad, whom I imagined to have been come from school to visit his friends for the holidays (for though he is perhaps of sufficient age, I found, on examination, he was not yet qualified for the university), is, it seems, a man *sui juris;* and is, as I gather from the young damsels, Sir John's daughters, a member of the society of *bowes.* I know not whether I spell the word right; for I am not ashamed to say, I neither understand its etymology nor true import, as it hath never once occurred in any lexicon or dictionary which I have yet perused.

Whatever this society may be, either the lad with whom I communed is an unworthy member, or it would become the government to put it down by authority; for he uttered many things during our discourse, for which I would have well scourged any of the youth under my care.

He had not long entered the chamber before he acquainted the damsels, that he and his companions had carried the opera, in opposition to the puts; by which I afterwards learnt he meant all sober and discreet persons. And, fags! says he (I am afraid, though, he made use of a worse word), we expected the bishops would have interfered; but if they had, we should have silenced them. I then thought to myself, stripling, if I had you well horsed on the back of another lad, I would teach you more reverence to their lordships.

This opera, I am informed, is a diversion in which a prodigious sum of money, more than is to be collected out of twenty parishes, is lavished

Digitized by Google

away on foreign eunuchs and papists, very scandalous to be suffered at any time, especially at a season when both war and famine hang over our heads.

During the whole time of our repast at dinner, the young gentleman entertained us with an account of several drums and routs, at which he had been present. These are, it seems, large congregations of men and women, who, instead of assembling together to hear something that is good; nay, or to divert themselves with gambols, which might be allowed now and then in holiday times, meet for no other purpose but that of gaming, for a whole guinea and much more at a stake. At this married women set up all night, nay, sometimes till one or two in the morning, neglect their families, lose their money, and some, Mr. Wilson says, have been suspected of doing even worse than that. Yet this is suffered in a christian kingdom; nay, *(quod prorsus incredibile est)*, the holy sabbath is, it seems, prostituted to these wicked revellings; and card-playing goes on as publicly then as on any other day; nor is this only among the young lads and damsels, who might be supposed to know no better, but men advanced in years, and grave matrons, are not ashamed of being caught at the same pastime. *O tempora! O mores!*

When grace was said after meat, and the damsels departed, the lad began to grow more wicked. Sir John, who is an honest Englishman, hath no other wine but that of Portugal. This our *bowe* could not drink; and when Sir John very nobly declared he scorned to indulge his palate with rarities, for which he must furnish the foe with money to carry on a war with the nation, the stripling replied, Rat the nation (God forgive me for repeating such words), I had rather live under French government, than be debarred from French wine. Oho, my youth! if I had you horsed, thinks I again.—But indeed Sir John well scourged

Digitized by Google

him with his tongue for that expression, and I should have hoped he had made him ashamed, had not his subsequent behaviour shewn him totally void of grace. For when Sir John asked him for a toast, which you know is another word for drinking the health of one's friend or wife, or some person of public eminence, he named the health of a married woman, filled out a bumper of wine, swore he would drink her health in vinegar, and at last openly profest he would commit adultery with her if he could. *Proh pudor!* Nay, and if such a sin might admit of any aggravation, she is, it seems a lady of very high degree, *et quidem*, the wife of a lord.

Et dies et charta deficerent so imnia vellem percurrere, multa quidem impura et impudica quæ memorare nefas, recitavit. Nor is this youth, it seems, a monster or prodigy in the age he lives: on the contrary, I am told he is an exemplar only of all the rest.

But I now proceed to what must surprise you. After he had spent an hour in rehearsing all the vices to which youth have been ever too much addicted, and shewn us that he was possessed of them all—*Ut qui impudicus, adulter, ganeo, alea, manu, ventre pene, bona patria laceraverat*, he began to enter upon politics:

O proceres censore opus an haruspice nobis!

This stripling, this *bowe*, this rake, discovered likewise all the wickedness peculiar to age, and that he had not, with those vices which proceed from the warmth of youth, one of the virtues which we should naturally expect from the same sanguine disposition. He shewed us, that grey hairs could add nothing but hypocrisy to him; for he avowed public prostitution, laughed at all honour, public spirit and patriotism; and gave convincing proofs that the most phlegmatic old

Digitized by Google

miser upon earth could not be sooner tempted with gold to perpetrate the most horrid iniquities than himself.

Whether this youth be *(quod vix credo)* concerned himself in the public weal, or whether he have his information from others, I hope he greatly exceeded the truth in what he delivered on this subject: For was he to be believed, the conclusion we must draw would be, that the only concern of our great men, even at this time, was for places and pensions: that instead of applying themselves to renovate and restore our sick and drooping commonweal, they were struggling to get closest to her heart, and, like leeches, to suck her last drop of vital blood.

I hope, however, better things, and that this lad deserves a good rod, as well for lying as for all his other iniquity; and if his parents do not take care to have it well laid on, I can assure them they have much to answer for.

Mr. Wilson now found me grow very uneasy, as, indeed, I had been from the beginning, nor could any thing but respect to the company have prevented me from correcting the boy long before: he therefore endeavoured to turn the discourse, and asked our spark when he left London? To which he answered, the Wednesday before. How, Sir, said I, travel on Christmas-day? Was it so, says he, fags! that's more than I knew; but why not travel on Christmas-day as well as any other? Why not, said I, lifting my voice; for I had lost all patience. Was you not brought up in the Christian religion? Did you never learn your catechism? He then burst out into an unmannerly laugh, and so provoked me, that I should certainly have smote him, had I not laid my crabstick down in the window, and had not Mr. Wilson been fortunately placed between us. Odso, Mr. Parson, says he, are you there? I wonder I had not smoked you before. Smoke me! answered I, and

Digitized by Google

at the same time leaped from my chair, my wrath being highly kindled. At which instant a jackanapes, who sat on my left hand, whipt my peruke from my head, which I no sooner perceived than I porrected him a remembrance over the face, which laid him sprawling on the floor. I was afterwards concerned at the blow, though the consequence was only a bloody nose, and the lad, who was a companion of the other's, and had uttered many wicked things, which I pretermitted in my narrative, very well deserved correction.

A bustle now arose, not worth recounting, which ended in my departure with Mr. Wilson, though we had purposed to tarry there that night.

In our way home, we both lamented the peculiar hardiness of this country, which seems bent on its own destruction, nor will take warning by any visitation, till the utmost wrath of divine vengeance overtakes it.

In discoursing upon this subject, we imputed much of the present profligacy to the notorious want of care in parents in the education of youth, who, as my friend informs me, with very little school learning, and not at all instructed *(ne minimè quidem imbuti)* in any principles of religion, virtue, and morality, are brought to the great city, or sent to travel to other great cities abroad, before they are twenty years of age, where they become their own masters, and enervate both their bodies and minds with all sorts of diseases and vices, before they are adult.

I shall conclude with a passage in Aristotle's Politics, lib. viii. cap. 1. Ὅτι μεν ἓν τῳ νομοθέτῃ μαλιστα πραγμαλευτέον περι τὴν των νέων παιδείαν, ἀδεὶς αν ἀμφισβητησειε. καὶ γαρ ἐν ταῖς πολεσιν ἡ γιγνόμενον σῶτο, βλάπτει τας πολιτείας. Which, for the sake of women, and those few gentlemen who do not understand Greek, I have rendered somewhat paraphrastically in the vernacular. 'No man can

Digitized by Google

'doubt but that the education of youth ought to 'be the principal care of every legislator; by the 'neglect of which, great mischief accrues to the 'civil polity in every city.'

I am, while you write like an honest man, and a good christian,

Your hearty friend and well-wisher,

ABRAHAM ADAMS.

N° 23. TUESDAY, APRIL 8, 1746.

—— Insanus paucis videatur eo quod
Maxima pars hominum morbo jactatur eodem.

HOR.

I HAVE heard of a man who believed there was no real existence in the world but himself; and that whatever he saw without him was mere phantom and illusion.

This philosopher, I imagine, hath not had many followers in theory; and yet if we were to derive the principles of mankind from their practice, we should be almost persuaded that somewhat like this madness had possessed not only particular men, but their several orders and professions. For though they do not absolutely deny all existence to other persons and things, yet it is certain they hold them of no consequence, and little worth their consideration, unless they trench somewhat towards their own order or calling.

As an instance of this, let us observe three or four members of any profession met together in a

Digitized by Google

general company, though it be never so large, they make no scruple of engrossing the whole conversation, and turning it to their own profession, without the least consideration of all the other persons present.

Another example of the same temper may be seen in the monopolizing particular words, and confining their meaning to their own purposes, as if the rest of the world had in reality no right to their application. A signal instance of which is in the adjective good. A word which of all others mankind would least wish to be debarred from the use of, or from appropriating to themselves and their friends.

Now, when the divine, the free-thinker, the citizen, the whig, the tory, *&c.* pronounce such an individual to be a good man, it is plain that they have all so many different meanings; and he may be a very good man in the opinion of one in the company, who would be a very bad one in that of all the others.

I remember to have supped last winter at a surgeon's, where were present some others of the faculty. The gentleman of the house declared he had a very good subject above in the garret. As the gentleman who said this was, I knew, himself as good a subject as any in the kingdom, I could not avoid surprise at his chusing to confine such a person in a cold night, in such a place; but I soon found my mistake, and that this good subject had been hanged the day before for a most heinous felony.

An error of the same kind once happened to me amongst some gentlemen of the army, who all agreed that one Mr. Thunderson was the best man in England. I own I was somewhat staggered when I heard he was a corporal of grenadiers; but how much more was I astonished when I found that he had half a dozen wives, and was the wickedest fellow in the whole regiment.

Digitized by Google

I cannot quit this head without remarking that much inconvenience may arise from these mistakes; and one indeed happened in the last mentioned instance; for a grave wealthy widow, of above forty, in the town where the regiment was quartered, having doubtless heard the same character of this man from his officers, and misunderstanding them, as I myself had done before their explanation, fell in love with his goodness, and married him. A third example may be drawn from the attention of the readers of books, or the spectators at plays. I have somewhere heard of a Geographer who received no other pleasure from the Æneid of Virgil, than by tracing out the Voyage of Æneas in the map. To which I may add a certain coachmaker, who having sufficient Latin to read the story of Phäeton in the Metamorphosis, shook his head that so fine a genius for making chariots as Ovid had, was thrown away on making poems.

This selfish attention (if I may so call it) in the spectators at our theatres must be evident to all who have ever frequented them. Every joke on a courtier's not paying his debts, is sure to receive a thundering applause from the pit and galleries. This debt is, however, paid by the boxes, on the first facetious allusion to horns, or any other symbol of cuckoldom. Indeed, the whole house are seldom unanimous in their claps, unless when the ridicule is against the ministry, the law, or the clergy; whence, I suppose, that as government, law, and religion are looked upon as the great grievances of the nation, the whole audience think themselves alike interested in their demolition.

I knew a gentleman, who had great delight in observing the humours of the vulgar, and for that purpose used frequently to mount into the upper gallery. Here, as he told me, he once seated himself between two persons, one of whom he soon discovered to be a broken tailor; and the other, a

Digitized by Google

servant in a country family, just arrived in town. The play was Henry the Eighth, with that august representation of the coronation. The former of these, instead of admiring the great magnificence exhibited in that ceremony, observed with a sigh, 'That he believed very few of these clothes were 'paid for.' And the latter being asked how he liked the play? (being the first he had ever seen) answered, 'It was all very fine; but nothing came 'up, in his opinion, to the ingenuity of snuffing 'the candles.'

I cannot omit the following story, which I think a very strong example of the temper I have above remarked. I remember to have been present at a certain religious assembly of the people called Methodists, where the preacher named the following text: 'It is reported that fornication is among 'you.' The whole congregation, as well as myself, expected, I believe, a wholesome dissertation on all criminal converse between the sexes; and some, who laboured under suspicions of that kind, began to express much apprehension and uneasiness in their countenances; but, to our great surprise, the sermon was entirely confined to the former part of the text, and we were only instructed in the nature and various kinds of reports. This gave me some curiosity to inquire into the character of so extraordinary a preacher, and I found, to my perfect satisfaction, that he had got his living many years by collecting articles of news for one of the public papers.

If we reflect seriously on this disposition of mankind, so universally exerted in private life, it will lead us to account for the behaviour of men and parties in public; and we shall lose much of that surprise, which might otherwise naturally enough affect us, from observing the rigid adherence which men of no dishonest characters preserve to their own party and their own schemes. Hence it is, that men become more the subjects of our con-

Digitized by Google

sideration than measures; and hence it hath sometimes happened, that men (and those not the worst of men neither) have been more intent on advancing their own schemes, than on advancing the good of the public, and would have risked the preservation of the latter, rather than have given up the pursuit of the former. I have said it; I have invented it; I have writ upon it; are as substantial arguments with some politicians, as they are with the doctor in Gil Blas, who had writ on the virtues of hot water, and therefore refused to agree with those who prescribe cold. To say the truth, this partiality to ourselves, our own opinions, and our own party, hath introduced many dangerous evils into commonwealths. It is this humour which keeps up the name of Jacobitism in this kingdom; and it is this humour only, from which his present Majesty or his administration can derive a single enemy within it. The OPPOSITION (if a handful of men, and those for the most part totally insignificant, as well in fortune as abilities, are worthy that name) would, I believe, be puzzled to give any better reason for their conduct than the aforesaid doctor, or than parson Adams hath done for them, who says, that Opposition is derived from the verb *oppono*, and that the English of the verb *oppono* is to oppose.

Digitized by Google

N° 24. TUESDAY, APRIL 15, 1746.

——— *Medici mediam pertundite venam.* JUV.

I HAVE heard it often objected to the friends of the government, when they have expressed their apprehensions of a Jacobite-party in this kingdom, that these fears were counterfeited, in order to form an argument for the support of a standing army, or to excuse some other ministerial schemes; for that, in reality, the very seeds of Jacobitism were destroyed, and rooted out from the minds of every Protestant British subject.

I am not ashamed to own myself to have been one of the many who were imposed on by these suggestions; I am much more concerned to see that this was an imposition, and that experience should at last have convinced every man, that there are still some persons (an inconsiderable party indeed, when compared to the number of loyal subjects), who profess the Protestant religion, while they wish well to the designs of a Popish Pretender.

The principal motive which induced me to hold my former opinion, was the reasonableness of it. I disbelieved the existence of Protestant Jacobitism, from the same principles which inspire me to deny our assent to many of these strange relations which certain voyage-writers recount to us. I looked upon such an animal as a greater monster, than the most romantic of these writers have ever described, and was therefore easily persuaded to credit those who very solemnly assured us, there was no such to be found in the land.

I have hitherto avoided any contest with these sort of gentlemen, not from the contempt of so poor a victory; for I should think my labours well bestowed, in bringing the weakest of them over to

Digitized by Google

the cause of truth; but in plain fact, they are the last persons with whom I would willingly enter the lists of disputation, from absolute despair of success; for what is so difficult to answer as nothing, or what more impossible to be evinced, than the light of the sun to him who hath not eyes to discern it. I have therefore greatly admired the patriotism of those heroes, who have formerly wasted much of their time to prove, that millions were not intended by an all-good Being, for the use and wanton disposition of one man; that a Protestant church was not absolutely secure under the protection of a prince, who looks on himself as bound by his religion, and that on pain of damnation, to destroy it; that a magistrate, attempting to destroy those laws and constitutions which he was sworn and obliged to defend, forfeited that power which he so entirely perverted; with numberless other propositions equally plain and demonstrable, or rather indeed self-evident. So that if the absurdity of their tenets was not of itself sufficiently apparent, and did not glare them in the face, it hath been so irrefragably proved by the labours of those good men, who have undertaken the defence of the revolution, that the Jacobites of this age have no other excuse left, but that of not being able to read.

This is an excuse which I am sensible may be fairly pleaded by many, and those none of the least considerable pillars of the party. There have been, however, some who have not only read, but have endeavoured to answer these writers; and have very modestly attempted to oppose the common sense of mankind, in a point wherein their highest interest is concerned.

As such performances are seldom long-lived, few of them have reached our days; but the following letter, which I look upon as a very curious piece, and which was written in the reign of the late king William, contains, I believe, the sum of all those arguments which have been ever used on

Digitized by Google

the behalf of Jacobitism; I shall, therefore, give it the reader, after having premised, that it was written by a non-juror to his son at Oxford.

'DEAR SON,

'I RECEIVED yours of the 4th past, and am so 'well satisfied with your conduct on the birth-day 'of that old rump rogue with an orange, that I 'have sent you a draft on your tutor, according 'to your desires. As long as my son preserves his 'principles sound, I shall not be angry at any 'frolicks of youth. Provided, therefore, you 'never get drunk but on holidays (as the govern-'ment are pleased to call them), and in toasting 'the damnation of the rump, and confusion to the 'day, &c. you may confess yourself freely, without 'fear of incurring my displeasure. I approve the 'company you keep much. Be sure not to herd 'with the sons of courtiers; for there is no con-'science nor honesty in them; nor will the nation 'ever thrive till the king enjoys his own again; 'a health which I never fail to drink every day of 'my life in a bumper, and I hope you do the like. 'I shall never think I can remind you often 'enough of these matters; for I had rather see 'you hanged for your true king, than enjoying a 'place under this orange rascal, who has undone 'the nation. Our family have always, I thank 'God, been of the same kidney, and I hope will 'remain so to all posterity. It is the true old 'cause, and we will live and die by it, boy. Damn 'the rump; that is my motto. Old England will 'never see any good days, till it is thoroughly 'roasted. Your godfather, Sir John, dined with 'me yesterday: he asked kindly after you. We 'drank nine bottles a-piece of stum, and talked 'over all matters. We scarce uttered a word for 'which the rascally whigs would not have hanged 'us; but I desire no better from fellows who 'would pull down the church, if they had it in

Digitized by Google

'their power. I fear not, however, that it will 'be able to stand in spite of all their malice, and 'that I shall drink church and king as long as I 'live. You know what king I mean. God re-'move him from that side of the water on which 'he now is. Let every man have his own, I say, 'and I am sure that is the sentiment of an honest 'man; and of one who abhors these persecuting 'rascals, who make men pay for their consciences. 'But do thou, my boy, rather submit to their 'power than court their favour; for right is right; 'and though might may overcome it, it can never 'be abolished. If kings derive their power from 'heaven, men can have no just pretence to de-'prive them of it. Orange hath no such right. 'We know he was made by men, and consequently 'his title cannot be deduced from heaven. Your 'tutor informs me, you have been in great appre-'hension for the church at Oxford, and we in the 'country agree it is in danger: But let her enemies 'do what they can, honest hearts will continue to 'drink to her preservation; and while the whigs 'see the unalterable determination of our party, 'they will always be afraid of executing their 'wicked purposes. As to taxes, we must expect 'them, while the government is in such hands, 'and the true king in banishment. A whig jus-'tice of peace at the sessions the other day, had 'the impudence to tell me, they were imposed by 'parliament; but how can that be a parliament 'which wants one part in three of its constituents; 'nay, and that the head. Is not the head su-'perior to the body? And consequently, hath not 'the king a better right to impose taxes, than 'lords and commons without a king? Let right 'take place, say I, and then we will pay without 'grumbling; but to be taxed by a rump, a set of 'whigs and presbyterians, and fellows with an 'orange in their mouths; I will drink confusion 'to them as long as I can stand. However,

Digitized by Google

'I hope soon to see better times, and that we 'may change our healths, and drink to our friends 'openly; for we are assured here by some Roman 'Catholic priests, who are honester fellows than 'whigs, and may be brought over to go to church 'in time, that the French King will do his utmost 'to restore us again to our liberties and properties; 'for which reason we always drink his health and 'success, immediately after church and king, and 'confusion to the rump. I hope you will do the 'same at your club at Oxford; for take it from 'me as I have it from others, that all the hopes 'this nation have of being preserved is from that 'quarter. Indeed, there wants no other reason 'for our drinking him, than that the whigs are his 'enemies; for nothing can ever be good for this 'nation which those rascals wish well to. I am 'sure no one ever suspected me of wishing well to 'the Pope, and yet I would drink his health sooner 'than I would that of a presbyterian. I hope you 'will never converse with any such, but when 'you can't find true church of Englandmen, rather 'chuse papists; for they are less enemies to our 'church; and that they would destroy it must be 'a lie, because the whigs say it: But confusion to 'them; and may the king enjoy his own again, 'will always be the toast of, &c.'

Digitized by Google

THE

JACOBITE'S JOURNAL,

By JOHN TROTT-PLAID, Esq.

N° 15. SATURDAY, March 12, 1748.

To the Writer of the JACOBITE JOURNAL.

SIR,

YOU have here a translation of a Latin Poem, entitled, *De Arte Jacobitica*, in three books. I have sent you the English version of the first book, because I have been told that Jacobites are no scholars, and understand no Latin. If you like this, you may hereafter receive the translation of the second book. Mean time, I remain yours, *&c.*

M. O. A. J.

Horace wrote the Art of Poetry, Ovid the Art of Love, and I write the Art of Jacobitism.—Come, Tisiphone, from hell, bring with thee ill-judging zeal, and obstinate bigotry, and inspire me with all thy furies, while I teach the black art of jacobitism. 'Twas thou that didst instruct the holy Inquisitors, and those miscreants that belied the sacred name of Jesus, to embrue their hands in Christian blood: Nor hast thou been unmindful of the English nation: we too can boast our Lauds, our Sacheverels, our ** ok* *ippen*. [Here several proper names were doubtless in the original, but the rats or moths have devoured them.]

Digitized by Google

First of all, learn the art of lying, and misrepresenting. Fling dirt enough, and some will certainly stick. You may venture to abuse the king himself; but do this with caution, for the sake of your ears and head. But spare not his ministers; give a wrong turn to their most plausible actions. If they prosecute the war with vigour, swear they are neglectful; if they desire a peace, call them cowards; if war, call them blood-thirsty, and seekers after the ruin of their country. 'Twas by such arts as these that the brave Marlborough, and the just Godolphin, fell a victim to the intrigues of Harley and ***. You may add perjury to your lies. Jupiter, 'tis said, laughs at the perjury of lovers; he has many a time forsworn himself to Juno. You have Jupiter for your example: what can a pagan, like yourself, desire more?

The next thing you are to remember, is to feign a love to your country and religion; the less you have of both, the better you can feign both. O liberty! O virtue! O my country! Remember to have such expressions as these constantly in your mouth. Words do wonders with silly people; but don't too openly discover your design of ruining your country by changing the religion of it, and introducing arbitrary power and a Popish king. Don't be caught in your own trap. Remember the end of Perillus, who was burnt in his own bull; and you may be ruined yourself before your bring about the ruin of your country. Keep therefore to general terms, and never descend to particulars. You may wish things went better. —You can't tell, but surely 'twas better in good Queen Anna's days—or in the bacchanalian times of Charles—or, in the holy martyr's reign. At the mentioning the martyr, you may drop a tear; and if you are sure of your silly company, you may swear the present ministry cut off his head. Anachronism in politics is no more faulty than ana-

Digitized by Google

chronism in poetry. If you are among good and orthodox churchmen, you may swear the church of England is in danger under a church of England king, and cannot be secure unless the Popish Pretender is restored. Paradoxes in conversation are to be supported with confidence and sophistry. Remember likewise, that you frequently inculcate the divine right of kings to do wrong; and that they are accountable to God only for being devils upon earth.

Various people are to be taken by various methods; and a wise Proteus will turn himself into all shapes. This Proteus, the Fables say, was an Egyptian conjuror, and transformed himself into what monstrous appearance he pleased; he roared a lion, he grinned a wolf, he flashed a fire, he flowed a river. This Proteus be thou; roar, grin, flash, and flow. Spread thy nets, and catch the various fry with various baits. Consider a little the dispositions of mankind; the young are open and honest, the old are cautious and wary. Old birds are not to be caught with chaff; and an old hare will be sure to double.

But you will ask, perhaps, where the proper persons are to be found, to make proselytes of to jacobitism? This is an inquiry worthy a sportsman; for he is a bad huntsman who would beat about the Royal Exchange for a hare or a fox; and not a much better gunner or fisherman, who goes a shooting in Somerset-Gardens, or attempts to angle in the magnificent bason there. As those all know the places where their game resort, so must you. You have no occasion to go with parson Whitefield to Georgia after a young jacobite; but you may go with parson Whitefield to Kennington-Common or Bagshot-Heath, or Hounslow, in quest of one; for want has made many a man a jacobite, revenge more, and ignorance thousands. Want and penury bid you hope for change. Revenge works stronger in the human heart than even

Digitized by Google

penury. Who can bear to see a rival prevail? Hence the affected patriotism of *** and ** and *. [Here likewise are many proper names lost, never to be retrieved but by conjecture.] Ignorance is the mother of jacobitism. Hence the rural sportsmen and fox-hunters will fall an easy prey; and the country will afford sufficient plenty of younger brothers, whose eyes their good mothers have kept betimes from poring on Greek and Latin authors; those Greek and Latin authors which have been the bane of the jacobite cause, and inspired men with the love of Athenian liberty and old Rome, and taught them to hate tyrants and arbitrary governments. London too has all sorts of game for the net. Whores and rogues abound there; many are ruined, and most in a fair way of being so. How many disappointed out-of-place poor rogues do we every day meet? And what universal ignorance, attended with complicated impudence? In short, the variety is so great, that it will even distract your choice.

But above all, in times of public calamities, then remember your lesson; say, God himself is turned our enemy. And if by chance our monarch should meditate new triumphs, and resolve on the punishment of France; then, when William, the avenger, is abroad, do thou raise commotions and tumults at home: Whilst he, all gold, shines in the Gallic plains, carrying in his hand his father's thunder; do thou, all lies, walk the dirty streets of London; and remember, I repeat it again, fling dirt enough; blacken, lie, and defame. Perhaps some Jack Cade may arise in the glorious cause of jacobitism, and shake the throne itself; while swarms of locusts and caterpillars come from the north, and devour the fruits of England.

Part of our undertaking still remains, and part is finished; here then, let us cast anchor, and moor the ship.

Digitized by Google

N° 34. SATURDAY, JULY 23, 1748.

——Talem se læta ferebat
Per medios, instans operi, regnisque futuris.

VIRG.

To the Author of the JACOBITE JOURNAL.

SIR,

THE serious truths contained in this letter, will, I hope, make an apology unnecessary. You are to know, that I am of that high order of beings, which the world calls a married man; that to render my state of life happy, as well as honourable, I have, in every thing, submitted to the will of my wife; and this, I can truly say, not more from a conviction of the great duty of obedience, than to avoid contention, and to promote family-peace and good-humour in my house. It is now eleven years since the kindest and the loveliest of her sex honoured me with the possession of her sweetness: In all which time, till within a little more than a twelvemonth, she has condescended to make my servitude my delight, abridging me only where my wishes were strongest, and consequently leading to excess; and indulging me in every thing indifferent in my own opinion, or desirable in hers. This uniformity of conduct had rendered us the admiration and envy of all our acquaintance; there was hardly a married woman who visited us, but proposed me as an example to her husband, and treasured up the maxims of my wife, as so many lessons for her own conduct. We were, in short, a couple who left not happiness to chance; one planned what the other executed, and both enjoyed the fruits of our care. Alas! Mr. Trott-Plaid, I wish the business of this letter was only to tell you of my happiness; but that (how-

Digitized by Google

ever well secured as you may think) has known its period, and I am at present the most miserable of all beings. It is now about a year since a grave clergyman from Oxford came to board with us. To this gentleman (though no seducer of what my wife calls her virtue) I owe all my misfortunes. He had not been a month in the family, before I observed that my wife's head had taken a political turn; the affairs of her family began to be neglected; and notwithstanding we owed our entire support to a genteel post I enjoyed under the government, I was compelled every day at table to hear that government abused. At every glass after dinner, a laugh and a whispered toast between my wife and her friend, gave me fresh cause of uneasiness. My eldest boy made his appearance in a plaid waistcoat, and my girl's petticoat and doll were of the same stuff. I was pleased indeed, at first, to hear the child checked by her mamma, for drinking the king over the water; but was as much displeased at the reason of that check, which was, that James was a plain name, and would save the trouble of such unnecessary distinctions.

Upon this occasion it was, that I took upon me, for the first time, to make a remonstrance in private to my wife; which though I did with all the submission of a husband, I found to my cost, that I had done wrong. Instead of the compliance I in some measure expected, I was upbraided by her as a mean-spirited wretch; one who was willing to subsist by shame, and to acknowledge favours from a set of men whose friendship was a disgrace to me; and that if I expected the continuance of her regard, I must think of some other means of supporting my family, than by an infamous place, given me by those, who derived their power of bestowing it from one who wanted right to confer that power. You will judge of my concern, M. Trott-Plaid, at these words.—I was sorry to differ

Digitized by Google

in opinion from my wife, and yet was almost apt to imagine that opinion a little unreasonable. To think of giving up my post was an impracticable thing, and to live under the displeasure of my wife, an impossible one. I entreated her to proceed with the utmost caution in this affair; and, telling her I would ask her friend's advice in it, I left her to consult him.

I had the pleasure of finding this honest clergyman of a contrary opinion. He saw no objection, he said, to my holding a place under the worst of governments, provided I endeavoured, as much as in me lay, to act in opposition to those who had obliged me. That neither religion nor conscience required me to refuse favours from the hands of those whom it was my duty to detest. That an opposition of this kind was the more meritorious, as it was the more disinterested; and the hazard of property would be the best proof I could give of the sincerity of my zeal. That all men were under an obligation to provide for their families in the best manner they were able; but though necessity compelled me to eat the bread of shame, yet conscience forbad me to live a life of it. It was no sin he said in war, to plunder the enemy that we have first killed: and, by a similitude of reasoning, he conceived it was as innocent to plunder the friend we intended afterwards to kill. That measures, more than men, wanted a change; and that power was the surest means to ruin those who raised us to it. That for his own part, he had hopes of preferment himself from the government, which he intended to accept of without scruple, as it might furnish him with the means of doing good, and of keeping weaker men from power, whose mistaken gratitude for obligations might tempt them to make unsuitable returns. For these reasons, he said, he begged leave to differ from the good lady of the house, and advised me to

Digitized by Google

continue in my post, as it served me in a double capacity, both for private support and national advantage.

I cannot conceal the satisfaction of my mind at the reasoning of this worthy gentleman. I submitted entirely to his opinion; my wife, who is the best of women, was easily brought over by her friend, and domestic harmony was again restored. The groans of our bleeding country indeed were too often in our ears, and somewhat disturbed the tranquillity of our minds; but the hope that every one would have his own at last, set all things right, and we lived in expectation of the happy change.

It was about this time that my wife, who had very much improved her spelling under the tuition of her friend, commenced writer in the cause. A pamphlet, called, The State of the Nation, and Three Letters to the Whigs, are the product of her invention. In these she so well succeeded, that many were of opinion they wanted nothing but truth to be finished performances. Indeed that noble and free spirit of scandal, which is the characteristic of those pamphlets, is sufficient evidence that their author could be no other than a woman.

We had the pleasure, soon after this, to learn from the clergyman, that a friend of his in the administration had presented him to a considerable benefice in the country. The good man received our congratulations upon the occasion with tears; and taking a most affectionate leave, he retired to his living. The satisfaction we received in our friend's promotion would hardly have made us amends for the pains of parting with him, if an unfortunate accident, and some information that followed it, had not opened our eyes to see that worthy gentleman in his proper character.

My wife was busied in her political studies one day, with her Bailey's dictionary before her, when

Digitized by Google

I received a message from above, that my employment was taken from me—I inquired into the meaning of such procedure, and I was answered, that I was an infamous, ungrateful fellow; one that deserved hanging; and if I did not mend my manners and my wife, the government might possibly take a severer notice of me. With these words the messenger left me; and I retired to my wife's apartment for comfort and advice. That heroic woman, instead of calling my dissimulation a misfortune, gloried in the occasion.—It was now, she said, she would apply to the people for that emolument the enemies of their country had dispossessed me of. That she had long been solicited by the proprietors of certain newspapers to lend her abilities. That she had desired time to consider of their proposals, but was now determined; that she had indeed, for some weeks past, administered helps to Old England, and the London Evening Post, and had occasionally furnished a few papers upon naval affairs in the Fool; but that the writers of those papers were so incorrigibly dull, that her bare intervention was of little use; she therefore declared, as the ministry had provoked her to plan their utter ruin, she would hesitate no longer to undertake the sole direction of them. That the advantages arising from such papers would treble those of the post I had lost; and that I ought to look upon myself as the happiest of men, in having a head to my family, who knew how to secure the emoluments of a husband by the very means that must save her dearer country from destruction.

My heart was overflowing with comfort at these assurances, when the visit of a friend interrupted the discourse.—He condoled with me in the kindest manner for the loss of my place; but, how, Mr. Trott-Plaid shall I express my astonishment, when he assured me, upon his own knowledge, that my friend the clergyman, that friend I so

Digitized by Google

dearly loved, was the person to whom I was indebted for this obligation! He told me, that the business of this viper, during the time of his stay with us, was to pay his court to the administration, in which he so well succeeded, as to obtain a promise of preferment. That to perfect this promise, and to remove any suspicions they might possibly entertain of his principles, he had made a voluntary sacrifice of my wife and me; concluding, that I was an avowed jacobite, and my wife the writer of every scurrilous pamphlet that had infested the public. I own to you, Mr. Trott-Plaid, upon this discovery I began to be ashamed of the part I had acted.—It occurred to me that the principles of this man might possibly be as false as his friendship; but my wife conceived a different opinion.—Bad practices, she said, were no proof of bad principles; her's she knew were right; and however ill her friend might have treated her, his name and memory deserved respect, as by his means she was become a pillar of support to a falling nation.

I will not tire you, Mr. Trott-Plaid, with my wife's arguments, or my own submissions.—The newspapers abovementioned have been ever since under her direction; but, whether from a want of taste in the public, or from a knowledge that they are the writings of a woman, the proposed advantages have fallen short, even of common subsistence.—It is impossible to represent to you the distresses we have struggled with; but, what is the worst of all, I have the concern to see my children taught treason as soon as they can speak; and my little boy, just eight years old, the hopes of my family, is turned poet, and writes the varses, as he calls them, in the London Evening Post; he has just sent some lines on the eclipse * to the

* Note, these were printed in the London Evening Post of Saturday last, and are well enough for such a child.

Digitized by Google

press. Dear Sir, advise me what to do; for though my wife hates you, and has often abused you in print, I am,

Your affectionate friend,

and most humble servant,

SIMON SUPPLE.

Digitized by Google

AMELIA.

Felices ter & amplius,
Quos irrupta tenet copula.

Γυναικὸς ἐδὲν χρῆμ' ἀνὴρ λπίζεται
Ἐσθλῆς ἄμεινον, ἐδὲ ῥίγιον κακῆς.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

TO

RALPH ALLEN, Esq.

SIR,

THE following book is sincerely designed to promote the cause of virtue, and to expose some of the most glaring evils, as well public as private, which at present infest the country; though there is scarce, as I remember, a single stroke of satire aimed at any one person throughout the whole.

The best man is the properest patron of such an attempt. This, I believe, will be readily granted; nor will the public voice, I think, be more divided to whom they shall give that appellation. Should a letter, indeed, be thus inscribed, DETUR OPTIMO, there are few persons who would think it wanted any other direction.

Digitized by Google

I will not trouble you with a preface concerning the work; nor endeavour to obviate any criticisms which can be made on it. The good-natured reader, if his heart should be here affected, will be inclined to pardon many faults for the pleasure he will receive from a tender sensation; and for readers of a different stamp, the more faults they can discover, the more, I am convinced, they will be pleased.

Nor will I assume the fulsome style of common dedicators. I have not their usual design in this epistle; nor will I borrow their language. Long, very long may it be, before a most dreadful circumstance shall make it possible for any pen to draw a just and true character of yourself, without incurring a suspicion of flattery in the bosoms of the malignant. This task, therefore, I shall defer till that day (if I should be so unfortunate as ever to see it), when every good man shall pay a tear for the satisfaction of his curiosity; a day which, at

Digitized by Google

present, I believe, there is but one good man in the world who can think of it with unconcern.

Accept then, Sir, this small token of that love, that gratitude, and that respect, with which I shall always esteem it my GREATEST HONOUR to be,

SIR,

Your most obliged

And most obedient

Humble Servant,

Bow-Street,
Dec. 2, 1751.

HENRY FIELDING.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS.

BOOK I.

Containing the History of Amelia.

CHAP. I.

Page

THE Exordium, &c. 155

CHAP. II. *The History sets out. Observations on the Excellency of the English Constitution, and curious Examinations before a Justice of Peace* 157

CHAP. III. *Containing the Inside of a Prison* 164

CHAP. IV. *Disclosing further Secrets of the Prison-House* 169

CHAP. V. *Containing certain Adventures which befel Mr. Booth in the Prison* . . . 175

Digitized by Google

Page

CHAP. VI. *Containing the extraordinary Behaviour of Miss Matthews on her meeting with Booth, and some Endeavours to prove, by Reason and Authority, that it is possible for a Woman to appear to be what she really is not* 180

CHAP. VII. *In which Miss Matthews begins her History* 185

CHAP. VIII. *The History of Miss Matthews continued* 191

CHAP. IX. *In which Miss Matthews concludes her Relation* 196

CHAP. X. *Table-talk, consisting of a facetious Discourse that passed in the Prison* . 204

BOOK. II.

CHAP. I. *In which Captain Booth begins to relate his History* 211

CHAP. II. *Mr. Booth continues his Story. In this Chapter there are some Passages that may serve as a kind of Touchstone, by which a young Lady may examine the Heart of her Lover. I would advise, therefore, that every Lover be obliged to read it over in the Presence of his Mistress, and that she carefully watch his Emotions while he is reading* 216

Digitized by Google

Page

CHAP. III. *The Narrative continued. More of the Touchstone* 221

CHAP. IV. *The Story of Mr. Booth continued. In this Chapter the Reader will perceive a Glimpse of the Character of a very good Divine; with some Matters of a very tender Kind* 226

CHAP. V. *Containing strange Revolutions of Fortune* 229

CHAP. VI. *Containing many surprising Adventures* 233

CHAP. VII. *The Story of Booth continued. More surprising Adventures* 240

CHAP. VIII. *In which our Readers will probably be divided in their Opinion of Mr. Booth's Conduct* 245

CHAP. IX. *Containing a Scene of a different Kind from any of the preceding* 250

BOOK III.

CHAP. I. *In which Mr. Booth resumes his Story* 257

CHAP. II. *Containing a Scene of the tender Kind* 259

CHAP. III. *In which Mr. Booth sets forward on his Journey* 266

Digitized by Google

Page
CHAP. IV. *A Sea-Piece* 270
CHAP. V. *The Arrival of Booth at Gibraltar, with what there befel him* 276
CHAP. VI. *Containing Matters which will please some Readers* 280
CHAP. VII. *The Captain, continuing his Story, recounts some Particulars which, we doubt not, to many good People, will appear unnatural* 284
CHAP. VIII. *The Story of Booth continued* 291
CHAP. IX. *Containing very extraordinary Matters* 300
CHAP. X. *Containing a Letter of a very curious Kind* 306
CHAP. XI. *In which Mr. Booth relates his Return to England* 312
CHAP. XII. *In which Mr. Booth concludes his Story* 317

Digitized by Google

BOOK IV.

Page

CHAP. I. *Containing very mysterious Matter* 327

CHAP. II. *The latter Part of which we expect will please our Reader better than the former* 331

CHAP. III. *Containing wise Observations of the Author, and other Matters* 340

CHAP. IV. *In which Amelia appears in no unamiable Light* 348

CHAP. V. *Containing an Eulogium upon Innocence, and other grave Matters* 352

CHAP. VI. *In which may appear, that Violence is sometimes done to the Name of Love* 360

CHAP. VII. *Containing a very extraordinary and pleasing Incident* 366

CHAP. VIII. *Containing various Matters*. 371

CHAP. IX. *In which Amelia, with her Friend, goes to the Oratorio* 376

BOOK V.

CHAP. I. *In which the Reader will meet with an old Acquaintance* 384

CHAP. II. *In which Booth pays a Visit to the noble Lord* 387

Digitized by Google

Page

CHAP. III. *Relating principally to the Affairs of Sergeant Atkinson* 392

CHAP. IV. *Containing Matters that require no Preface* 397

CHAP. V. *Containing much heroic Matter* 404

CHAP. VI. *In which the Reader will find Matter worthy his Consideration* 408

CHAP. VII. *Containing various Matters* . 415

CHAP. VIII. *The heroic Behaviour of Colonel Bath* 421

CHAP. IX. *Being the last Chapter of the Fifth Book* 427

BOOK VI.

CHAP. I. *Panegyrics on Beauty, with other grave Matters* 432

CHAP. II. *Which will not appear, we presume, unnatural to all married Readers* . 438

CHAP. III. *In which the History looks a little backwards* 442

CHAP. IV. *Containing a very extraordinary Incident* 449

CHAP. V. *Containing some Matters not very unnatural* 455

Digitized by Google

Page

CHAP. VI. *A Scene, in which some Ladies will possibly think Amelia's Conduct exceptionable* 460

CHAP. VII. *A Chapter in which there is much Learning.* 466

CHAP. VIII. *Containing some unaccountable Behaviour in Mrs. Ellison* 470

CHAP. IX. *Containing a very strange Incident* 474

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

AMELIA,

BOOK I.

CHAP. I.

Contains the Exordium, &c.

THE various accidents which befel a very worthy couple, after their uniting in the state of matrimony, will be the subject of the following history. The distresses which they waded through, were some of them so exquisite, and the incidents which produced these so extraordinary, that they seemed to require not only the utmost malice, but the utmost invention which superstition hath ever attributed to Fortune; though whether any such being interfered in the case, or, indeed, whether there be any such being in the universe, is a matter which I by no means presume to determine in the affirmative. To speak a bold truth, I am, after much mature deliberation, inclined to suspect, that the public voice hath, in all ages, done much injustice to Fortune, and hath convicted her of many facts in which she had not the least concern. I question much, whether we may not, by natural means, account for the success of knaves, the calamities of fools, with all the miseries in which men of sense sometimes involve themselves, by quitting the directions of Prudence, and following the blind guidance of a predominant passion; in short,

Digitized by Google

for all the ordinary phenomena which are imputed to fortune; whom, perhaps, men accuse with no less absurdity in life, than a bad player complains of ill luck at the game of chess.

But if men are sometimes guilty of laying improper blame on this imaginary being, they are altogether as apt to make her amends, by ascribing to her honours which she as little deserves. To retrieve the ill consequences of a foolish conduct, and by struggling manfully with distress to subdue it, is one of the noblest efforts of wisdom and virtue. Whoever, therefore, calls such a man fortunate, is guilty of no less impropriety in speech, than he would be, who should call the statuary or the poet fortunate, who carved a Venus, or who writ an Iliad.

Life may as properly be called an art as any other; and the great incidents in it are no more to be considered as mere accidents, than the several members of a fine statue, or a noble poem. The critics in all these are not content with seeing any thing to be great, without knowing why and how it came to be so. By examining carefully the several gradations which conduce to bring every model to perfection, we learn truly to know that science in which the model is formed: As histories of this kind, therefore, may properly be called models of HUMAN LIFE; so by observing minutely the several incidents which tend to the catastrophe or completion of the whole, and the minute causes whence those incidents are produced, we shall best be instructed in this most useful of all arts, which I call the ART OF LIFE.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. II.

The History sets out. Observations on the Excellency of the English Constitution, and curious Examinations before a Justice of Peace.

ON the first of April, in the year ——, the watchmen of a certain parish (I know not particularly which), within the liberty of Westminster, brought several persons whom they had apprehended the preceding night, before Jonathan Thrasher, Esq. one of the justices of the peace for that liberty.

But here, reader, before we proceed to the trials of these offenders, we shall, after our usual manner, premise some things which it may be necessary for thee to know.

It hath been observed, I think, by many, as well as the celebrated writer of three letters, that no human institution is capable of consummate perfection. An observation which, perhaps, that writer at least gathered from discovering some defects in the polity even of this well-regulated nation. And, indeed, if there should be any such defect in a constitution which my lord Coke, long ago told us, 'the wisdom of all the wise men in the 'world, if they had all met together at one time, 'could not have equalled,' which some of our wisest men who were met together long before, said, was too good to be altered in any particular; and which, nevertheless, hath been mending ever since, by a very great number of the said wise men: if, I say, this constitution should be imperfect, we may be allowed, I think, to doubt whether any such faultless model can be found among the institutions of men.

It will probably be objected, that the small imperfections which I am about to produce, do not

Digitized by Google

lie in the laws themselves, but in the ill execution of them; but, with submission, this appears to me to be no less an absurdity, than to say of any machine that it is excellently made, though incapable of performing its functions. Good laws should execute themselves in a well-regulated state; at least, if the same legislature which provides the laws, doth not provide for the execution of them, they act as Graham would do, if he should form all the parts of a clock in the most exquisite manner, yet put them so together that the clock could not go. In this case, surely we might say that there was a small defect in the constitution of the clock.

To say the truth, Graham would soon see the fault, and would easily remedy it. The fault, indeed could be no other than the parts were improperly disposed.

Perhaps, reader, I have another illustration, which will set my intention in still a clearer light before you. Figure to yourself then a family, the master of which should dispose of the several economical offices in the following manner; viz. should put his butler on the coach-box, his steward behind his coach, his coachman in the butlery, and his footman in the stewardship, and in the same ridiculous manner should misemploy the talents of every other servant; it is easy to see what a figure such a family must make in the world.

As ridiculous as this may seem, I have often considered some of the lower officers in our civil government to be disposed in this very manner. To begin, I think, as low as I well can, with the watchmen in our metropolis; who being to guard our streets by night from thieves and robbers, an office which at least requires strength of body, are chosen out of those poor old decrepit people, who are, from their want of bodily strength, rendered incapable of getting a livelihood by work. These men armed only with a pole, which some of them

Digitized by Google

are scarce able to lift, are to secure the persons and houses of his majesty's subjects from the attacks of gangs of young, bold, stout, desperate, and well-armed villains.

Quæ non viribus istis
Munera conveniunt.

If the poor old fellows should run away from such enemies, no one I think can wonder, unless it be that they were able to make their escape.

The higher we proceed among our public officers and magistrates, the less defects of this kind will, perhaps, be observable. Mr. Thrasher, however, the justice before whom the prisoners above-mentioned were now brought, had some few imperfections in his magistratical capacity. I own, I have been sometimes inclined to think, that this office of a justice of peace requires some knowledge of the law: for this simple reason; because in every case which comes before him, he is to judge and act according to law. Again, as these laws are contained in a great variety of books; the statutes which relate to the office of a justice of peace, making of themselves at least two large volumes in folio; and that part of his jurisdiction which is founded on the common law being dispersed in above a hundred volumes, I cannot conceive how this knowledge should be acquired without reading; and yet certain it is, Mr. Thrasher never read one syllable of the matter.

This, perhaps, was a defect; but this was not all: for where mere ignorance is to decide a point between two litigants, it will always be an even chance whether it decides right or wrong: but sorry am I to say, right was often in a much worse situation than this, and wrong hath often had five hundred to one on his side before that magistrate; who, if he was ignorant of the laws of England, was yet well versed in the laws of nature. He perfectly

Digitized by Google

well understood that fundamental principle so strongly laid down in the institutes of the learned Rochefoucault; by which the duty of self-love is so strongly enforced, and every man is taught to consider himself as the centre of gravity, and to attract all things thither. To speak the truth plainly, the justice was never indifferent in a cause, but when he could get nothing on either side.

Such was the justice, to whose tremendous bar Mr. Gotobed the constable, on the day above-mentioned, brought several delinquents, who, as we have said, had been apprehended by the watch for divers outrages.

The first who came upon this trial, was as bloody a spectre as ever the imagination of a murderer or a tragic poet conceived. This poor wretch was charged with a battery by a much stouter man than himself; indeed the accused person bore about him some evidence that he had been in an affray, his clothes being very bloody, but certain open sluices on his own head sufficiently shewed whence all the scarlet stream had issued; whereas the accuser had not the least mark or appearance of any wound. The justice asked the defendant, What he meant by breaking the king's peace?——To which he answered——'Upon my shoul I do love the king very 'well, and I have not been after breaking any thing 'of his that I do know; but upon my shoul this man 'hath brake my head, and my head did brake his 'stick; that is all, gra.' He then offered to produce several witnesses against this improbable accusation; but the justice presently interrupted him, saying, 'Sirrah, your tongue betrays your guilt. 'You are an Irishman, and that is always sufficient 'evidence with me.'

The second criminal was a poor woman, who was taken up by the watch as a street-walker. It was alleged against her, that she was found walking the streets after twelve o'clock, and the watchman declared he believed her to be a common strumpet.

Digitized by Google

She pleaded in her defence (as was really the truth) that she was a servant, and was sent by her mistress, who was a little shopkeeper, and upon the point of delivery, to fetch a midwife; which she offered to prove by several of the neighbours, if she was allowed to send for them. The justice asked her, Why she had not done it before? to which she answered, She had no money, and could get no messenger. The justice then called her several scurrilous names; and declaring she was guilty within the statute of street-walking, ordered her to Bridewell for a month.

A genteel young man and woman were then set forward, and a very grave looking person swore he caught them in a situation which we cannot as particularly describe here, as he did before the magistrate: who, having received a wink from his clerk, declared with much warmth, that the fact was incredible and impossible. He presently discharged the accused parties, and was going, without any evidence, to commit the accuser for perjury; but this the clerk dissuaded him from, saying, he doubted whether a justice of peace had any such power. The justice at first differed in opinion; and said, 'He had seen a man stand in the pillory about 'perjury; nay, he had known a man in gaol for it 'too; and how came he there, if he was not committed thither?' 'Why that is true, Sir,' answered the clerk; 'and yet I have been told by a very 'great lawyer, that a man cannot be committed 'for perjury before he is indicted; and the reason 'is, I believe, because it is not against the peace 'before the indictment makes it so.' 'Why that 'may be,' cries the justice, 'and indeed perjury is 'but scandalous words, and I know a man cannot 'have a warrant for those, unless you put for 'rioting * them into the warrant.'

* *Opus est interprete.* By the laws of England abusive words are not punishable by the magistrate; some commissioners of the

Digitized by Google

'The witness was now about to be discharged, when the lady whom he had accused, declared she would swear the peace against him; for that he had called her a whore several times. 'Oho! you will 'sware the peace, madam, will you?' cries the justice, 'Give her the peace, presently; and pray, 'Mr. Constable, secure the prisoner, now we have 'him, while a warrant is made to take him up.' All which was immediately performed, and the poor witness, for want of sureties, was sent to prison.

A young fellow, whose name was Booth, was now charged with beating the watchman, in the execution of his office, and breaking his lanthorn. This was deposed by two witnesses; and the shattered remains of a broken lanthorn, which had been long preserved for the sake of its testimony, were produced to corroborate the evidence. The justice, perceiving the criminal to be but shabbily drest, was going to commit him without asking any further questions. At length, however, at the earnest request of the accused, the worthy magistrate submitted to hear his defence. The young man then alleged, as was in reality the case, 'That as 'he was walking home to his lodging, he saw two 'men in the street cruelly beating a third, upon 'which he had stopt and endeavoured to assist the 'person who was so unequally attacked; that the 'watch came up during the affray, and took them 'all four into custody; that they were immediately 'carried to the roundhouse, where the two origi-'nal assailants, who appeared to be men of fortune,

peace therefore, when one scold hath applied to them for a warrant against another, from a too eager desire of doing justice, have construed a little harmless scolding into a riot, which is in law an outrageous breach of the peace committed by several persons, by three at the least, nor can a less number be convicted of it. Under this word rioting, or riotting (for I have seen it spelt both ways,) many thousands of old women have been arrested and put to expense, sometimes in prison, for a little intemperate use of their tongues. This practice began to decrease in the year 1749.

Digitized by Google

'found means to make up the matter, and were 'discharged by the constable; a favour which he 'himself, having no money in his pocket, was un- 'able to obtain. He utterly denied having assault- 'ed any of the watchmen, and solemnly declared, 'that he was offered his liberty at the price of 'half a crown.'

Though the bare word of an offender can never be taken against the oath of his accuser; yet the matter of this defence was so pertinent, and delivered with such an air of truth and sincerity, that had the magistrate been endued with much sagacity, or had he been very moderately gifted with another quality very necessary to all who are to administer justice, he would have employed some labour in cross-examining the watchmen; at least he would have given the defendant the time he desired to send for the other persons who were present at the affray; neither of which he did. In short, the magistrate had too great an honour for Truth to suspect that she ever appeared in sordid apparel; nor did he ever sully his sublime notions of that virtue, by uniting them with the mean ideas of poverty and distress.

There remained now only one prisoner, and that was the poor man himself in whose defence the last mentioned culprit was engaged. His trial took but a very short time. A cause of battery and broken lanthorn was instituted against him, and proved in the same manner; nor would the justice hear one word in defence: but though his patience was exhausted, his breath was not; for against this last wretch he poured forth a great many vollies of menaces and abuse.

The delinquents were then all dispatched to prison, under a guard of watchmen; and the justice and the constable adjourned to a neighbouring alehouse to take their morning repast.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. III.

Containing the Inside of a Prison.

MR. BOOTH (for we shall not trouble you with the rest) was no sooner arrived in the prison, than a number of persons gathered round him, all demanding garnish; to which Mr. Booth not making a ready answer, as indeed he did not understand the word, some were going to lay hold of him, when a person of apparent dignity came up and insisted that no one should affront the gentleman. This person then, who was no less than the master or keeper of the prison, turning towards Mr. Booth, acquainted him, that it was the custom of the place for every prisoner upon his first arrival there, to give something to the former prisoners to make them drink. This, he said, was what they called garnish; and concluded with advising his new customer to draw his purse upon the present occasion. Mr. Booth answered, That he would very readily comply with this laudable custom, was it in his power; but that in reality he had not a shilling in his pocket, and, what was worse, he had not a shilling in the world. — 'Oho! if that be the case,' cries the keeper, 'it is another matter, and I have 'nothing to say.' Upon which he immediately departed, and left poor Booth to the mercy of his companions, who, without loss of time, applied themselves to uncasing, as they termed it, and with such dexterity, that his coat was not only stript off, but out of sight in a minute.

Mr. Booth was too weak to resist, and too wise to complain of this usage. As soon, therefore, as he was at liberty, and declared free of the place, he summoned his philosophy, of which he had no inconsiderable share, to his assistance, and resolved

Digitized by Google

to make himself as easy as possible under his present circumstances.

Could his own thoughts indeed have suffered him a moment to forget where he was, the dispositions of the other prisoners might have induced him to believe that he had been in a happier place: for much the greater part of his fellow-sufferers, instead of wailing and repining at their conditions, were laughing, singing, and diverting themselves with various kinds of sports and gambols.

The first person who accosted him was called Blear-eyed Moll, a woman of no very comely appearance. Her eye (for she had but one) whence she derived her nickname, was such as that nickname bespoke; besides which, it had two remarkable qualities; for first, as if nature had been careful to provide for her own defect, it constantly looked towards her blind side; and secondly, the ball consisted almost entirely of white, or rather yellow, with a little grey spot in the corner, so small that it was scarce discernible. Nose she had none; for Venus, envious perhaps at her former charms, had carried off the gristly part; and some earthly damsel, perhaps, from the same envy, had levelled the bone with the rest of her face: indeed it was far beneath the bones of her cheeks, which rose proportionally higher than is usual. About half a dozen ebony teeth fortified that large and long canal which nature had cut from ear to ear, at the bottom of which was a chin preposterously short, nature having turned up the bottom, instead of suffering it to grow to its due length.

Her body was well adapted to her face; she measured full as much round the middle as from head to foot; for besides the extreme breadth of her back, her vast breasts had long since forsaken their native home, and had settled themselves a little below the girdle.

I wish certain actresses on the stage, when they

Digitized by Google

are to perform characters of no amiable cast, would study to dress themselves with the propriety with which Blear-eyed Moll was now arrayed. For the sake of our squeamish reader, we shall not descend to particulars; let it suffice to say, nothing more ragged or more dirty was ever emptied out of the roundhouse at St. Giles's.

We have taken the more pains to describe this person, for two remarkable reasons; the one is, that this unlovely creature was taken in the fact with a very pretty young fellow; the other, which is more productive of moral lesson, is, that however wretched her fortune may appear to the reader, she was one of the merriest persons in the whole prison.

Blear-eyed Moll then came up to Mr. Booth with a smile, or rather grin on her countenance, and asked him for a dram of gin; and when Booth assured her that he had not a penny of money, she replied, —D——n your eyes, I thought by 'your look you had been a clever fellow, and 'upon the snaffling lay* at least; but d——n 'your body and eyes, I find you are some sneak-'ing budge† rascal.' She then launched forth a volley of dreadful oaths, interlarded with some language not proper to be repeated here, and was going to lay hold on poor Booth, when a tall prisoner, who had been very earnestly eyeing Booth for some time, came up, and taking her by the shoulder, flung her off at some distance, cursing her for a b—h, and bidding her let the gentleman alone.

This person was not himself of the most inviting aspect. He was long visaged, and pale, with a red beard of above a fortnight's growth. He was attired in a brownish black coat, which would have shewed more holes than it did, had not the linen,

* A cant term for robbery on the highway.
† Another cant term for pilfering.

Digitized by Google

which appeared through it, been entirely of the same colour with the cloth.

This gentleman, whose name was Robinson, addressed himself very civilly to Mr. Booth, and told him he was sorry to see one of his appearance in that place: 'For as to your being without your 'coat, Sir,' says he, 'I can easily account for that; 'and, indeed, dress is the least part which distin-'guishes a gentleman.' At which words he cast a significant look on his own coat, as if he desired they should be applied to himself. He then proceeded in the following manner:

'I perceive, Sir, you are but just arrived in this 'dismal place, which is, indeed, rendered more 'detestable by the wretches who inhabit it, than 'by any other circumstance; but even these a wise 'man will soon bring himself to bear with indif-'ference: for what is, is; and what must be, must 'be. The knowledge of this, which, simple as it 'appears, is in truth the height of all philosophy, 'renders a wise man superior to every evil which 'can befal him. I hope, Sir, no very dreadful ac-'cident is the cause of your coming hither; but 'whatever it was, you may be assured it could 'not be otherwise: for all things happen by an 'inevitable fatality; and a man can no more resist 'the impulse of fate, than a wheelbarrow can the 'force of its driver.'

Besides the obligation which Mr. Robinson had conferred on Mr. Booth, in delivering him from the insults of Blear-eyed Moll, there was something in the manner of Robinson, which, notwithstanding the meanness of his dress, seemed to distinguish him from the crowd of wretches who swarmed in those regions; and above all, the sentiments which he had just declared, very nearly coincided with those of Mr. Booth: this gentleman was what they call a freethinker; that is to say, a deist; or, perhaps, an atheist; for though he did

Digitized by Google

not absolutely deny the existence of a God; yet he entirely denied his providence. A doctrine which, if it is not downright atheism, hath a direct tendency towards it; and, as Dr. Clarke observes, may soon be driven into it. And as to Mr. Booth, though he was in his heart an extreme well-wisher to religion (for he was an honest man) yet his notions of it were very slight and uncertain. To say truth, he was in the wavering condition so finely described by Claudian:

labefacta cadebat
Religio, causæque viam non sponte *sequebar*
Alterius; vacuo quæ currere semina motu
Affirmat; magnumque novas per inane figuras
Fortuna, non arte, regi; quæ numina sensu
Ambiguo, vel nulla putat, vel nescia nostri.

This way of thinking, or rather of doubting, he had contracted from the same reasons which Claudian assigns, and which had induced Brutus in his latter days to doubt the existence of that virtue which he had all his life cultivated. In short, poor Booth imagined, that a larger share of misfortunes had fallen to his lot than he had merited; and this led him, who (though a good classical scholar) was not deeply learned in religious matters, into a disadvantageous opinion of Providence. A dangerous way of reasoning, in which our conclusions are not only too hasty, from an imperfect view of things; but we are likewise liable to much error from partiality to ourselves; viewing our virtues and vices as through a perspective in which we turn the glass always to our own advantage, so as to diminish the one, and as greatly to magnify the other.

From the above reasons, it can be no wonder that Mr. Booth did not decline the acquaintance of this person, in a place which could not promise to afford him any better. He answered him,

Digitized by Google

therefore, with great courtesy, as indeed he was of a very good and gentle disposition, and, after expressing a civil surprise at meeting him there, declared himself to be of the same opinion with regard to the necessity of human actions; adding, however, that he did not believe men were under any blind impulse or direction of fate; but that every man acted merely from the force of that passion which was uppermost in his mind, and could do no otherwise.

A discourse now ensued between the two gentlemen, on the necessity arising from the impulse of fate, and the necessity arising from the impulse of passion, which, as it will make a pretty pamphlet of itself, we shall reserve for some future opportunity. When this was ended, they set forward to survey the gaol, and the prisoners, with the several cases of whom Mr. Robinson, who had been some time under confinement, undertook to make Mr. Booth acquainted.

CHAP. IV.

Disclosing further Secrets of the Prison-house.

THE first persons whom they passed by were three men in fetters, who were enjoying themselves very merrily over a bottle of wine, and a pipe of tobacco. These, Mr. Robinson informed his friend, were three street-robbers, and were all certain of being hanged the ensuing sessions. So inconsiderable an object, said he, is misery to light minds, when it is at any distance.

A little farther they beheld a man prostrate on the ground, whose heavy groans, and frantic actions, plainly indicated the highest disorder of mind. This person was, it seems, committed for a small felony; and his wife, who then lay-in, upon hearing the news, had thrown herself from

Digitized by Google

a window two pair of stairs high, by which means he had, in all probability, lost both her and his child.

A very pretty girl then advanced towards them, whose beauty Mr. Booth could not help admiring the moment he saw her; declaring, at the same time, he thought she had great innocence in her countenance. Robinson said she was committed thither as an idle and disorderly person, and a common street-walker. As she passed by Mr. Booth, she damned his eyes, and discharged a volley of words, every one of which was too indecent to be repeated.

They now beheld a little creature sitting by herself in a corner, and crying bitterly. This girl, Mr. Robinson said, was committed, because her father-in-law, who was in the grenadier-guards, had sworn that he was afraid of his life, or of some bodily harm which she would do him, and she could get no sureties for keeping the peace; for which reason, justice Thrasher had committed her to prison.

A great noise now arose, occasioned by the prisoners all flocking to see a fellow whipt for petty larceny, to which he was condemned by the court of quarter-sessions; but this soon ended in the disappointment of the spectators; for the fellow, after being stript, having advanced another sixpence, was discharged untouched.

This was immediately followed by another bustle; Blear-eyed Moll, and several of her companions, having got possession of a man who was committed for certain odious unmanlike practices, not fit to be named, were giving him various kinds of discipline, and would probably have put an end to him, had he not been rescued out of their hands by authority.

When this bustle was a little allayed, Mr. Booth took notice of a young woman in rags sitting on the ground, and supporting the head of an old

Digitized by Google

man in her lap, who appeared to be giving up the ghost. These, Mr. Robinson informed him, were father and daughter; that the latter was committed for stealing a loaf, in order to support the former, and the former for receiving it, knowing it to be stolen.

A well-dressed man then walked surlily by them, whom Mr. Robinson reported to have been committed on an indictment found against him for a most horrid perjury; but, says he, we expect him to be bailed to day. Good heaven! cries Booth, can such villains find bail, and is no person charitable enough to bail that poor father and daughter? Oh! Sir, answered Robinson, the offence of the daughter, being felony, is held not to be bailable in law; whereas perjury is a misdemeanor only; and therefore persons who are even indicted for it, are, nevertheless, capable of being bailed. Nay, of all perjuries, that of which this man is indicted, is the worst; for it was with an intention of taking away the life of an innocent person by form of law. As to perjuries in civil matters, they are not so very criminal. They are not, said Booth; and yet even these are a most flagitious offence, and worthy the highest punishment. Surely they ought to be distinguished, answered Robinson, from the others: for what is taking away a little property from a man, compared to taking away his life, and his reputation, and ruining his family into the bargain?—I hope there can be no comparison in the crimes, and I think there ought to be none in the punishment. However, at present, the punishment of all perjury is only pillory, and transportation for seven years; and as it is a traversable and bailable offence, methods are often found to escape any punishment at all.*

* By removing the indictment by *certiorari* into the King's Bench, the trial is so long postponed, and the costs are so highly encreased, that prosecutors are often tired out, and some incapacitated from pursuing. *Verbum sapienti.*

Digitized by Google

Booth expressed great astonishment at this, when his attention was suddenly diverted by the most miserable object that he had yet seen. This was a wretch almost naked, and who bore in his countenance, joined to an appearance of honesty, the marks of poverty, hunger, and disease. He had, moreover, a wooden leg, and two or three scars on his forehead. The case of this poor man is, indeed, unhappy enough, said Robinson. He hath served his country, lost his limb, and received several wounds at the siege of Gibraltar. When he was discharged from the hospital abroad, he came over to get into that of Chelsea, but could not immediately, as none of his officers were then in England. In the mean time, he was one day apprehended and committed hither on suspicion of stealing three herrings from a fishmonger. He was tried several months ago for this offence, and acquitted; indeed, his innocence manifestly appeared at the trial; but he was brought back again for his fees, and here he hath lain ever since.

Booth expressed great horror at this account, and declared if he had only so much money in his pocket, he would pay his fees for him; but added, that he was not possessed of a single farthing in the world.

Robinson hesitated a moment, and then said, with a smile, 'I am going to make you, Sir, a very 'odd proposal after your last declaration; but 'what say you to a game at cards? it will serve 'to pass a tedious hour, and may divert your 'thoughts from more unpleasant speculations.'

I do not imagine Booth would have agreed to this: for though some love of gaming had been formerly amongst his faults; yet he was not so egregiously addicted to that vice, as to be tempted by the shabby plight of Robinson, who had, if I may so express myself, no charms for a gamester. If he had, however, any such inclinations, he had no opportunity to follow them: for before he

Digitized by Google

could make any answer to Robinson's proposal, a strapping wench came up to Booth, and, taking hold of his arm, asked him to walk aside with her; saying, 'What a pox, are you such a fresh cull 'that you do not know this fellow? why, he is a 'gambler, and committed for cheating at play. 'There is not such a pickpocket in the whole 'quad.'*

A scene of altercation now ensued, between Robinson and the Lady, which ended in a bout at fisticuffs, in which the lady was greatly superior to the philosopher.

While the two combatants were engaged, a grave looking man, rather better dressed than the majority of the company, came up to Mr. Booth, and taking him aside, said, 'I am sorry, Sir, to 'see a gentleman, as you appear to be, in such 'intimacy with that rascal, who makes no scruple 'of disowning all revealed religion. As for crimes, 'they are human errors, and signify but little; 'nay, perhaps the worse a man is by nature, the 'more room there is for grace. The spirit is ac-'tive, and loves best to inhabit those minds where 'it may meet with the most work. Whatever your 'crime be, therefore, I would not have you de-'spair; but rather rejoice at it: for perhaps it 'may be the means of your being called.' He ran on for a considerable time with this cant, without waiting for an answer, and ended in declaring himself a methodist.

Just as the methodist had finished his discourse, a beautiful young woman was ushered into the gaol. She was genteel, and well dressed, and did not in the least resemble those females whom Mr. Booth had hitherto seen. The constable had no sooner delivered her at the gate, than she asked, with a commanding voice, for the keeper; and, when he arrived, she said to him, 'Well, Sir,

* A cant word for a prison.

Digitized by Google

'whither am I to be conducted? I hope I am not 'to take up my lodgings with these creatures.' The keeper answered, with a kind of surly respect, 'Madam, we have rooms for those that can afford 'to pay for them.' At these words she pulled a handsome purse from her pocket, in which many guineas chinked, saying, with an air of indignation, 'That she was not come thither on account 'of poverty.' The keeper no sooner viewed the purse, than his features became all softened in an instant; and with all the courtesy of which he was master, he desired the lady to walk with him, assuring her that she should have the best apartment in his house.

Mr. Booth was now left alone; for the methodist had forsaken him, having, as the phrase of the sect is, searched him to the bottom. In fact, he had thoroughly examined every one of Mr. Booth's pockets; from which he had conveyed away a pen-knife, and an iron snuff-box, these being all the movables which were to be found.

Booth was standing near the gate of the prison, when the young lady above mentioned was introduced into the yard. He viewed her features very attentively, and was persuaded that he knew her. She was indeed so remarkably handsome, that it was hardly possible for any who had ever seen her to forget her. He inquired of one of the underkeepers, if the name of the prisoner lately arrived was not Matthews; to which he was answered, that her name was not Matthews but Vincent, and that she was committed for murder.

The latter part of this information made Mr. Booth suspect his memory more than the former; for it was very possible that she might have changed her name; but he hardly thought she could so far have changed her nature as to be guilty of a crime so very incongruous with her former gentle manners: for Miss Matthews had both the birth and education of a gentlewoman.

Digitized by Google

He concluded therefore, that he was certainly mistaken, and rested satisfied, without any further inquiry.

CHAP. V.

Containing certain Adventures which befel Mr. Booth in the Prison.

THE remainder of the day Mr. Booth spent in melancholy contemplation on his present condition. He was destitute of the common necessaries of life, and consequently unable to subsist where he was; nor was there a single person in town to whom he could, with any reasonable hope, apply for his delivery. Grief for some time banished the thoughts of food from his mind; but, in the morning, nature began to grow uneasy for want of her usual nourishment: for he had not eat a morsel during the last forty hours. A penny loaf, which is, it seems, the ordinary allowance to the prisoners in Bridewell, was now delivered him; and while he was eating this, a man brought him a little packet sealed up, informing him, that it came by a messenger, who said it required no answer.

Mr. Booth now opened his packet, and after unfolding several pieces of blank paper successively, at last discovered a guinea, wrapt with great care in the innermost paper. He was vastly surprised at this sight, as he had few, if any friends, from whom he could expect such a favour, slight as it was; and not one of his friends, as he was apprised, knew of his confinement. As there was no direction to the packet, nor a word of writing contained in it, he began to suspect that it was delivered to the wrong person; and, being one of the most untainted honesty, he found out the man who gave it to him, and again examined him concerning the person who brought it, and the message delivered with it. The man assured Booth

Digitized by Google

that he had made no mistake; saying, 'If your 'name is Booth, Sir, I am positive you are the gen-'tleman to whom the parcel I gave you belongs.'

The most scrupulous honesty would perhaps, in such a situation, have been well enough satisfied in finding no owner for the guinea; especially when proclamation had been made in the prison, that Mr. Booth had received a packet without any direction, to which, if any person had any claim, and would discover the contents, he was ready to deliver it to such claimant. No such claimant being found (I mean none who knew the contents; for many swore that they expected just such a packet, and believed it to be their property), Mr. Booth very calmly resolved to apply the money to his own use.

The first thing after redemption of the coat, which Mr. Booth, hungry as he was, thought of, was to supply himself with snuff, which he had long, to his great sorrow, been without. On this occasion, he presently missed that iron box which the methodist had so dextrously conveyed out of his pocket, as we mentioned in the last chapter.

He no sooner missed this box, than he immediately suspected that the gambler was the person who had stolen it; nay, so well was he assured of this man's guilt, that it may, perhaps, be improper to say he barely suspected it. Though Mr. Booth was, as we have hinted, a man of a very sweet disposition; yet was he rather overwarm. Having, therefore, no doubt concerning the person of the thief, he eagerly sought him out, and very bluntly charged him with the fact.

The gambler, whom I think we should now call the philosopher, received this charge without the least visible emotion either of mind or muscle. After a short pause of a few moments, he answered, with great solemnity, as follows: 'Young 'man, I am entirely unconcerned at your ground-'less suspicion. He that censures a stranger, as I

Digitized by Google

'am to you, without any cause, makes a worse 'compliment to himself than to the stranger. 'You 'know yourself, friend; you know not me. It is 'true indeed, you heard me accused of being a 'cheat and a gamester; but who is my accuser? 'look at my apparel, friend; do thieves and game-'sters wear such clothes as these? play is my 'folly, not my vice; it is my impulse, and I have 'been a martyr to it. Would a gamester have 'asked another to play when he could have lost 'eighteen-pence and won nothing? however, if 'you are not satisfied, you may search my 'pockets; the outside of all but one will serve 'your turn, and in that one, there is the eighteen-'pence I told you of.' He then turned up his clothes; and his pockets entirely resembled the pitchers of the Belides.

Booth was a little staggered at this defence. He said, the real value of the iron box was too inconsiderable to mention; but that he had a capricious value for it, for the sake of the person who gave it him: 'for though it is not,' said he, 'worth sixpence, I would willingly give a crown 'to any one who would bring it me again.'

Robinson answered, 'If that be the case, you 'have nothing more to do but to signify your 'intention in the prison; and I am well convinced 'you will not be long without regaining the pos-'session of your snuff-box.'

This advice was immediately followed, and with success, the methodist presently producing the box; which, he said, he had found, and should have returned it before, had he known the person to whom it belonged; adding, with uplifted eyes, that the spirit would not suffer him knowingly to detain the goods of another, however inconsiderable the value was. 'Why so, 'friend?' said Robinson. 'Have I not heard you 'often say, the wickeder any man was, the better, 'provided he was what you call a believer.' 'You

Digitized by Google

'mistake me,' cries Cooper, (for that was the name of the methodist); 'no man can be wicked 'after he is possessed by the spirit. There is a wide 'difference between the days of sin, and the days 'of grace. I have been a sinner myself.' 'I be- 'lieve thee,' cries Robinson, with a sneer. 'I care 'not,' answered the other, 'what an atheist be- 'lieves. I suppose you would insinuate that I 'stole the snuff-box; but I value not your malice; 'the Lord knows my innocence.' He then walked off with the reward; and Booth, returning to Robinson, very earnestly asked pardon for his groundless suspicion; which the other, without any hesitation, accorded him, saying, 'You never accused 'me, Sir; you suspected some gambler, with 'whose character I have no concern. I should be 'angry with a friend or acquaintance who should 'give a hasty credit to any allegation against me; 'but I have no reason to be offended with you for 'believing what the woman, and the rascal who is 'just gone, and who is committed here for a pick- 'pocket, which you did not perhaps know, told 'you to my disadvantage. And if you thought 'me to be a gambler, you had just reason to sus- 'pect any ill of me: for I myself am confined 'here by the perjury of one of those villains; who 'having cheated me of my money at play, and 'hearing that I intended to apply to a magistrate 'against him, himself began the attack, and ob- 'tained a warrant against me of justice Thrasher, 'who, without hearing one speech in my defence, 'committed me to this place.'

Booth testified great compassion at this account; and he having invited Robinson to dinner, they spent that day together. In the afternoon, Booth indulged his friend with a game at cards; at first for halfpence, and afterwards for shillings, when fortune so favoured Robinson, that he did not leave the other a single shilling in his pocket.

A surprising run of luck in a gamester is often

Digitized by Google

mistaken for somewhat else, by persons who are not over-zealous believers in the divinity of fortune. I have known a stranger at Bath, who hath happened fortunately (I might almost say unfortunately), to have four by honours in his hand almost every time he dealt, for a whole evening, shunned universally by the whole company the next day. And certain it is, that Mr. Booth, though of a temper very little inclined to suspicion, began to waver in his opinion, whether the character given by Mr. Robinson of himself, or that which the others gave of him, was the truer.

In the morning, hunger paid him a second visit, and found him again in the same situation as before. After some deliberation, therefore, he resolved to ask Robinson to lend him a shilling or two of that money which was lately his own. And this experiment, he thought, would confirm him either in a good or evil opinion of that gentleman.

To this demand, Robinson answered, with great alacrity, that he should very gladly have complied, had not fortune played one of her jade tricks with him: 'for since my winning of you,' said he, 'I 'have been stript not only of your money, but my 'own.' He was going to harangue farther; but Booth, with great indignation, turned from him.

This poor gentleman had very little time to reflect on his own misery, or the rascality, as it appeared to him, of the other, when the same person, who had the day before delivered him the guinea from the unknown hand, again accosted him, and told him a lady in the house (so he expressed himself), desired the favour of his company.

Mr. Booth immediately obeyed the message, and was conducted into a room in the prison, where he was presently convinced that Mrs. Vincent was no other than his old acquaintance Miss Matthews.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VI.

Containing the extraordinary Behaviour of Miss Matthews on her meeting with Booth, and some endeavours to prove, by Reason and Authority, that it is possible for a Woman to appear to be what she really is not.

EIGHT or nine years had passed, since any interview between Mr. Booth and Miss Matthews; and their meeting now in so extraordinary a place affected both of them with an equal surprise.

After some immaterial ceremonies, the lady acquainted Mr. Booth, that having heard there was a person in the prison who knew her by the name of Matthews, she had great curiosity to inquire who he was, whereupon he had been shewn to her from the window of the house; that she immediately recollected him, and being informed of his distressful situation, for which she expressed great concern, she had sent him that guinea which he had received the day before; and then proceeded to excuse herself for not having desired to see him at that time, when she was under the greatest disorder and hurry of spirits.

Booth made many handsome acknowledgements of her favour; and added, that he very little wondered at the disorder of her spirits, concluding, that he was heartily concerned at seeing her there; but I hope, Madam, said he——

Here he hesitated; upon which, bursting into an agony of tears, she cried out, 'O captain! 'captain! many extraordinary things have past 'since last I saw you. O gracious heaven! did I 'ever expect that this would be the next place of 'our meeting!'

She then flung herself into her chair, where she gave a loose to her passion, whilst he, in the most

Digitized by Google

affectionate and tender manner, endeavoured to soothe and comfort her; but passion itself did, probably, more for its own relief, than all his friendly consolations. Having vented this in a large flood of tears, she became pretty well composed; but Booth unhappily mentioning her father, she again relapsed into an agony, and cried out, 'Why? why will you repeat the name of that 'dear man? I have disgraced him, Mr. Booth, I 'am unworthy the name of his daughter.'—Here passion again stopped her words, and discharged itself in tears.

After this second vent of sorrow or shame; or, if the reader pleases, of rage; she once more recovered from her agonies. To say the truth, these are, I believe, as critical discharges of nature as any of those which are so called by the physicians; and do more effectually relieve the mind, than any remedies with which the whole Materia Medica of philosophy can supply it.

When Mrs. Vincent had recovered her faculties, she perceived Booth standing silent, with a mixture of concern and astonishment in his countenance; then addressing herself to him with an air of most bewitching softness, of which she was a perfect mistress, she said, 'I do not wonder at your amaze-'ment, Captain Booth; nor indeed at the concern 'which you so plainly discover for me: for I well 'know the goodness of your nature: but, O, 'Mr. Booth! believe me, when you know what 'hath happened since our last meeting, your con-'cern will be raised, however your astonishment 'may cease. O, Sir! you are a stranger to the 'cause of my sorrows.'

'I hope I am, Madam,' answered he; 'for I 'cannot believe what I have heard in the prison—'surely murder'—at which words she started from her chair, repeating, murder! 'Oh! it is music in 'my ears!—You have heard then the cause of my 'commitment, my glory, my delight, my repara-

Digitized by Google

'tion:—Yes, my old friend, this is the hand, this 'is the arm that drove the penknife to his heart. 'Unkind fortune, that not one drop of his blood 'reached my hand.—Indeed, Sir, I would never 'have washed it from it.—But though I have not 'the happiness to see it on my hand, I have the 'glorious satisfaction of remembering I saw it run 'in rivers on the floor; I saw it forsake his cheeks. 'I saw him fall a martyr to my revenge. And is 'the killing a villain to be called murder? per- 'haps the law calls it so.—Let it call it what it 'will, or punish me as it pleases.——Punish me! '—no, no—that is not in the power of man—not 'of that monster man, Mr. Booth. I am undone, 'am revenged, and have now no more business for 'life; let them take it from me when they will.'

Our poor gentleman turned pale with horror at this speech, and the ejaculation of Good Heavens! what do I hear! burst spontaneously from his lips; nor can we wonder at this, though he was the bravest of men; for her voice, her looks, her gestures, were properly adapted to the sentiments she exprest. Such indeed was her image, that neither could Shakespeare describe, nor Hogarth paint, nor Clive act a fury in higher perfection.

'What do you hear?' reiterated she. 'You 'hear the resentment of the most injured of wo- 'men. You have heard, you say, of the murder; 'but do you know the cause, Mr. Booth? have 'you, since your return to England, visited that 'country where we formerly knew one another? 'tell me, do you know my wretched story? tell 'me that, my friend.'

Booth hesitated for an answer; indeed, he had heard some imperfect stories, not much to her advantage. She waited not till he had formed a speech; but cried, 'Whatever you may have heard, 'you cannot be acquainted with all the strange 'accidents which have occasioned your seeing me 'in a place which at our last parting was so

Digitized by Google

'unlikely that I should ever have been found in; 'nor can you know the cause of all that I have 'uttered, and which, I am convinced, you never 'expected to have heard from my mouth. If 'these circumstances raise your curiosity, I will 'satisfy it.'

He answered, That curiosity was too mean a word to express his ardent desire of knowing her story. Upon which, with very little previous ceremony, she began to relate what is written in the following chapter.

But before we put an end to this, it may be necessary to whisper a word or two to the critics, who have, perhaps, begun to express no less astonishment than Mr. Booth, that a lady, in whom we had remarked a most extraordinary power of displaying softness, should, the very next moment after the words were out of her mouth, express sentiments becoming the lips of a Dalila, Jezebel, Medea, Semiramis, Parysatis, Tanaquil, Livilla, Messalina, Agrippina, Brunichilde, Elfrida, lady Macbeth, Joan of Naples, Christina of Sweden, Katharine Hays, Sarah Malcolm, Con. Philips,* or any other heroine of the tender sex, which history, sacred or profane, ancient or modern, false or true, hath recorded.

We desire such critics to remember, that it is the same English climate in which, on the lovely 10th of June, under a serene sky, the amorous Jacobite, kissing the odoriferous zephyr's breath, gathers a nosegay of white roses to deck the whiter breast of Celia; and in which, on the 11th of June, the very next day, the boisterous Boreas, roused by the hollow thunder, rushes horrible through the air, and, driving the wet tempest before him, levels the hope of the husbandman with the earth, dreadful remembrance of the consequences of the revolution.

* Though last, not least.

Digitized by Google

Again, let it be remembered, that it is the self-same Celia, all tender, soft, and delicate; who with a voice, the sweetness of which the Syrens might envy, warbles the harmonious song in praise of the young adventurer; and again, the next day, or, perhaps, the next hour, with fiery eyes, wrinkled brows, and foaming lips, roars forth treason and nonsense in a political argument with some fair one, of a different principle.

Or, if the critic be a whig, and consequently dislikes such kind of similies, as being too favourable to Jacobitism, let him be contented with the following story:

I happened in my youth to sit behind two ladies in a side-box at a play, where, in the balcony on the opposite side was placed the inimitable B——y C——s, in company with a young fellow of no very formal, or indeed sober, appearance. One of the ladies, I remember, said to the other—'Did 'you ever see any thing look so modest and so 'innocent as that girl over the way? what pity it 'is such a creature should be in the way of ruin, 'as I am afraid she is, by her being alone with 'that young fellow!' Now this lady was no bad physiognomist; for it was impossible to conceive a greater appearance of modesty, innocence, and simplicity, than what nature had displayed in the countenance of that girl; and yet, all appearances notwithstanding, I myself (remember critic, it was in my youth) had a few mornings before seen that very identical picture of all those engaging qualities in bed with a rake at a bagnio, smoking tobacco, drinking punch, talking obscenity, and swearing and cursing with all the impudence and impiety of the lowest and most abandoned trull of a soldier.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VII.

In which Miss Matthews begins her History.

MISS Matthews having barred the door on the inside as securely as it was before barred on the outside, proceeded as follows:

'You may imagine, I am going to begin my 'history at the time when you left the country; 'but I cannot help reminding you of something 'which happened before. You will soon recollect 'the incident; but I believe you little know the 'consequence either at that time or since. Alas! 'I could keep a secret then! now I have no se-'crets; the world knows all; and it is not worth 'my while to conceal any thing. Well!—You 'will not wonder, I believe.—I protest I can hard-'ly tell it you, even now.——But I am convinced 'you have too good an opinion of yourself to be 'surprised at any conquest you may have made. '——Few men want that good opinion—and per-'haps very few had ever more reason for it. In-'deed, Will, you was a charming fellow in those 'days; nay, you are not much altered for the 'worse now, at least in the opinion of some wo-'men; for your complexion and features are 'grown much more masculine than they were.' Here Booth made her a low bow, most probably with a compliment; and after a little hesitation, she again proceeded——'Do you remember a con-'test which happened at an assembly, betwixt 'myself and Miss Johnson, about standing upper-'most? you was then my partner; and young 'Williams danced with the other lady. The par-'ticulars are not now worth mentioning, though 'I suppose you have long since forgot them. Let 'it suffice that you supported my claim, and Wil-'liams very sneakingly gave up that of his part-'ner, who was, with much difficulty, afterwards

Digitized by Google

'prevailed to dance with him. You said—I am 'sure I repeat the words exactly, that 'you would 'not for the world affront any lady there; but 'that you thought you might, without any such 'danger, declare that there was no assembly in 'which that lady, meaning your humble servant, 'was not worthy of the uppermost place; nor will 'I, said you, suffer the first duke in England, 'when she is at the uppermost end of the room, 'and hath called her dance, to lead his partner 'above her.'

'What made this the more pleasing to me was, 'that I secretly hated Miss Johnson. Will you 'have the reason? why, then, I will tell you ho-'nestly, she was my rival;——that word perhaps 'astonishes you, as you never, I believe, heard of 'any one who made his addresses to me; and in-'deed my heart was, till that night, entirely in-'different to all mankind. I mean, then, that she 'was my rival for praise, for beauty, for dress, for 'fortune, and consequently for admiration. My 'triumph on this conquest is not to be expressed 'any more than my delight in the person to whom 'I chiefly owed it. The former, I fancy, was vi-'sible to the whole company; and I desired it 'should be so; but the latter was so well con-'cealed, that no one, I am confident, took any 'notice of it. And yet you appeared to me that 'night to be an angel. You looked, you danced, 'you spoke—every thing charmed me.'

'Good heavens!' cries Booth, 'is it possible 'you should do me so much unmerited honour, 'and I should be dunce enough not to perceive 'the least symptom!'

'I assure you,' answered she, 'I did all I could 'to prevent you; and yet I almost hated you for 'not seeing through what I strove to hide. Why, 'Mr. Booth, was you not more quick-sighted?— 'I will answer for you—your affections were more 'happily disposed of to a much better woman

Digitized by Google

'than myself, whom you married soon afterwards. 'I should ask you for her, Mr. Booth; I should 'have asked you for her before; but I am un- 'worthy of asking for her, or of calling her my 'acquaintance.'

Booth stopt her short, as she was running into another fit of passion, and begged her to omit all former matters, and acquaint him with that part of her history to which he was an entire stranger.

She then renewed her discourse as follows; 'You know, Mr. Booth, I soon afterwards left 'that town, upon the death of my grandmother, 'and returned home to my father's house; where I 'had not been long arrived before some troops of 'dragoons came to quarter in our neighbourhood. 'Among the officers, there was a cornet, whose 'detested name was Hebbers, a name I could 'scarce repeat, had I not at the same time the 'pleasure to reflect that he is now no more. My 'father, you know, who is a hearty well-wisher to 'the present government, used always to invite the 'officers to his house; so did he these. Nor was 'it long before this cornet, in so particular a 'manner recommended himself to the poor old 'gentleman (I cannot think of him without tears), 'that our house became his principal habitation; 'and he was rarely at his quarters, unless when 'his superior officers obliged him to be there. I 'shall say nothing of his person, nor could that 'be any recommendation to a man; it was such, 'however, as no woman could have made an ob- 'jection to. Nature had certainly wrapt up her 'odious work in a most beautiful covering. To 'say the truth, he was the handsomest man, ex- 'cept one only, that I ever saw—I assure you, I 'have seen a handsomer——but—well.—He had 'besides all the qualifications of a gentleman; was 'genteel, and extremely polite; spoke French 'well, and danced to a miracle; but what chiefly 'recommended him to my father, was his skill in

Digitized by Google

'music, of which you know that dear man was the 'most violent lover. I wish he was not too sus- 'ceptible of flattery on that head; for I have heard 'Hebbers often greatly commend my father's per- 'formance, and have observed that the good man 'was wonderfully pleased with such commenda- 'tions. To say the truth, it is the only way I 'can account for the extraordinary friendship 'which my father conceived for this person; such 'a friendship, that he at last became a part of our 'family.

'This very circumstance, which, as I am con- 'vinced, strongly recommended him to my father, 'had the very contrary effect with me; I had 'never any delight in music, and it was not with- 'out much difficulty I was prevailed on to learn 'to play on the harpsichord, in which I had made 'a very slender progress. As this man, therefore, 'was frequently the occasion of my being impor- 'tuned to play against my will, I began to enter- 'tain some dislike for him on that account; and 'as to his person, I assure you, I long continued 'to look on it with great indifference.

'How strange will the art of this man ap- 'pear to you presently, who had sufficient address 'to convert that very circumstance which had at 'first occasioned my dislike, into the first seeds of 'affection for him.

'You have often, I believe, heard my sister 'Betty play on the harpsichord; she was, indeed, 'reputed the best performer in the whole country.

'I was the farthest in the world from regarding 'this perfection of her's with envy. In reality, 'perhaps, I despised all perfection of this kind; 'at least, as I had neither skill nor ambition to 'excel this way, I looked upon it as a matter of 'mere indifference.

'Hebbers first put this emulation in my head. 'He took great pains to persuade me, that I had 'much greater abilities of the musical kind than

Digitized by Google

'my sister; and that I might with the greatest 'ease, if I pleased, excel her; offering me, at the 'same time, his assistance if I would resolve to 'undertake it.

'When he had sufficiently inflamed my ambi- 'tion, in which, perhaps, he found too little dif- 'ficulty, the continual praises of my sister, which 'before I had disregarded, became more and more 'nauseous in my ears; and the rather, as music 'being the favourite passion of my father, I became 'apprehensive (not without frequent hints from 'Hebbers of that nature) that she might gain too 'great a preference in his favour.

'To my harpsichord then I applied myself night 'and day, with such industry and attention, that 'I soon began to perform in a tolerable manner. 'I do not absolutely say I excelled my sister, for 'many were of a different opinion; but, indeed, 'there might be some partiality in all that.

'Hebbers, at least, declared himself on my side, 'and nobody could doubt his judgement. He as- 'serted openly, that I played in the better man- 'ner of the two; and one day, when I was playing 'to him alone, he affected to burst into a rapture 'of admiration, and squeezing me gently by the 'hand, said, There, madam, I now declare you 'excel your sister as much in music, as, added 'he, in a whispering sigh, you do her, and all the 'world, in every other charm.

'No woman can bear any superiority in what- 'ever thing she desires to excel in. I now began 'to hate all the admirers of my sister, to be 'uneasy at every commendation bestowed on her 'skill in music, and consequently to love Hebbers 'for the preference which he gave to mine.

'It was now that I began to survey the hand- 'some person of Hebbers with pleasure. And 'here, Mr. Booth, I will betray to you the grand 'secret of our sex.——Many women, I believe, 'do, with great innocence, and even with great

Digitized by Google

'indifference, converse with men of the finest 'persons; but this I am confident may be affirmed 'with truth, that, when once a woman comes to 'ask this question of herself; Is the man whom I 'like for some other reason, handsome? her fate, 'and his too, very strongly depend on her an- 'swering in the affirmative.

'Hebbers no sooner perceived that he made an 'impression on my heart, of which, I am satisfied, 'I gave him too undeniable tokens, than he affect- 'ed, on a sudden, to shun me in the most apparent 'manner. He wore the most melancholy air in my 'presence, and, by his dejected looks and sighs, 'firmly persuaded me, that there was some secret 'sorrow labouring in his bosom; nor will it be 'difficult for you to imagine to what cause I im- 'puted it.

'Whilst I was wishing for his declaration of a 'passion in which I thought I could not be mis- 'taken, and, at the same time trembling, when- 'ever we met, with the apprehension of this very 'declaration, the widow Carey came from London 'to make us a visit, intending to stay the whole 'summer at our house.

'Those who know Mrs. Carey, will scarce think 'I do her an injury, in saying, she is far from being 'handsome; and yet she is as finished a coquette 'as if she had the highest beauty to support that 'character. But, perhaps, you have seen her; 'and, if you have, I am convinced you will rea- 'dily subscribe to my opinion.'

Booth answered, he had not; and then she proceeded as in the following chapter.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VIII.

The History of Miss Matthews continued.

'THIS young lady had not been three days with us, before Hebbers grew so particular with 'her, that it was generally observed; and my poor 'father, who, I believe, loved the cornet as if 'he had been his son, began to jest on the oc- 'casion, as one who would not be displeased at 'throwing a good jointure into the arms of his 'friend.

'You will easily guess, Sir, the disposition of my 'mind on this occasion; but I was not permitted 'to suffer long under it; for one day, when Heb- 'bers was alone with me, he took an opportunity 'of expressing his abhorrence at the thoughts of 'marrying for interest, contrary to his inclinations. 'I was warm on the subject, and, I believe, went 'so far as to say, that none but fools and villains 'did so. He replied, with a sigh, Yes, madam, 'but what would you think of a man whose heart 'is all the while bleeding for another woman, to 'whom he would willingly sacrifice the world; 'but, because he must sacrifice her interest as well 'as his own, never durst even give her a hint of 'that passion which was preying on his very vitals? 'Do you believe, Miss Fanny, there is such a 'wretch on earth? I answered, with an assumed coldness, I did not believe there was. He then 'took me gently by the hand, and, with a look so 'tender, that I cannot describe it, vowed he was 'himself that wretch. Then starting, as if con- 'scious of an error committed, he cried with a 'faltering voice, What am I saying? pardon me, 'Miss Fanny; since I beg only your pity, I never 'will ask for more.—At these words, hearing my 'father coming up, I betrayed myself entirely, if,

Digitized by Google

'indeed, I had not done it before. I hastily with-
'drew my hand, crying, Hush! for heaven's sake,
'my father is just coming in; my blushes, my
'look, and my accent telling him, I suppose, all
'which he wished to know.

'A few days now brought matters to an eclair-
'cissement between us; the being undeceived in
'what had given me so much uneasiness, gave me
'a pleasure too sweet to be resisted. To triumph
'over the widow, for whom I had, in a very short
'time, contracted a most inveterate hatred, was a
'pride not to be described. Hebbers appeared to
'me to be the cause of all this happiness. I doubt-
'ed not but that he had the most disinterested
'passion for me, and thought him every way wor-
'thy of its return. I did return it, and accepted
'him as my lover.

'He declared the greatest apprehensions of my
'father's suspicion, though I am convinced these
'were causeless, had his designs been honourable.
'To blind these, I consented that he should carry
'on sham addresses to the widow, who was now a
'constant jest between us; and he pretended, from
'time to time, to acquaint me faithfully with every
'thing that past at his interviews with her; nor was
'this faithless woman wanting in her part of the
'deceit. She carried herself to me all the while
'with a shew of affection, and pretended to have
'the utmost friendship for me. But such are the
'friendships of women!'

At this remark, Booth, though enough affected at some parts of the story, had great difficulty to refrain from laughter; but, by good luck, he escaped being perceived; and the lady went on without interruption.

'I am come now to a part of my narrative in
'which it is impossible to be particular, without
'being tedious; for as to the commerce between
'lovers, it is, I believe, much the same in all
'cases; and there is, perhaps, scarce a single

Digitized by Google

'phrase that hath not been repeated ten millions 'of times.

'One thing, however, as I strongly remarked it 'then, so I will repeat it to you now. In all our 'conversations, in moments when he fell into the 'warmest raptures, and expressed the greatest un-'easiness at the delay of his joys, he seldom men-'tioned the word Marriage; and never once soli-'cited a day for that purpose. Indeed, women can-'not be cautioned too much against such lovers; 'for though I have heard, and perhaps truly, of 'some of our sex, of a virtue so exalted, that it is 'proof against every temptation; yet the gener-'ality, I am afraid, are too much in the power of 'a man to whom they have owned an affection. 'What is called being upon a good footing, is, 'perhaps, being upon a very dangerous one; and 'a woman who hath given her consent to marry, 'can hardly be said to be safe till she is married.

'And now, Sir, I hasten to the period of my 'ruin. We had a wedding in our family; my mu-'sical sister was married to a young fellow as mu-'sical as herself. Such a match, you may be sure, 'amongst other festivities, must have a ball. Oh! 'Mr. Booth, shall modesty forbid me to remark 'to you what past on that occasion? But why do 'I mention modesty, who have no pretensions to 'it? Every thing was said, and practised, on that 'occasion, as if the purpose had been to inflame 'the mind of every woman present. That effect, 'I freely own to you, it had with me. Music, 'dancing, wine, and the most luscious conver-'sation, in which my poor dear father innocently 'joined, raised ideas in me of which I shall for 'ever repent; and I wished (why should I deny 'it?) that it had been my wedding instead of my 'sister's.

'The villain Hebbers danced with me that night, 'and he lost no opportunity of improving the oc-'casion. In short, the dreadful evening came. My

Digitized by Google

'father, though it was a very unusual thing with 'him, grew intoxicated with liquor; most of the 'men were in the same condition; nay, I myself 'drank more than I was accustomed to, enough 'to inflame, though not to disorder. I lost my 'former bed-fellow, my sister, and,—you may, 'I think, guess the rest,—the villain found means 'to steal to my chamber, and I was undone.

'Two months I passed in this detested com- 'merce, buying, even then, my guilty, half-tasted 'pleasures at too dear a rate, with continual hor- 'ror and apprehension; but what have I paid since, 'what do I pay now, Mr. Booth? O may my fate 'be a warning to every woman to keep her inno- 'cence, to resist every temptation, since she is 'certain to repent of the foolish bargain. May it 'be a warning to her to deal with mankind with 'care and caution; to shun the least approaches 'of dishonour, and never to confide too much in 'the honesty of a man, nor in her own strength, 'where she has so much at stake; let her remem- 'ber she walks on a precipice, and the bottomless 'pit is to receive her, if she slips; nay, if she 'makes but one false step.

'I ask your pardon, Mr. Booth, I might have 'spared these exhortations, since no woman hears 'me; but you will not wonder at seeing me af- 'fected on this occasion.'

Booth declared he was much more surprised at her being able so well to preserve her temper in recounting her story.

'O Sir,' answered she, 'I am at length recon- 'ciled to my fate; and I can now die with plea- 'sure, since I die revenged. I am not one of those 'mean wretches who can sit down and lament their 'misfortunes. If I ever shed tears, they are the 'tears of indignation—but I will proceed.

'It was my fate now to solicit marriage; and I 'failed not to do it in the most earnest manner. 'He answered me at first with procrastinations,

Digitized by Google

'declaring, from time to time, he would mention 'it to my father; and still excusing himself for not 'doing it. At last, he thought on an expedient to 'obtain a longer reprieve. This was by pretend- 'ing, that he should, in a very few weeks, be 'preferred to the command of a troop; and then 'he said, he could, with some confidence, pro- 'pose the match.

'In this delay, I was persuaded to acquiesce; 'and was indeed pretty easy; for I had not yet 'the least mistrust of his honour; but what words 'can paint my sensations! when one morning he 'came into my room, with all the marks of de- 'jection in his countenance, and throwing an open 'letter on the table, said, There is news, madam, 'in that letter which I am unable to tell you; 'nor can it give you more concern than it hath 'given me.

'This letter was from his captain, to acquaint 'him, that the rout, as they call it, was arrived, 'and that they were to march within two days. 'And this, I am since convinced, was what he ex- 'pected, instead of the preferment which had been 'made the pretence of delaying our marriage.

'The shock which I felt at reading this was 'inexpressible, occasioned indeed principally by 'the departure of a villain whom I loved. However, 'I soon acquired sufficient presence of mind to 'remember the main point; and I now insisted 'peremptorily on his making me immediately his 'wife, whatever might be the consequence.

'He seemed thunderstruck at this proposal, be- 'ing, I suppose, destitute of any excuse: but I was 'too impatient to wait for an answer, and cried 'out with much eagerness, Sure you cannot hesi- 'tate a moment upon this matter——Hesitate! 'madam! replied he—what you ask is impossible '—is this a time for me to mention a thing of this 'kind to your father?—My eyes were now opened 'all at once—I fell ino a rage little short of mad-

Digitized by Google

'ness. Tell not me, I cried, of impossibilities, 'nor times, nor of my father,———my honour, 'my reputation, my all are at stake.—I will have 'no excuse, no delay—make me your wife this 'instant, or I will proclaim you over the face of 'the whole earth for the greatest of villains.— 'He answered, with a kind of sneer, What will 'you proclaim, madam?—whose honour will you 'injure? My tongue faltered when I offered to 'reply, and I fell into a violent agony, which 'ended in a fit; nor do I remember any thing 'more that past, till I found myself in the arms 'of my poor affrighted father.

'O Mr. Booth! what was then my situation, 'I tremble even now from the reflection.—I must 'stop a moment. I can go no farther.' Booth attempted all in his power to sooth her; and she soon recovered her powers, and proceeded in her story.

CHAP. IX.

In which Miss Matthews concludes her Relation.

'BEFORE I had recovered my senses, I had 'sufficiently betrayed myself to the best of men, 'who, instead of upbraiding me, or exerting any 'anger, endeavoured to comfort me all he could, 'with assurances that all should yet be well. This 'goodness of his affected me with inexpressible 'sensations; I prostrated myself before him, em- 'braced and kissed his knees, and almost dissolved 'in tears, and a degree of tenderness hardly to be 'conceived ——But I am running into too minute 'descriptions.

'Hebbers, seeing me in a fit, had left me, and 'sent one of the servants to take care of me. He 'then ran away like a thief from the house, with- 'out taking his leave of my father, or once thank-

Digitized by Google

'ing him for all his civilities. He did not stop at 'his quarters, but made directly to London, appre- 'hensive, I believe, either of my father or brother's 'resentment; for I am convinced he is a coward. 'Indeed his fear of my brother was utterly ground- 'less; for I believe he would rather have thanked 'any man who had destroyed me; and I am sure I 'am not in the least behind-hand with him in good 'wishes.

'All his inveteracy to me, had, however, no 'effect on my father, at least at that time; for 'though the good man took sufficient occasions 'to reprimand me for my past offence, he could 'not be brought to abandon me. A treaty of 'marriage was now set on foot, in which my 'father himself offered me to Hebbers, with a for- 'tune superior to that which had been given with 'my sister; nor could all my brother's remon- 'strances against it, as an act of the highest injus- 'tice, avail.

'Hebbers entered into the treaty, though not 'with much warmth. He had even the assurance 'to make additional demands on my father, which 'being complied with, every thing was concluded, 'and the villain once more received into the house. 'He soon found means to obtain my forgiveness of 'his former behaviour; indeed, he convinced me, 'so foolishly blind is female love, that he had 'never been to blame.

'When every thing was ready for our nuptials, 'and the day of the ceremony was to be appointed, 'in the midst of my happiness, I received a letter 'from an unknown hand, acquainting me (guess, 'Mr. Booth, how I was shocked at receiving it) 'that Mr. Hebbers was already married to a wo- 'man, in a distant part of the kingdom.

'I will not tire you with all that past at our next 'interview. I communicated the letter to Heb- 'bers, who after some little hesitation, owned the 'fact, and not only owned it, but had the address

Digitized by Google

'to improve it to his own advantage, to make it 'the means of satisfying me concerning all his for- 'mer delays; which, to say the truth, I was not 'so much displeased at imputing to any degree of 'villany, as I should have been to impute it to the 'want of a sufficient warmth of affection; and 'though the disappointment of all my hopes, at 'the very instant of their expected fruition, threw 'me into the most violent disorders; yet, when I 'came a little to myself, he had no great difficulty 'to persuade me that in every instance, with regard 'to me, Hebbers had acted from no other motive 'than from the most ardent and ungovernable 'love. And there is, I believe, no crime which a 'woman will not forgive, when she can derive it 'from that fountain. In short, I forgave him all, 'and am willing to persuade myself I am not 'weaker than the rest of my sex. Indeed, Mr. 'Booth, he hath a bewitching tongue, and is 'master of an address that no woman could resist. 'I do assure you, the charms of his person are his 'least perfection, at least in my eye.'

Here Booth smiled, but happily without her perceiving it.

'A fresh difficulty (continued she) now arose. 'This was to excuse the delay of the ceremony to 'my father, who every day very earnestly urged it. 'This made me so very uneasy, that I at last listen- 'ed to a proposal, which, if any one, in the days 'of my innocence, or even a few days before, 'had assured me I could have submitted to have 'thought of, I should have treated the supposition 'with the highest contempt and indignation; nay, 'I scarce reflect on it now with more horror than 'astonishment. In short, I agreed to run away 'with him. To leave my father, my reputation, 'every thing which was or ought to have been 'dear to me, and to live with this villain as a mis- 'tress, since I could not be his wife.

'Was not this an obligation of the highest and

Digitized by Google

'tenderest kind, and had I not reason to expect 'every return in the man's power on whom I had 'conferred it?

'I will make short of the remainder of my story, 'for what is there of a woman worth relating, after 'what I have told you?

'Above a year I lived with this man in an ob-'scure court in London, during which time I had 'a child by him, whom Heaven, I thank it, hath 'been pleased to take to itself.

'During many months he behaved to me with 'all the apparent tenderness, and even fondness 'imaginable; but, alas! how poor was my enjoy-'ment of this, compared to what it would have 'been in another situation? When he was present, 'life was barely tolerable; but when he was ab-'sent, nothing could equal the misery I endured. 'I past my hours almost entirely alone; for no 'company, but what I despised, would consort 'with me. Abroad, I scarce ever went, lest I 'should meet any of my former acquaintance; 'for their sight would have plunged a thousand 'daggers in my soul. My only diversion was 'going very seldom to a play, where I hid myself 'in the gallery, with a daughter of the woman of 'the house. A girl, indeed, of good sense, and 'many good qualities; but how much beneath me 'was it to be the companion of a creature so low! 'O heavens! when I have seen my equals glitter-'ing in a side-box, how have the thoughts of my 'lost honour torn my soul!'

'Pardon me, dear madam,' cries Booth, 'for 'interrupting you; but I am under the utmost 'anxiety to know what became of your poor 'father, for whom I have so great a respect, and 'who, I am convinced, must so bitterly feel your 'loss.'

'O Mr. Booth,' answered she, 'he was scarce 'ever out of my thoughts. His dear image still

Digitized by Google

'obtruded itself in my mind, and I believe would 'have broken my heart, had I not taken a very 'preposterous way to ease myself. I am, indeed, 'almost ashamed to tell you; but necessity put 'it in my head.—You will think the matter too 'trifling to have been remembered, and so it surely 'was; nor should I have remembered it on any 'other occasion. You must know then, Sir, 'that my brother was always my inveterate enemy, 'and altogether as fond of my sister. He once 'prevailed with my father to let him take my 'sister with him in the chariot, and by that means 'I was disappointed of going to a ball which I 'had set my heart on. The disappointment, I 'assure you, was great at the time; but I had 'long since forgotten it. I must have been a 'very bad woman, if I had not; for it was the 'only thing in which I can remember that my 'father ever disobliged me. However, I now re-'vived this in my mind, which I artificially 'worked up into so high an injury, that I assure 'you, it afforded me no little comfort. When 'any tender idea intruded into my bosom, I im-'mediately raised this phantom of an injury in 'my imagination, and it considerably lessened the 'fury of that sorrow which I should have other-'wise felt for the loss of so good a father; who 'died within a few months of my departure from 'him.

'And now, Sir, to draw to a conclusion. One 'night as I was in the gallery at Drury-Lane 'playhouse, I saw below me, in a side-box—— '(she was once below me in every place), that 'widow whom I mentioned to you before——I 'had scarce cast my eyes on this woman, before 'I was so shocked with the sight, that it almost 'deprived me of my senses; for the villain Heb-'bers came presently in, and seated himself be-'hind her.

Digitized by Google

'He had been almost a month from me, and I 'believed him to be at his quarters in Yorkshire. 'Guess what were my sensations, when I beheld 'him sitting by that base woman, and talking to 'her with the utmost familiarity. I could not long 'endure this sight; and having acquainted my 'companion that I was taken suddenly ill, I forced 'her to go home with me at the end of the second 'act.

'After a restless and sleepless night, when I 'rose the next morning, I had the comfort to re-'ceive a visit from the woman of the house, who, 'after a very short introduction, asked me when 'I had heard from the captain, and when I ex-'pected to see him? I had not strength or spirits 'to make her any answer; and she proceeded 'thus: Indeed I did not think the captain would 'have used me so. My husband was an officer of 'the army, as well as himself; and if a body is a 'little low in the world, I am sure that is no rea-'son for folks to trample on a body. I defy 'the world to say as I ever was guilty of an ill 'thing. For heaven's sake, Madam, says I, what 'do you mean? Mean! cries she, I am sure if I 'had not thought you had been captain Hebbers's 'lady, his lawful lady too, you should never have 'set footing in my house. I would have captain 'Hebbers know, that though I am reduced to let 'lodgings, I never have entertained any but per-'sons of character.—In this manner, Sir, she ran 'on, saying many shocking things not worth re-'peating, till my anger at last got the better of my 'patience as well as my sorrow, and I pushed her 'out of the room.

'She had not been long gone before her daughter 'came to me, and after many expressions of ten-'derness and pity acquainted me, that her mother 'had just found out, by means of the captain's ser-'vant, that the captain was married to another 'lady; which, if you did not know before, madam,

Digitized by Google

'said she, I am sorry to be the messenger of such 'ill news.

'Think, Mr. Booth, what I must have endured 'to see myself humbled before such a creature as 'this, the daughter of a woman who lets lodgings! 'However, having recollected myself a little, I 'thought it would be in vain to deny any thing; 'so knowing this to be one of the best natured, 'and most sensible girls in the world, I resolved 'to tell her my whole story, and for the future to 'make her my confidante. I answered her, there-'fore, with a good deal of assurance, that she 'need not regret telling me this piece of ill news, 'for I had known it before I came to her house.

'Pardon me, madam,' replied the girl, 'you 'cannot possibly have known it so long; for he 'hath not been married above a week: last night 'was the first time of his appearing in public with 'his wife at the play. Indeed, I knew very well 'the cause of your uneasiness there; but would 'not mention——

'His wife at the play!' answered I eagerly, 'what wife! whom do you mean?'

'I mean the widow Carey, madam,' replied she, 'to whom the captain was married a few days 'since. His servant was here last night to pay for 'your lodging; and he told it my mother.'

'I know not what answer I made, or whether I 'made any; I presently fell dead on the floor, and 'it was with great difficulty I was brought back 'to life by the poor girl; for neither the mother, 'nor the maid of the house, would lend me any 'assistance, both seeming to regard me rather as 'a monster than a woman.

'Scarce had I recovered the use of my senses, 'when I received a letter from the villain, declar-'ing he had not assurance to see my face, and 'very kindly advising me to endeavour to recon-'cile myself to my family; concludiug with an 'offer, in case I did not succeed, to allow me

Digitized by Google

'twenty pounds a year to support me in some re-
'mote part of the kingdom.

'I need not mention my indignation at these
'proposals. In the highest agony of rage, I went
'in a chair to the detested house, where I easily
'got access to the wretch I had devoted to de-
'struction, whom I no sooner found within my
'reach, than I plunged a drawn penknife, which
'I had prepared in my pocket for the purpose, into
'his accursed heart. For this fact, I was immedi-
'ately seized, and soon after committed hither;
'and for this fact I am ready to die, and shall,
'with pleasure, receive the sentence of the law.

'Thus, Sir,' said she, 'I have related to you my
'unhappy story; and if I have tired your patience,
'by dwelling too long on those parts which af-
'fected me the most, I ask your pardon.'

Booth made a proper speech on this occasion, and having expressed much concern at her present situation, concluded, that he hoped her sentence would be milder than she seemed to expect.

Her reply to this was full of so much bitterness and indignation, that we do not think proper to record the speech at length; in which, having vented her passion, she all at once put on a serene countenance, and, with an air of great complacency, said, 'Well, Mr. Booth, I think I have now
'a right to satisfy my curiosity, at the expense of
'your breath. I may say it is not altogether a
'vain curiosity; for perhaps I have had inclina-
'tion enough to interest myself in whatever con-
'cerns you;—but no matter for that—those days
'(added she with a sigh) are now over.'

Booth, who was extremely good-natured and well-bred, told her, that she should not command him twice whatever was in his power; and then, after the usual apology, was going to begin his history, when the keeper arrived, and acquainted the lady that dinner was ready, at the same time

Digitized by Google

saying, 'I suppose, Madam, as the gentleman is 'an acquaintance of your's, he must dine with us 'too.'

Miss Matthews told the keeper, that she had only one word to mention in private to the gentleman, and that then they would both attend him. —She then pulled her purse from her pocket, in which were upwards of twenty guineas, being the remainder of the money for which she had sold a gold repeating watch, her father's present, with some other trinkets, and desired Mr. Booth to take what he should have occasion for; saying, 'You 'know, I believe, dear Will, I never valued money; 'and now I am sure I shall have very little use 'for it.' Booth, with much difficulty, accepted of two guineas; and then they both together attended the keeper.

CHAP. X.

Table-talk, consisting of a facetious Discourse that passed in the Prison.

THERE were assembled at the table the governor of these (not improperly called infernal) regions; the lieutenant-governor, vulgarly named the first turnkey; Miss Matthews, Mr. Booth, Mr. Robinson the gambler; several other prisoners of both sexes; and one Murphy an attorney.

The governor took the first opportunity to bring the affair of Miss Matthews upon the carpet, and then turning to Murphy, he said, 'It is very 'lucky this gentleman happens to be present; I 'do assure you, Madam, your cause cannot be in 'abler hands. He is, I believe, the best man in 'England at a defence; I have known him often 'succeed against the most positive evidence.'

Digitized by Google

'Fy, Sir,' answered Murphy, 'you know I hate all this; but if the lady will trust me with her cause, I will do the best in my power. Come, Madam, do not be discouraged; a bit of man-slaughter and cold iron, I hope, will be the worst: or, perhaps, we may come off better, with a slice of chance-medley, or *se defendendo*.'

'I am very ignorant of the law, Sir,' cries the lady.

'Yes, Madam,' answered Murphy, 'it cannot be expected you should understand it. There are very few of us who profess it, that understand the whole; nor is it necessary we should. There is a great deal of rubbish of little use, about indictments, and abatements, and bars, and ejectments, and trovers, and such stuff, with which people cram their heads to little purpose. The chapter of evidence is the main business; that is the sheet anchor; that is the rudder, which brings the vessel safe *in portum*. Evidence is, indeed, the whole, the *summa totidis*, for *de non apparentibus et non insislentibus eadem est ratio*.'

'If you address yourself to me, Sir,' said the lady, you are much too learned, I assure you, for my understanding.'

'*Tace*, Madam,' answered Murphy, 'is Latin for a candle: I commend your prudence. I shall know the particulars of your case when we are alone.'

'I hope the lady,' said Robinson, 'hath no suspicion of any person here. I hope we are all persons of honour at this table.'

'D—n my eyes!' answered a well-dressed woman, I can answer for myself and the other ladies; though I never saw the lady in my life, she need not be shy of us, d—n my eyes! I scorn to rap * against any lady.'

* A cant word, meaning to swear, or rather to perjure yourself.

Digitized by Google

'D—n me, Madam!' cried another female, 'I 'honour what you have done. I once put a knife 'into a cull myself—so my service to you, Madam, 'and I wish you may come off with *se diffidendo* 'with all my heart.'

'I beg, good woman,' said Miss Matthews, 'you would talk on some other subject, and give 'yourself no concern about my affairs.'

'You see, ladies,' cried Murphy, 'the gentle-'woman doth not care to talk on this matter be-'fore company; so pray do not press her.'

'Nay, I value the lady's acquaintance no more 'than she values mine,' cries the first woman who spoke——'I have kept as good company as the 'lady, I believe, every day in the week. Good 'woman! I do not use to be so treated—If the 'lady says such another word to me, d—n me, 'I will darken her daylights. Marry, come up, 'good woman!—the lady's a whore as well as 'myself; and though I am sent hither to mill-'doll, d—n my eyes, I have money enough to buy 'it off as well as the lady herself.'

Action might perhaps soon have ensued this speech, had not the keeper interposed his authority, and put an end to any further dispute. Soon after which, the company broke up; and none but himself, Mr. Murphy, Captain Booth, and Miss Matthews remained together.

Miss Matthews then, at the entreaty of the keeper, began to open her case to Mr. Murphy, whom she admitted to be her solicitor, though she still declared she was indifferent as to the event of the trial.

Mr. Murphy having heard all the particulars with which the reader is already acquainted (as far as related to the murder), shook his head and said, 'There is but one circumstance, Madam, 'which I wish was out of the case; and that we 'must put out of it; I mean the carrying the pen-'knife drawn into the room with you; for that

Digitized by Google

'seems to imply malice prepensive, as we call it in 'the law: this circumstance, therefore, must not 'appear against you; and if the servant who was 'in the room observed this, he must be bought 'off at all hazards. All here, you say, are friends; 'therefore, I tell you openly, you must furnish me 'with money sufficient for this purpose. Malice 'is all we have to guard against.'

'I would not presume, Sir,' cries Booth, 'to in-'form you in the Law; but I have heard in case 'of stabbing, a man may be indicted upon the 'statute; and it is capital, though no malice ap-'pears.'

'You say, true, Sir,' answered Murphy; 'a man 'may be indicted *contra formam statutis;* and 'that method, I allow you, requires no malice. I 'presume you are a lawyer, Sir?'

'No, indeed, Sir,' answered Booth, 'I know 'nothing of the law.'

'Then, Sir, I will tell you—If a man be in-'dicted *contra formam statutis*, as we say, no 'malice is necessary; because the form of the 'statute makes malice; and then what we have 'to guard against, is having struck the first blow '—Pox on't, it is unlucky this was done in a room '—If it had been in the street, we could have had 'five or six witnesses to have proved the first blow, 'cheaper than I am afraid we shall get this one; 'for when a man knows, from the unhappy cir-'cumstances of the case, that you can procure no 'other witness but himself, he is always dear. It 'is so in all other ways of business—I am very im-'plicit, you see; but we are all among friends. 'The safest way is to furnish me with money 'enough to offer him a good round sum at once; 'and, I think (it is for your good I speak) fifty 'pounds is the least that can be offered him.—I 'do assure you, I would offer him no less, was it 'my own case.'

Digitized by Google

'And do you think, Sir,' said she, 'that I 'would save my life at the expense of hiring ano-'ther to perjure himself?'

'Ay, surely do I,' cries Murphy; 'for where is 'the fault, admitting there is some fault in perjury 'as you call it; and to be sure, it is such a matter 'as every man should rather wish to avoid than 'not: and yet, as it may be managed, there is not 'so much as some people are apt to imagine in it; 'for he need not kiss the book, and then pray 'where is the perjury? but if the crier is sharper 'than ordinary, what is it he kisses? is it any 'thing but a bit of calves-skin? I am sure a man 'must be a very bad Christian himself, who would 'not do so much as that to save the life of any 'Christian whatever, much more of so pretty a 'lady—Indeed, Madam, if we can make out but 'a tolerable case, so much beauty will go a great 'way with the judge and the jury too.'

The latter part of this speech, notwithstanding the mouth it came from, caused Miss Matthews to suppress much of the indignation which began to arise at the former; and she answered with a smile, 'Sir, you are a great casuist in these mat-'ters; but we need argue no longer concerning 'them; for if fifty pounds would save my life, I 'assure you, I could not command that sum. 'The little money I have in my pocket is all I can 'call my own; and, I apprehend, in the situa-'tion I am in, I shall have very little of that to 'spare.'

'Come, come, Madam,' cries Murphy,' life is 'sweet, let me tell you, and never sweeter than 'when we are near losing it. I have known many 'a man very brave and undaunted at his first 'commitment, who, when business began to 'thicken a little upon him, hath changed his 'note—It is no time to be saving in your con-'dition.'

Digitized by Google

The keeper, who, after the liberality of Miss Matthews, and on seeing a purse of guineas in her hand, had conceived a great opinion of her wealth, no sooner heard that the sum which he had in intention entirely confiscated for his own use, was attempted to be broke in upon, thought it high time to be upon his guard. 'To be sure,' cries he, 'Mr. Murphy, life is sweet, as you say, that must 'be acknowledged; to be sure life is sweet; but 'sweet as it is, no person can advance more than 'they are worth to save it. And indeed, if the 'lady can command no more money than that lit-'tle she mentions, she is to be commended for her 'unwillingness to part with any of it; for, to be 'sure, as she says, she will want every farthing of 'that, to live like a gentlewoman till she comes to 'her trial. And, to be sure, as sweet as life is, 'people ought to take care to be able to live sweetly 'while they do live; besides, I cannot help say-'ing, the lady shews herself to be what she is, by 'her abhorrence of perjury, which is certainly a 'very dreadful crime. And, though the not kis-'sing the book doth, as you say, make a great 'deal of difference; and if a man had a great while 'to live and repent, perhaps he might swallow it 'well enough; yet, when people comes to be near 'their end (as who can venture to foretel what 'will be the lady's case!) they ought to take care 'not to overburthen their conscience. I hope the 'lady's case will not be found murder; for I am 'sure I always wish well to all my prisoners, who 'shew themselves to be gentlemen, or gentlewo-'men; yet one should always fear the worst.'

'Indeed, Sir, you speak like an oracle,' answered the lady; 'and one subornation of perjury would 'sit heavier on my conscience, than twenty such 'murders as I am guilty of.'

'Nay, to be sure, Madam,' answered the keeper, 'no body can pretend to tell what provocation 'you must have had; and certainly it can never

Digitized by Google

'be imagined, that a lady who behaves herself so 'handsomely as you have done ever since you 'have been under my keys, should be guilty of 'killing a man without being very highly pro-'voked to do it.'

Mr. Murphy was, I believe, going to answer, when he was called out of the room; after which nothing passed between the remaining persons worth relating, till Booth and the lady retired back again into the lady's apartment.

Here they fell immediately to commenting on the foregoing discourse; but as their comments were, I believe, the same with what most readers have made on the same occasion, we shall omit them. At last, Miss Matthews reminding her companion of his promise of relating to her what had befallen him since the interruption of their former acquaintance, he began as is written in the next book of this history.

Digitized by Google

AMELIA.

BOOK. II.

CHAP. I.

In which Captain Booth begins to relate his History.

THE tea-table being removed, and Mr. Booth and the lady left alone, he proceeded as follows:

'Since you desire, Madam, to know the particulars of my courtship to that best and dearest of women, whom I afterwards married; I will endeavour to recollect them as well as I can, at least all those incidents which are most worth relating to you.

'If the vulgar opinion of the fatality in marriage had ever any foundation, it surely appeared in my marriage with my Amelia. I knew her in the first dawn of her beauty; and, I believe, Madam, she had as much as ever fell to the share of a woman; but though I always admired her, it was long without any spark of love. Perhaps the general admiration which at that time pursued her, the respect paid her by persons of the highest rank, and the numberless addresses which were made her by men of great fortune, prevented my aspiring at the possession of those charms which seemed so absolutely out of my

Digitized by Google

'reach. However it was, I assure you the acci-
'dent which deprived her of the admiration of
'others, made the first great impression on my heart
'in her favour. The injury done to her beauty by
'the overturning of a chaise, by which, as you may
'well remember, her lovely nose was beat all to
'pieces, gave me an assurance that the woman who
'had been so much adored for the charms of her
'person, deserved a much higher adoration to be
'paid to her mind: for that she was in the latter
'respect infinitely more superior to the rest of her
'sex, than she had ever been in the former.'

'I admire your taste extremely,' cried the lady;
'I remember perfectly well the great heroism with
'which your Amelia bore that misfortune.'

'Good heavens! Madam,' answerered he, 'what
'a magnanimity of mind did her behaviour demon-
'strate! if the world have extolled the firmness of
'soul in a man who can support the loss of fortune;
'of a general, who can be composed after the loss
'of a victory; or of a king, who can be contented
'with the loss of a crown; with what astonish-
'ment ought we to behold, with what praises to
'honour, a young lady, who can, with patience
'and resignation, submit to the loss of exquisite
'beauty, in other words to the loss of fortune,
'power, glory, every thing which human nature is
'apt to court and rejoice in! what must be the
'mind which can bear to be deprived of all these
'in a moment, and by an unfortunate trifling acci-
'dent; which could support all this, together with
'the most exquisite torments of body, and with
'dignity, with resignation, without complaining,
'almost without a tear, undergo the most painful
'and dreadful operations of surgery in such a situ-
'ation!' Here he stopt, and a torrent of tears gushed from his eyes; such tears as are apt to flow from a truly noble heart, at the hearing of any thing surprisingly great and glorious. As soon as he was able, he again proceeded thus:

Digitized by Google

'Would you think, Miss Matthews, that the 'misfortune of my Amelia was capable of any ag- 'gravation! I assure you, she hath often told me 'it was aggravated with a circumstance which 'outweighed all the other ingredients. This was 'the cruel insults she received from some of her 'most intimate acquaintance, several of whom, 'after many distortions and grimaces, have turned 'their heads aside, unable to support their secret tri- 'umph, and burst into a loud laugh in her hearing.'

'Good heaven!' cried Miss Matthews, 'what 'detestable actions will this contemptible passion 'of envy prevail on our sex to commit?'

'An occasion of this kind, as she hath since told 'me, made the first impression on her gentle 'heart in my favour. I was one day in company 'with several young ladies, or rather young 'devils, where poor Amelia's accident was the 'subject of much mirth and pleasantry. One of 'these said, she hoped Miss would not hold her 'head so high for the future. Another answered, 'I do not know Madam, what she may do with 'her head, but I am convinced she will never more 'turn up her nose at her betters. Another cried, 'What a very proper match might now be made 'between Amelia and a certain captain, who had 'unfortunately received an injury in the same 'part, though from no shameful cause. Many 'other sarcasms were thrown out, very unworthy 'to be repeated. I was hurt with perceiving so 'much malice in human shape, and cried out very 'bluntly, Indeed, ladies, you need not express 'such satisfaction at poor Miss Emily's accident; 'for she will still be the handsomest woman in 'England. This speech of mine was afterwards 'variously repeated, by some to my honour, and 'by others represented in a contrary light; indeed, 'it was often reported to be much ruder than it 'was. However, it at length reached Amelia's

Digitized by Google

'ears. She said she was very much obliged to me; 'since I could have so much compassion for her 'as to be rude to a lady on her account.

'About a month after the accident, when Ame- 'lia began to see company in a mask, I had the 'honour to drink tea with her. We were alone 'together, and I begged her to indulge my curi- 'osity by shewing me her face. She answered in 'a most obliging manner, "Perhaps, Mr. Booth, "you will as little know me when my mask is off, "as when it is on; and at the same instant un- "masked."—The surgeon's skill was the least I 'considered. A thousand tender ideas rushed all 'at once on my mind. I was unable to contain 'myself, and eagerly kissing her hand, I cried— 'Upon my soul, Madam, you never appeared to 'me so lovely as at this instant. Nothing more re- 'markable passed at this visit; but I sincerely be- 'lieve we were neither of us hereafter indifferent 'to each other.

'Many months, however, passed after this, be- 'fore I ever thought seriously of making her my 'wife. Not that I wanted sufficient love for Ame- 'lia. Indeed it arose from the vast affection I bore 'her. I considered my own as a desperate fortune, 'her's as entirely dependent on her mother, who 'was a woman, you know, of violent passions, 'and very unlikely to consent to a match so highly 'contrary to the interest of her daughter. The 'more I loved Amelia, the more firmly I resolved 'within myself, never to propose love to her se- 'riously. Such a dupe was my understanding to 'my heart; and so foolishly did I imagine I could 'be master of a flame, to which I was every day 'adding fewel.

'O Miss Matthews! we have heard of men en- 'tirely masters of their passions, and of hearts 'which can carry this fire in them, and conceal it 'at their pleasure. Perhaps there may be such;

Digitized by Google

'but if there are, those hearts may be compared,
'I believe, to damps, in which it is more difficult
'to keep fire alive than to prevent its blazing: In
'mine, it was placed in the midst of combustible
'matter.

'After several visits, in which looks and sighs
'had been interchanged on both sides, but with-
'out the least mention of passion in private, one
'day the discourse between us, when alone, hap-
'pened to turn on love; I say happened, for I
'protest it was not designed on my side, and I am
'as firmly convinced not on her's. I was now no
'longer master of myself; I declared myself the
'most wretched of all martyrs to this tender pas-
'sion; that I had long concealed it from its ob-
'ject. At length, after mentioning many particu-
'lars, suppressing, however, those which must
'have necessarily brought it home to Amelia, I
'concluded with begging her to be the confidante
'of my amour, and to give me her advice on that
'occasion.

'Amelia (O I shall never forget the dear per-
'turbation!) appeared all confusion at this instant.
'She trembled, turned pale, and discovered how
'well she understood me, by a thousand more
'symptoms than I could take notice of, in a state
'of mind so very little different from her own. At
'last, with faltering accents, she said, I had made
'a very ill choice of a counsellor, in a matter in
'which she was so ignorant.—Adding, at last, I
'believe, Mr. Booth, you gentlemen want very
'little advice in these affairs, which you all un-
'derstand better than we do.

'I will relate no more of our conversation at
'present; indeed, I am afraid I tire you with too
'many particulars.'

'O no!' answered she; 'I should be glad to
'hear every step of an amour which had so tender
'a beginning. Tell me every thing you said or
'did, if you can remember it.'

Digitized by Google

He then proceeded, and so will we in the next chapter.

CHAP. II.

Mr. Booth continues his Story. In this Chapter there are some Passages that may serve as a kind of Touchstone, by which a young Lady may examine the Heart of her Lover. I would advise, therefore, that every Lover be obliged to read it over in the Presence of his Mistress, and that she carefully watch his Emotions while he is reading.

'I WAS under the utmost concern,' cries Booth, 'when I retired from my visit, and had reflected 'coolly on what I had said. I now saw plainly 'that I had made downright love to Amelia; and 'I feared such was my vanity, that I had already 'gone too far, and been too successful. Feared! 'do I say, could I fear what I hoped? how shall I 'describe the anxiety of my mind!'

'You need give yourself no great pain,' cried Miss Matthews, 'to describe what I can so easily 'guess. To be honest with you, Mr. Booth, I do 'not agree with your lady's opinion, that the 'men have a superior understanding in the matters 'of love. Men are often blind to the passions of 'women: but every woman is as quick-sighted as 'a hawk on these occasions; nor is there one 'article in the whole science which is not under-'stood by all our sex.'

'However, Madam,' said Mr. Booth, 'I now 'undertook to deceive Amelia. I abstained three 'days from seeing her; to say the truth, I endea-'voured to work myself up to a resolution of 'leaving her for ever; but when I could not so 'far subdue my passion——But why do I talk

Digitized by Google

'nonsense, of subduing passion? I should say, 'when no other passion could surmount my love, 'I returned to visit her, and now I attempted the 'strangest project which ever entered into the 'silly head of a lover. This was to persuade 'Amelia that I was really in love in another place, 'and had literally expressed my meaning, when 'I asked her advice, and desired her to be my 'confidante.

'I therefore forged a meeting to have been be-'tween me and my imaginary mistress, since I had 'last seen Amelia, and related the particulars as 'well as I could invent them, which had past at 'our conversation.

'Poor Amelia presently swallowed this bait; 'and, as she hath told me since, absolutely be-'lieved me to be in earnest. Poor dear love! 'how should the sincerest of hearts have an idea 'of deceit? for with all her simplicity, I assure 'you she is the most sensible woman in the 'world.'

'It is highly generous and good in you,' (said Miss Matthews, with a sly sneer), 'to impute to 'honesty what others would, perhaps, call cre-'dulity.'

'I protest, Madam,' answered he, 'I do her no 'more than justice. A good heart will at all times 'betray the best head in the world.——Well, Ma-'dam, my angel was now, if possible, more con-'fused than before. She looked so silly, you can 'hardly believe it.'—

'Yes, yes, I can,' answered the lady, with a laugh, 'I can believe it.—Well, well, go on.' 'After some hesitation,' cried he, 'my Amelia said 'faintly to me, "Mr. Booth, you use me very ill; "you desire me to be your confidante, and con-"ceal from me the name of your mistress."

'Is it possible then, Madam,' answered I, 'that 'you cannot guess her, when I tell you she is one 'of your acquaintance, and lives in this town?'

Digitized by Google

"My acquaintance!" said she, "La! Mr. Booth, "—In this town! I—I—I thought I could have "guessed for once; but I have an ill talent that "way—I will never attempt to guess any thing "again." 'Indeed, I do her an injury when I 'pretend to represent her manner. Her manner, 'look, voice, every thing was inimitable; such 'sweetness, softness, innocence, modesty.—Upon 'my soul, if ever man could boast of his resolution, 'I think I might now, that I abstained from falling 'prostrate at her feet, and adoring her. However, 'I triumphed; pride, I believe, triumphed, or per-'haps love got the better of love. We once more 'parted, and I promised, the next time I saw her, 'to reveal the name of my mistress.

'I now had, I thought, gained a complete vic-'tory over myself; and no small compliments did 'I pay to my own resolution. In short, I triumphed 'as cowards and niggards do, when they flatter 'themselves with having given some supposed in-'stance of courage or generosity; and my triumph 'lasted as long; that is to say, till my ascendant 'passion had a proper opportunity of displaying 'itself in its true and natural colours.

'Having hitherto succeeded so well in my own 'opinion, and obtained this mighty self-conquest, 'I now entertained a design of exerting the most 'romantic generosity, and of curing that un-'happy passion which I perceived I had raised in 'Amelia.

'Among the ladies who had expressed the 'greatest satisfaction at my Amelia's misfortune, 'Miss Osborne had distinguished herself in a very 'eminent degree; she was, indeed, the next in 'beauty to my angel, nay, she had disputed the 'preference, and had some among her admirers, 'who were blind enough to give it in her favour.'

'Well,' cries the lady, 'I will allow you to call 'them blind; but Miss Osborne was a charming 'girl.'

Digitized by Google

'She certainly was handsome,' answered he, 'and 'a very considerable fortune; so I thought my 'Amelia would have little difficulty in believing 'me, when I fixed on her as my mistress. And 'I concluded, that my thus placing my affections 'on her known enemy, would be the surest me-'thod of eradicating every tender idea with which 'I had been ever honoured by Amelia.

'Well then, to Amelia I went; she received me 'with more than usual coldness and reserve; in 'which, to confess the truth, there appeared to me 'more of anger than indifference, and more of de-'jection than of either. After some short intro-'duction, I revived the discourse of my amour, 'and presently mentioned Miss Osborne as the 'lady whose name I had concealed; adding, that 'the true reason why I did not mention her be-'fore, was, that I apprehended there was some 'little distance between them, which I hoped to 'have the happiness of accommodating.

'Amelia answered with much gravity, "If you "know, Sir, that there is any distance between us, "I suppose you know the reason of that distance; "and then I think, I could not have expected to "be affronted by her name. I would not have "you think, Mr. Booth, that I hate Miss Osborne. "No! Heaven is my witness, I despise her too "much.—Indeed, when I reflect how much I "loved the woman who hath treated me so "cruelly, I own it gives me pain—when I lay, as "I then imagined, and as all about me believed, "on my death-bed, in all the agonies of pain and "misery, to become the object of laughter to my "dearest friend.—O Mr. Booth, it is a cruel re-"flection! and could I after this have expected "from you—but why not from you, to whom I "am a person entirely indifferent, if such a friend "could treat me so barbarously?"

'During the greatest part of this speech, the

Digitized by Google

'tears streamed from her bright eyes. I could 'endure it no longer. I caught up the word in- 'different, and repeated it, saying, Do you think 'then, Madam, that Miss Emily is indifferent 'to me?'

"Yes, surely, I do," answered she, "I know I "am; indeed, why should I not be indifferent to "you?"

'Have my eyes,' said I, 'then, declared no- 'thing?'

"O! there is no need of your eyes," answered she. "Your tongue hath declared that you have "singled out of all womankind my greatest, I will "say, my basest enemy.——I own I once thought "that character would have been no recommen- "dation to you;—but why did I think so? I was "born to deceive myself."

'I then fell on my knees before her; and forcing 'her hand, cried out, O my Amelia! I can bear no 'longer. You are the only mistress of my affec- 'tions; you are the deity I adore. In this style I 'ran on for above two or three minutes, what it is 'impossible to repeat, till a torrent of contending 'passions, together with the surprise, overpowered 'her gentle spirits, and she fainted away in my 'arms.

'To describe my sensation till she returned to 'herself, is not in my power.'—'You need not,' cries Miss Matthews.—'Oh, happy Amelia! why 'had I not been blest with such a passion?'—'I 'am convinced, Madam,' continued he, 'you can- 'not expect all the particulars of the tender scene 'which ensued. I was not enough in my senses 'to remember it all. Let it suffice to say, that 'that behaviour with which Amelia, while igno- 'rant of its motive, had been so much displeased, 'when she became sensible of that motive, proved 'the strongest recommendation to her favour; 'and she was pleased to call it generous.'

Digitized by Google

'Generous!' repeated the lady, 'and so it was 'almost beyond the reach of humanity. I question 'whether you ever had an equal.'

Perhaps the critical reader may have the same doubt with Miss Matthews; and lest he should, we will here make a gap in our history, to give him an opportunity of accurately considering whether this conduct of Mr. Booth was natural or no; and consequently, whether we have, in this place, maintained or deviated from that strict adherence to universal truth, which we profess above all other historians.

CHAP. III.

The Narrative continued. More of the Touchstone.

BOOTH made a proper acknowledgement of Miss Matthews's civility, and then renewed his story.

'We were upon the footing of lovers; and 'Amelia threw off her reserve more and more, till 'at length I found all that return of my affection 'which the tenderest lover can require.

'My situation would now have been a paradise, 'had not my happiness been interrupted with the 'same reflections I have already mentioned; had 'I not, in short, concluded, that I must derive all 'my joys from the almost certain ruin of that dear 'creature to whom I should owe them.

'This thought haunted me night and day; till 'I, at last, grew unable to support it: I therefore 'resolved in the strongest manner, to lay it before 'Amelia.

'One evening then, after the highest professions 'of the most disinterested love, in which Heaven 'knows my sincerity, I took an occasion to speak 'to Amelia, in the following manner:

Digitized by Google

"Too true is it, I am afraid, my dearest crea-
"ture, that the highest human happiness is im-
"perfect. How rich would be my cup, was it not
"for one poisonous drop which embitters the
"whole! O, Amelia! what must be the conse-
"quence of my ever having the honour to call
"you mine!—You know my situation in life, and
"you know your own: I have nothing more than
"the poor provision of an ensign's commission to
"depend on; your sole dependence is on your
"mother; should any act of disobedience defeat
"your expectations, how wretched must your lot
"be with me; O, Amelia! how ghastly an object
"to my mind is the apprehension of your distress!
"Can I bear to reflect a moment on the certainty
"of your foregoing all the conveniencies of life!
"on the possibility of your suffering all its most
"dreadful inconveniencies! what must be my mi-
"sery then, to see you in such a situation, and to
"upbraid myself with being the accursed cause of
"bringing you to it? Suppose too in such a sea-
"son, I should be summoned from you. Could I
"submit to see you encounter all the hazards, the
"fatigues of war, with me? you could not your-
"self, however willing, support them a single
"campaign. What then! must I leave you to
"starve alone, deprived of the tenderness of a
"husband, deprived too of the tenderness of the
"best of mothers, through my means? a woman
"most dear to me, for being the parent, the nurse,
"and the friend of my Amelia.——But oh! my
"sweet creature, carry your thoughts a little far-
"ther. Think of the tenderest consequences, the
"dearest pledges of our love. Can I bear to think
"of entailing beggary on the posterity of my
"Amelia? on our——Oh, Heavens! on our chil-
"dren!—On the other side, is it possible even to
"mention the word—I will not, must not, cannot,
"cannot part with you.——What must we do,
"Amelia? It is now I sincerely ask your advice."

Digitized by Google

"What advice can I give you," said she, "in "such an alternative? Would to Heaven we had "never met."

'These words were accompanied with a sigh, 'and a look inexpressibly tender, the tears at the 'same time overflowing all her lovely cheeks. I 'was endeavouring to reply, when I was inter-'rupted by what soon put an end to the scene.

'Our amour had already been buzzed all over 'the town; and it came at last to the ears of Mrs. 'Harris: I had, indeed, observed of late a great 'alteration in that lady's behaviour towards me, 'whenever I visited at the house; nor could I, for 'a long time, before this evening, ever obtain a 'private interview with Amelia; and now, it 'seems, I owed it to her mother's intention of 'overhearing all that passed between us.

'At the period then abovementioned, Mrs. 'Harris burst from the closet, where she had hid 'herself, and surprised her daughter, reclining on 'my bosom, in all that tender sorrow I have just 'described. I will not attempt to paint the rage 'of the mother, or the daughter's confusion, or 'my own. "Here are very fine doings, indeed," cries Mrs. Harris; "You have made a noble use, "Amelia, of my indulgence, and the trust I re-"posed in you.—As for you, Mr. Booth, I will "not accuse you; you have used my child, as I "ought to have expected; I may thank myself for "what hath happened;" with much more of the 'same kind, before she would suffer me to speak; 'but, at last, I obtained a hearing, and offered 'to excuse my poor Amelia, who was ready to sink 'into the earth under the oppression of grief, by 'taking as much blame as I could on myself.' Mrs. Harris answered, "No, Sir, I must say you "are innocent in comparison of her; nay, I can "say, I have heard you use dissuasive arguments; "and I promise you they are of weight. I have, "I thank heaven, one dutiful child, and I shall

Digitized by Google

'henceforth think her my only one.'—'She then 'forced the poor, trembling, fainting Amelia out 'of the room; which when she had done, she be-'gan very coolly to reason with me on the folly, 'as well as iniquity, which I had been guilty of; 'and repeated to me almost every word I had be-'fore urged to her daughter. In fine, she at last 'obtained of me a promise, that I would soon go 'to my regiment, and submit to any misery, rather 'than that of being the ruin of Amelia.

'I now, for many days, endured the greatest 'torments which the human mind is, I believe, ca-'pable of feeling; and I can honestly say, I tried 'all the means, and applied every argument which 'I could raise, to cure me of my love. And to 'make these the more effectual, I spent every night 'in walking backwards and forwards in the sight 'of Mrs. Harris's house, where I never failed to 'find some object or other, which raised some 'tender idea of my lovely Amelia, and almost 'drove me to distraction.'

'And, don't you think, Sir,' said Miss Matthews, 'you took a most preposterous method to cure 'yourself?'

'Alas, Madam,' answered he, 'you cannot see 'it in a more absurd light than I do; but those 'know little of real love or grief, who do not know 'how much we deceive ourselves when we pretend 'to aim at the cure of either. It is with these, as 'it is with some distempers of the body, nothing 'is, in the least, agreeable to us but what serves 'to heighten the disease.

'At the end of a fortnight, when I was driven 'almost to the highest degree of despair, and could 'contrive no method of conveying a letter to 'Amelia, how was I surprised when Mrs. Harris's 'servant brought me a card, with an invitation 'from the mother herself, to drink tea that even-'ing at her house!

'You will easily believe, Madam, that I did not

Digitized by Google

'fail so agreeable an appointment; on my arrival, 'I was introduced into a large company of men 'and women, Mrs. Harris and my Amelia being 'part of the company.

'Amelia seemed in my eyes to look more beau- 'tiful than ever, and behaved with all the gaiety 'imaginable. The old lady treated me with much 'civility; but the young lady took little notice of 'me, and addressed most of her discourse to ano- 'ther gentleman present. Indeed, she now and 'then gave me a look of no discouraging kind; 'and I observed her colour change more than 'once, when her eyes met mine; circumstances 'which, perhaps, ought to have afforded me suf- 'ficient comfort, but they could not allay the 'thousand doubts and fears with which I was 'alarmed; for my anxious thoughts suggested no 'less to me than that Amelia had made her peace 'with her mother at the price of abandoning me 'for ever, and of giving her ear to some other 'lover. All my prudence now vanished at once; 'and I would that instant have gladly run away 'with Amelia, and have married her, without the 'least consideration of any consequences.

'With such thoughts I had tormented myself 'for near two hours, till most of the company had 'taken their leave. This I was myself incapable 'of doing; nor do I know when I should have 'put an end to my visit, had not Dr. Harrison 'taken me away almost by force, telling me, in a 'whisper, that he had something to say to me of 'great consequence.—You know the doctor, Ma- 'dam—.'

'Very well, Sir,' answered Miss Matthews, 'and 'one of the best men in the world he is, and an 'honour to the sacred order to which he belongs.'

'You will judge,' replied Booth, 'by the sequel, 'whether I have reason to think him so.'——He then proceeded as in the next chapter.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. IV.

The Story of Mr. Booth continued. In this Chapter the Reader will perceive a Glimpse of the Character of a very good Divine; with some Matters of a very tender Kind.

'THE doctor conducted me into his study; and 'then desiring me to sit down, began, as near as 'I can remember, in these words, or at least to 'this purpose:

"You cannot imagine, young gentleman, that "your love for Miss Emily is any secret in this "place; I have known it some time, and have "been, I assure you, very much your enemy in "this affair."

'I answered, That I was very much obliged to 'him.'

"Why, so you are," replied he; "and so, per-"haps you will think yourself, when you know "all.—I went, about a fortnight ago, to Mrs. "Harris, to acquaint her with my apprehensions "on her daughter's account; for though the "matter was much talked of, I thought it might "possibly not have reached her ears. I will be "very plain with you. I advised her to take all "possible care of the young lady, and even to "send her to some place, where she might be "effectually kept out of your reach, while you "remained in the town."

'And do you think, Sir,' said I, 'that this was 'acting a kind part by me? or do you expect that 'I should thank you on this occasion?'

"Young man," answered he, "I did not in-"tend you any kindness; nor do I desire any of "your thanks. My intention was to preserve a "worthy lady from a young fellow of whom I "had heard no good character, and whom I ima-

Digitized by Google

" gined to have a design of stealing a human " creature for the sake of her fortune."

' It was very kind of you, indeed,' answered I, ' to entertain such an opinion of me.'

" Why, Sir," replied the doctor, " it is the opi- " nion which, I believe, most of you young gentle- " men of the order of the rag deserve. I have " known some instances, and have heard of more, " where such young fellows have committed rob- " bery under the name of marriage."

' I was going to interrupt him with some anger, ' when he desired me to have a little patience, ' and then informed me, that he had visited Mrs. ' Harris, with the abovementioned design, the ' evening after the discovery I have related; ' that Mrs. Harris, without waiting for his in- ' formation, had recounted to him all which had ' happened the evening before; and, indeed, she ' must have an excellent memory, for I think she ' repeated every word I said; and added, that ' she had confined her daughter to her chamber, ' where she kept her a close prisoner, and had not ' seen her since.

' I cannot express, nor would modesty suffer ' me if I could, all that now past. The doctor ' took me by the hand, and burst forth into the ' warmest commendations of the sense and gene- ' rosity which he was pleased to say discovered ' themselves in my speech. You know, Madam, ' his strong and singular way of expressing him- ' self on all occasions, especially when he is affect- ' ed with any thing. " Sir," said he, " if I knew " half a dozen such instances in the army, the " Painter should put red liveries upon all the " saints in my closet."

' From this instant, the doctor told me, he had ' become my friend and zealous advocate with Mrs. ' Harris, on whom he had at last prevailed, though ' not without the greatest difficulty, to consent to

Digitized by Google

'my marrying Amelia, upon condition that I set-
'tled every penny which the mother should lay
'down; and that she would retain a certain sum
'in her hands, which she would at any time de-
'posit for my advancement in the army.

'You will, I hope, Madam, conceive, that I
'made no hesitation at these conditions; nor need
'I mention the joy which I felt on this occasion,
'or the acknowledgement I paid the doctor, who
'is, indeed, as you say, one of the best of men.

'The next morning I had permission to visit
'Amelia, who received me in such a manner, that
'I now concluded my happiness to be complete.

'Every thing was now agreed on all sides, and
'lawyers employed to prepare the writings, when
'an unexpected cloud arose suddenly in our se-
'rene sky, and all our joys were obscured in a
'moment.

'When matters were, as I apprehended, draw-
'ing near a conclusion, I received an express, that
'a sister, whom I tenderly loved, was seized with
'a violent fever, and earnestly desired me to come
'to her. I immediately obeyed the summons,
'and, as it was then about two in the morning,
'without staying even to take leave of Amelia,
'for whom I left a short billet, acquainting her
'with the reason of my absence.

'The gentleman's house where my sister then
'was, stood at fifty miles distance, and though I
'used the utmost expedition, the unmerciful dis-
'temper had, before my arrival, entirely deprived
'the poor girl of her senses, as it soon after did of
'her life.

'Not all the love I bore Amelia, nor the tumul-
'tuous delight with which the approaching hour
'of possessing her filled my heart, could, for a
'while, allay my grief at the loss of my beloved
'Nancy. Upon my soul, I cannot yet mention
'her name without tears. Never brother and sister

Digitized by Google

'had, I believe, a higher friendship for each other.
'Poor dear girl! whilst I sat by her in her light-
'headed fits, she repeated scarce any other name
'but mine; and it plainly appeared, that when her
'dear reason was ravished away from her, it had
'left my image on her fancy, and that the last use
'she had made of it was to think on me.—"Send
"for my dear Billy immediately," she cried, "I
"know he will come to me in a moment. Will no
"body fetch him to me? pray don't kill me before
"I see him once more—You durst not use me so
"if he was here."——'Every accent still rings in
'my ears.—Oh, heavens! to hear this, and at the
'same time to see the poor delirious creature de-
'riving the greatest horrors from my sight, and
'mistaking me for a highwayman who had a little
'before robbed her.—But I ask your pardon, the
'sensations I felt are to be known only from ex-
'perience, and to you must appear dull and insipid.
'At last, she seemed for a moment to know me,
'and cried, "O heavens! my dearest brother!"
'upon which she fell into immediate convulsions,
'and died away in my arms.'

Here Booth stopped a moment, and wiped his eyes; and Miss Matthews, perhaps out of complaisance, wiped hers.

CHAP. V.

Containing strange Revolutions of Fortune.

BOOTH proceeded thus:

'This loss, perhaps, Madam, you will think had
'made me miserable enough; but Fortune did
'not think so; for on the day when my Nancy
'was to be buried, a courier arrived from Dr.
'Harrison with a letter, in which the doctor ac-
'quainted me, that he was just come from Mrs.
'Harris, when he dispatched the express; and

Digitized by Google

'earnestly desired me to return the very instant I 'received his letter, as I valued my Amelia. Though 'if the daughter,' added he, 'should take after her 'mother (as most of them do) it will be, perhaps, 'wiser in you to stay away.

'I presently sent for the messenger into my 'room, and with much difficulty extorted from 'him, that a great 'squire in his coach and six was 'come to Mrs. Harris's, and that the whole town 'said he was shortly to be married to Amelia.

'I now soon perceived how much superior my 'love for Amelia was to every other passion; poor 'Nancy's idea disappeared in a moment: I quitted 'the dear lifeless corpse, over which I had shed a 'thousand tears, left the care of her funeral to 'others, and posted, I may almost say flew, back 'to Amelia, and alighted at the doctor's house, as 'he had desired me in his letter.

'The good man presently acquainted me with 'what had happened in my absence. Mr. Winck- 'worth had, it seems, arrived the very day of my 'departure, with a grand equipage, and, without 'delay, had made formal proposals to Mrs. Harris, 'offering to settle any part of his vast estate, in 'whatever manner she pleased, on Amelia. These 'proposals the old lady had, without any delibe- 'ration, accepted, and had insisted, in the most 'violent manner, on her daughter's compliance, 'which Amelia had as peremptorily refused to give; 'insisting on her part, on the consent which her 'mother had before given to our marriage, in 'which she was heartily seconded by the doctor, 'who declared to her, as he now did to me,' "That we ought as much to be esteemed man and "wife, as if the ceremony had already past be- "tween us."

'These remonstrances, the doctor told me, had 'worked no effect on Mrs. Harris, who still per- 'sisted in her avowed resolution of marrying her 'daughter to Winckworth, whom the doctor had

Digitized by Google

'likewise attacked, telling him that he was pay-
'ing his addresses to another man's wife; but all
'to no purpose, the young gentleman was too
'much in love to hearken to any dissuasives.

'We now entered into a consultation what
'means to employ. The doctor earnestly protested
'against any violence to be offered to the person
'of Winckworth, which, I believe, I had rashly
'threatened; declaring, that if I made any at-
'tempt of that kind, he would for ever abandon
'my cause. I made him a solemn promise of for-
'bearance. At last he determined to pay another
'visit to Mrs. Harris, and if he found her obdu-
'rate, he said he thought himself at liberty to join
'us together without any further consent of the
'mother; which every parent, he said, had a right
'to refuse, but not to retract when given, unless
'the party himself, by some conduct of his, gave
'a reason.

'The doctor having made his visit with no
'better success than before, the matter now de-
'bated was, how to get possession of Amelia by
'stratagem; for she was now a closer prisoner
'than ever, was her mother's bedfellow by night,
'and never out of her sight by day.

'While we were deliberating on this point, a
'wine merchant of the town came to visit the doc-
'tor, to inform him that he had just bottled off a
'hogshead of excellent old port, of which he of-
'fered to spare him a hamper, saying, that he
'was that day to send in twelve dozen to Mrs.
'Harris.

'The doctor now smiled at a conceit which
'came into his head; and, taking me aside, asked
'me if I had love enough for the young lady to
'venture into the house in a hamper. I joyfully
'leapt at the proposal, to which the merchant, at the
'doctor's intercession, consented; for I believe,
'Madam, you know the great authority which

Digitized by Google

'that worthy man had over the whole town. The 'doctor, moreover, promised to procure a license, 'and to perform the office for us at his house, if I 'could find any means of conveying Amelia 'thither.

'In this hamper then I was carried to the house, 'and deposited in the entry, where I had not lain 'long before I was again removed and packed up 'in a cart in order to be sent five miles into the 'country; for I heard the orders given as I lay in 'the entry; and there I likewise heard that Ame-'lia and her mother were to follow me the next 'morning.

'I was unloaded from my cart, and set down 'with the rest of the lumber, in a great hall. 'Here I remained above three hours, impatiently 'waiting for the evening, when I determined to 'quit a posture which was become very uneasy, 'and break my prison; but Fortune contrived to 'release me sooner, by the following means: The 'house where I now was, had been left in the care 'of one maid-servant. This faithful creature came 'into the hall, with the footman who had driven 'the cart. A scene of the highest fondness hav-'ing past between them, the fellow proposed, and 'the maid consented, to open the hamper and 'drink a bottle together, which they agreed their 'mistress would hardly miss in such a quantity. 'They presently began to execute their purpose. 'They opened the hamper, and to their great sur-'prise discovered the contents.

'I took an immediate advantage of the conster-'nation which appeared in the countenances of 'both the servants, and had sufficient presence of 'mind to improve the knowledge of those secrets 'to which I was privy. I told them that it en-'tirely depended on their behaviour to me whe-'ther their mistress should ever be acquainted, 'either with what they had done, or with what

Digitized by Google

'they had intended to do; for that if they would 'keep my secret, I would reciprocally keep theirs. 'I then acquainted them with my purpose of lying 'concealed in the house, in order to watch an 'opportunity of obtaining a private interview with 'Amelia.

'In the situation in which these two delinquents 'stood, you may be assured it was not difficult 'for me to seal up their lips. In short, they agreed 'to whatever I proposed. I lay that evening in 'my dear Amelia's bedchamber, and was in the 'morning conveyed into an old lumber garret, 'where I was to wait till Amelia (whom the maid 'promised, on her arrival, to inform of my place 'of concealment) could find some opportunity of 'seeing me.'

'I ask pardon for interrupting you,' cries Miss Matthews, 'but you bring to my remembrance a 'foolish story which I heard at that time, though 'at a great distance from you: That an officer 'had, in confederacy with Miss Harris, broke open 'her mother's cellar, and stole away a great quan-'tity of her wine. I mention it only to shew you 'what sort of foundations most stories have.'

Booth told her he had heard some such thing himself, and then continued his story as in the next chapter.

CHAP. VI.

Containing many surprising Adventures.

'HERE,' continued he, 'I remained the whole 'day, in hopes of a happiness, the expected ap-'proach of which gave me such a delight that 'I would not have exchanged my poor lodgings 'for the finest palace in the universe.

'A little after it was dark, Mrs. Harris arrived, 'together with Amelia and her sister. I cannot

Digitized by Google

'express how much my heart now began to flut-
'ter; for as my hopes every moment increased,
'strange fears, which I had not felt before, began
'now to intermingle with them.

'When I had continued full two hours in these
'circumstances, I heard a woman's step tripping
'up stairs, which I fondly hoped was my Amelia;
'but all on a sudden the door flew open, and Mrs.
'Harris herself appeared at it, with a countenance
'pale as death, her whole body trembling, I sup-
'pose, with anger; she fell upon me in the most
'bitter language. It is not necessary to repeat
'what she said, nor indeed can I, I was so shocked
'and confounded on this occasion.—In a word,
'the scene ended with my departing without see-
'ing Amelia.'

'And pray,' cries Miss Matthews, 'how hap-
'pened this unfortunate discovery?'

Booth answered, 'That the lady at supper or-
'dered a bottle of wine, which neither myself,'
said he, 'nor the servants, had presence of mind
'to provide. Being told there was none in the
'house, though she had been before informed that
'the things came all safe, she had sent for the
'maid, who being unable to devise any excuse,
'had fallen on her knees, and after confessing her
'design of opening a bottle, which she imputed to
'the fellow, betrayed poor me, to her mistress.

'Well, Madam, after a lecture of about a quar-
'ter of an hour's duration from Mrs. Harris, I suf-
'fered her to conduct me to the outward gate of
'her court-yard, whence I set forward in a discon-
'solate condition of mind, towards my lodgings.
'I had five miles to walk in a dark and rainy night:
'But how can I mention these trifling circum-
'stances, as any aggravation of my disappoint-
'ment!'

'How was it possible,' cried Miss Matthews,
'that you could be got out of the house without
'seeing Miss Harris?'

Digitized by Google

'I assure you, Madam,' answered Booth, 'I have 'often wondered at it myself; but my spirits were 'so much sunk at the sight of her mother, that no 'man was ever a greater coward than I was at that 'instant. Indeed, I believe my tender concern for 'the terrors of Amelia were the principal cause of 'my submission. However it was, I left the house, 'and walked about a hundred yards, when, at the 'corner of the garden wall, a female voice, in a 'whisper, cried out, "Mr. Booth." The person 'was extremely near me, but it was so dark I could 'scarce see her; nor could I, in the confusion I 'was in, immediately recognize the voice. I an-'swered in a line of Congreve's, which burst from 'my lips spontaneously; for I am sure I had no 'intention to quote plays at that time:

"Who calls the wretched thing that was Al-'phonso?"

'Upon which a woman leapt into my arms, 'crying out—"O! it is indeed my Alphonso, my 'only Alphonso!"——O Miss Matthews! guess 'what I felt when I found I had my Amelia in my 'arms. I embraced her with an ecstacy not to be 'described, at the same instant pouring a thousand 'tendernesses into her ears; at least, if I could 'express so many to her in a minute; for in that 'time the alarm began at the house, Mrs. Harris 'had missed her daughter, and the court was pre-'sently full of lights and noises of all kinds.

'I now lifted Amelia over a gate, and, jumping 'after, we crept along together by the side of a 'hedge, a different way from what led to the town, 'as I imagined that would be the road through 'which they would pursue us. In this opinion I 'was right; for we heard them pass along that 'road, and the voice of Mrs. Harris herself, who 'ran with the rest, notwithstanding the darkness 'and the rain. By these means we luckily made 'our escape, and, clambering over a hedge and 'ditch, my Amelia performing the part of a he-

Digitized by Google

'roine all the way; we at length arrived at a little 'green lane, where stood a vast spreading oak, 'under which we sheltered ourselves from a vio-'lent storm.

'When this was over, and the moon began to 'appear, Amelia declared, she knew very well 'where she was; and a little farther, striking into 'another lane, to the right, she said, that would 'lead us to a house where we should be both safe 'and unsuspected. I followed her directions, and 'we at length came to a little cottage about three 'miles distant from Mrs. Harris's house.

'As it now rained very violently, we entered this 'cottage, in which we espied a light, without any 'ceremony. Here we found an elderly woman sit-'ting by herself at a little fire, who had no sooner 'viewed us, than she instantly sprung from her 'seat, and starting back, gave the strongest tokens 'of amazement; upon which Amelia said, "Be "not surprised, nurse, though you see me in a "strange pickle I own." The old woman, after 'having several times blessed herself, and expressed 'the most tender concern for the lady, who stood 'dripping before her, began to bestir herself in 'making up the fire; at the same time intreating 'Amelia, that she might be permitted to furnish 'her with some clothes, which, she said, though 'not fine, were clean and wholesome, and much 'dryer than her own. I seconded this motion so 'vehemently, that Amelia, though she declared 'herself under no apprehension of catching cold '(she hath indeed the best constitution in the 'world), at last consented, and I retired without 'doors, under a shed, to give my angel an oppor-'tunity of dressing herself in the only room which 'the cottage afforded below stairs.

'At my return into the room, Amelia insisted 'on my exchanging my coat for one which be-'longed to the old woman's son.'——'I am very 'glad,' cried Miss Matthews, 'to find she did not

Digitized by Google

'forget you. I own, I thought it somewhat cruel 'to turn you out into the rain.'——'O Miss Mat-'thews!' continued he, taking no notice of her observation, 'I had now an opportunity of con-'templating the vast power of exquisite beauty; 'which nothing almost can add to or diminish. 'Amelia, in the poor rags of her old nurse, looked 'scarce less beautiful than I have seen her appear 'at a ball or an assembly.'—'Well, well,' cries Miss Matthews; 'to be sure she did;—but pray 'go on with your story.'

'The old woman,' continued he, 'after having 'equipped us as well as she could, and placed our 'wet clothes before the fire, began to grow inqui-'sitive; and after some ejaculations, she cried— "O my dear young Madam! my mind misgives "me hugeously, and pray who is this fine young "gentleman? Oh! Miss Emmy, Miss Emmy, I "am afraid Madam knows nothing of all this "matter." 'Suppose he should be my husband, 'nurse,' answered Amelia,——"Oh! good! and "if he be," replies the nurse, "I hope he is some "great gentleman or other, with a vast estate, "and a coach and six: for to be sure, if an he "was the greatest lord in the land, you would de-"serve it all."—'But why do I attempt to mimic "the honest creature. In short, she discovered the 'greatest affection for my Amelia: with which I 'was much more delighted than I was offended "at the suspicions she shewed of me, or the many 'bitter curses which she denounced against me, if 'I ever proved a bad husband to so sweet a young 'lady.

'I so well improved the hint given me by Ame-'lia, that the old woman had no doubt of our be-'ing really married; and comforting herself, that 'if it was not as well as it might have been, yet 'Madam had enough for us both, and that hap-"piness did not always depend on great riches, she "began to rail at the old lady for having turned

Digitized by Google

'us out of doors, which I scarce told an untruth 'in asserting. And when Amelia said, "She hoped "her nurse would not betray her."—The good 'woman answered with much warmth,—"Betray "you, my dear young madam! no, that I would "not, if the king would give me all that he is 'worth: No, not if Madam herself would give me "the great house, and the whole farm belonging "to it."

'The good woman then went out and fetched a 'chicken from the roost, which she killed, and 'began to pick, without asking any questions. 'Then summoning her son, who was in bed, to 'her assistance, she began to prepare this chicken 'for our supper. This she afterwards set before 'us in so neat, I may almost say, elegant a man-'ner, that whoever would have disdained it, either 'doth not know the sensation of hunger, or doth 'not deserve to have it gratified. Our food was 'attended with some ale, which our kind hostess 'said she intended not to have tapped till Christ-'mas; "but," added she, "I little thought ever "to have the honour of seeing my dear honoured "lady in this poor place."

'For my own part, no human being was then 'an object of envy to me; and even Amelia seem-'ed to be in pretty good spirits; she softly whis-'pered to me, that she perceived there might be 'happiness in a cottage.'

'A cottage!' cries Miss Matthews, sighing, 'a 'cottage with the man one loves is a palace.'

'When supper was ended,' continued Booth, 'the good woman began to think of our further 'wants, and very earnestly recommended her bed 'to us, saying, it was a very neat, though homely 'one, and that she could furnish us with a pair 'of clean sheets. She added some persuasives 'which painted my angel all over with vermillion. 'As for myself, I behaved so awkwardly and fool-'ishly, and so readily agreed to Amelia's resolu-

Digitized by Google

'tion of sitting up all night, that if it did not give 'the nurse any suspicion of our marriage, it ought 'to have inspired her with the utmost contempt 'for me.

'We both endeavoured to prevail with nurse to 'retire to her own bed, but found it utterly im- 'possible to succeed; she thanked heaven she 'understood breeding better than that.' And so 'well bred was the good woman, that we could 'scarce get her out of the room the whole night. 'Luckily for us, we both understood French, by 'means of which we consulted together, even in 'her presence, upon the measures we were to take 'in our present exigency. At length it was re- 'solved that I should send a letter by this young 'lad, whom I have just before mentioned, to our 'worthy friend the doctor, desiring his company 'at our hut, since we thought it utterly unsafe to 'venture to the town, which we knew would be 'in an uproar on our account before the morn- 'ing.'

Here Booth made a full stop, smiled, and then said, he was going to mention so ridiculous a distress, that he could scarce think of it without laughing.—What this was, the reader shall know in the next chapter.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VII.

The Story of Booth continued. More surprising Adventures.

'FROM what trifles dear Miss Matthews, cried Booth, 'may some of our greatest distresses arise! 'Do you not perceive I am going to tell you we 'had neither pen, ink, nor paper in our present 'exigency?

'A verbal message was now our only resource; 'however we contrived to deliver it in such terms, 'that neither nurse nor her son could possibly 'conceive any suspicion from it of the present 'situation of our affairs. Indeed, Amelia whis-'pered me, I might safely place any degree of 'confidence in the lad; for he had been her foster 'brother, and she had a great opinion of his inte-'grity. He was in truth a boy of very good na-'tural parts; and Dr. Harrison, who had received 'him into his family, at Amelia's recommendation, 'had bred him up to write and read very well, and 'had taken some pains to infuse into him the prin-'ciples of honesty and religion. He was not, in-'deed, even now discharged from the doctor's ser-'vice; but had been at home with his mother for 'some time, on account of the small-pox, from 'which he was lately recovered.

'I have said so much,' continued Booth, 'of the 'boy's character, that you may not be surprised 'at some stories which I shall tell you of him 'hereafter.

'I am going, now, Madam, to relate to you one 'of those strange accidents, which are produced 'by such a train of circumstances, that mere 'chance hath been thought incapable of bringing 'them together; and which have therefore given

Digitized by Google

'birth in superstitious minds, to Fortune, and to 'several other imaginary beings.

'We were now impatiently expecting the arrival 'of the doctor; our messenger had been gone 'much more than a sufficient time, which to us, 'you may be assured, appeared not at all shorter 'than it was, when nurse, who had gone out of 'doors on some errand, came running hastily to 'us, crying out, "O my dear young madam, her 'ladyship's coach is just at the door!" Amelia 'turned pale as death at these words; indeed, I 'feared she would have fainted, if I could be said 'to fear, who had scarce any of my senses left, 'and was in a condition little better than my 'angel's.

'While we were both in this dreadful situation, 'Amelia fallen back in her chair with the coun-'tenance in which ghosts are painted, myself at 'her feet, with a complexion of no very different 'colour, and nurse screaming out, and throwing 'water in Amelia's face, Mrs. Harris entered the 'room. At the sight of this scene, she threw her-'self likewise into a chair, and called immediately 'for a glass of water, which Miss Betty her 'daughter supplied her with; for, as to nurse, 'nothing was capable of making any impression 'on her, whilst she apprehended her young mis-'tress to be in danger.

'The doctor had now entered the room, and 'coming immediately up to Amelia, after some 'expressions of surprise, he took her by the hand, 'called her his little sugar-plumb, and assured her 'there were none but friends present. He then 'led her tottering across the room to Mrs. Harris. 'Amelia then fell upon her knees before her 'mother; but the doctor caught her up, saying, "Use that posture, child, only to the Almighty;" 'but I need not mention this singularity of his to 'you who know him so well, and must have heard

Digitized by Google

'him often dispute against addressing ourselves 'to man in the humblest posture which we use 'towards the Supreme Being.

'I will tire you with no more particulars; we 'were soon satisfied that the doctor had recon- 'ciled us and our affairs to Mrs. Harris; and we 'now proceeded directly to church, the doctor 'having before provided a license for us.'

'But where is the strange accident,' cries Miss Matthews? 'sure you have raised more curiosity 'than you have satisfied.'

'Indeed, Madam,' answered he, 'your reproof 'is just; I had like to have forgotten it; but you 'cannot wonder at me when you reflect on that in- 'teresting part of my story, which I am now re- 'lating.—But before I mention this accident, I 'must tell you what happened after Amelia's escape 'from her mother's house. Mrs. Harris at first 'ran out into the lane among her servants, and 'pursued us (so she imagined) along the road 'leading to the town; but that being very dirty, 'and a violent storm of rain coming, she took 'shelter in an alehouse, about half a mile from her 'own house, whither she sent for her coach; she 'then drove together with her daughter to town, 'where soon after her arrival, she sent for the 'doctor, her usual privy counsellor in all her 'affairs. They sat up all night together, the 'doctor endeavouring, by arguments and per- 'suasions, to bring Mrs. Harris to reason; but 'all to no purpose, though, as he hath informed 'me, Miss Betty seconded him with the warmest 'entreaties.'

Here Miss Matthews laughed; of which Booth begged to know the reason; she, at last, after many apologies, said, 'It was the first good thing 'she ever heard of Miss Betty; nay,' said she, 'and asking your pardon for my opinion of your 'sister, since you will have it, I always conceived 'her to be the deepest of hypocrites.'

Digitized by Google

Booth fetched a sigh, and said, he was afraid she had not always acted so kindly;—and then, after a little hesitation, proceeded:

'You will be pleased, Madam, to remember, the 'lad was sent with a verbal message to the doctor; 'which message was no more than to acquaint him 'where we were, and to desire the favour of his 'company, or that he would send a coach to 'bring us to whatever place he would please to 'meet us at. This message was to be delivered 'to the doctor himself, and the messenger was 'ordered, if he found him not at home, to go to 'him wherever he was. He fulfilled his orders, 'and told it to the doctor in the presence of Mrs. 'Harris.'

'Oh, the ideot!' cries Miss Matthews. 'Not 'at all,' answered Booth: 'he is a very sensible 'fellow, as you will, perhaps, say hereafter. He 'had not the least reason to suspect that any 'secrecy was necessary; for we took the utmost 'care he should not suspect it.—Well, Madam, 'this accident, which appeared so unfortunate, 'turned in the highest degree to our advantage. 'Mrs. Harris no sooner heard the message deli- 'vered, than she fell into the most violent passion 'imaginable, and accused the doctor of being in 'the plot, and of having confederated with me in 'the design of carrying off her daughter.

'The doctor, who had hitherto used only sooth- 'ing methods, now talked in a different strain. He 'confessed the accusation, and justified his con- 'duct. He said he was no meddler in the family 'affairs of others, nor should he have concerned 'himself with hers, but at her own request; but 'that since Mrs. Harris herself had made him an 'agent in this matter, he would take care to acquit 'himself with honour, and above all things to pre- 'serve a young lady for whom he had the highest 'esteem; "for she is," cries he, and, by heavens,

Digitized by Google

'he said true, "the most worthy, generous, and "noble of all human beings." You have your-'self, Madam, said he, consented to the match. 'I have, at your request, made the match; and 'then he added some particulars relating to his 'opinion of me, which my modesty forbids me to 'repeat.'—'Nay, but,' cries Miss Matthews, 'I in-'sist on your conquest of that modesty for once. 'We women do not love to hear one another's 'praises, and I will be made amends by hearing 'the praises of a man, and of a man, whom, per-'haps,' added she with a leer, 'I shall not think 'much the better of upon that account.'—'In 'obedience to your commands then, Madam,' continued he, 'the doctor was so kind to say, he 'had inquired into my character, and had found 'that I had been a dutiful son, and an affectionate 'brother. Relations, said he, in which, whoever 'discharges his duty well, gives us a well-grounded 'hope, that he will behave as properly in all the 'rest.——He concluded with saying, that Ame-'lia's happiness, her heart, nay, her very reputa-'tion, were all concerned in this matter, to which, 'as he had been made instrumental, he was re-'solved to carry her through it; and then taking 'the license from his pocket, declared to Mrs. Har-'ris, that he would go that instant and marry her 'daughter wherever he found her. This speech, 'the doctor's voice, his look, and his behaviour, all 'which are sufficiently calculated to inspire awe, 'and even terror, when he pleases, frightened poor 'Mrs. Harris, and wrought a more sensible effect 'than it was in his power to produce by all his 'arguments and entreaties; and I have already 'related what followed.

'Thus the strange accident of our wanting pen, 'ink, and paper, and our not trusting the boy 'with our secret, occasioned the discovery to Mrs. 'Harris; that discovery put the doctor upon his

Digitized by Google

'metal, and produced that blessed event which I 'have recounted to you, and which, as my mother 'hath since confessed, nothing but the spirit 'which he had exerted after the discovery, could 'have brought about.

'Well, Madam, you now see me married to 'Amelia; in which situation you will, perhaps, 'think my happiness incapable of addition. Per- 'haps it was so; and yet I can with truth say, 'that the love which I then bore Amelia, was not 'comparable to what I bear her now.' 'Happy 'Amelia!' cried Miss Matthews. 'If all men were 'like you, all women would be blessed; nay, the 'whole world would be so in a great measure; for 'upon my soul, I believe that from the damned 'inconstancy of your sex to ours proceeds half 'the miseries of mankind.'

That we may give the reader leisure to consider well the foregoing sentiment, we will here put an end to this chapter.

CHAP. VIII.

In which our Readers will probably be divided in their Opinion of Mr. Booth's Conduct.

BOOTH proceeded as follows:

'The first months of our marriage produced 'nothing remarkable enough to mention. I am 'sure I need not tell Miss Matthews that I found 'in my Amelia every perfection of human nature. 'Mrs. Harris at first gave us some little uneasiness. 'She had rather yielded to the doctor than given a 'willing consent to the match; however, by de- 'grees, she became more and more satisfied, and 'at last seemed perfectly reconciled. This we 'ascribed a good deal to the kind offices of Miss 'Betty, who had always appeared to be my friend.

Digitized by Google

'She had been greatly assisting to Amelia in mak-
'ing her escape, which I had no opportunity of
'mentioning to you before, and in all things be-
'haved so well, outwardly at least, to myself as
'well as her sister, that we regarded her as our
'sincerest friend.

'About half a year after our marriage, two ad-
'ditional companies were added to our regiment,
'in one of which I was preferred to the command
'of a lieutenant. Upon this occasion, Miss Betty
'gave the first intimation of a disposition which
'we have since too severely experienced.'

'Your servant, Sir,' says Miss Matthews, 'then
'I find I was not mistaken in my opinion of the
'lady.—No, no, shew me any goodness in a cen-
'sorious prude, and—'

As Miss Matthews hesitated for a simile or an execration, Booth proceeded: 'You will please to 'remember, Madam, there was formerly an agree-
'ment between myself and Mrs. Harris, that I
'should settle all my Amelia's fortune on her, ex-
'cept a certain sum, which was to be laid out in
'my advancement in the army; but as our mar-
'riage was carried on in the manner you have
'heard, no such agreement was ever executed.
'And since I was become Amelia's husband, not
'a word of this matter was ever mentioned by the
'old lady; and as for myself, I declare I had
'not yet awakened from that delicious dream of
'bliss in which the possession of Amelia had
'lulled me.'

Here Miss Matthews sighed, and cast the tenderest of looks on Booth, who thus continued his story:

'Soon after my promotion, Mrs. Harris one
'morning took an occasion to speak to me on this
'affair. She said, that as I had been promoted
'gratis to a lieutenancy, she would assist me with
'money to carry me yet a step higher; and if more
'was required than was formerly mentioned, it

Digitized by Google

'should not be wanting, since she was so perfectly 'satisfied with my behaviour to her daughter. 'Adding, that she hoped I had still the same in-'clination to settle on my wife the remainder of 'her fortune.

'I answered with very warm acknowledgements 'of my mother's goodness, and declared, If I had 'the world, I was ready to lay it at my Amelia's 'feet.—And so, heaven knows, I would ten thou-'sand worlds.

'Mrs. Harris seemed pleased with the warmth 'of my sentiments, and said, she would imme-'diately send to her lawyer and give him the ne-'cessary orders; and thus ended our conversation 'on this subject.

'From this time, there was a very visible alter-'ation in Miss Betty's behaviour. She grew re-'served to her sister as well as to me. She was 'fretful and captious on the slightest occasion; 'nay, she affected much to talk on the ill conse-'quences of an imprudent marriage, especially 'before her mother; and if ever any little tender-'ness or endearments escaped me in public to-'wards Amelia, she never failed to make some 'malicious remark on the short duration of violent 'passions; and when I have expressed a fond 'sentiment for my wife, her sister would kindly 'wish she might hear as much seven years hence.

'All these matters have been since suggested to 'us by reflection; for while they actually past, 'both Amelia and myself had our thoughts too 'happily engaged to take notice of what discover-'ed itself in the mind of any other person.

'Unfortunately for us, Mrs. Harris's lawyer 'happened at this time to be at London, where 'business detained him upwards of a month; and 'as Mrs. Harris would on no occasion employ any 'other, our affair was under an entire suspension 'till his return.

Digitized by Google

'Amelia, who was now big with child, had often 'expressed the deepest concern at her apprehen- 'sions of my being some time commanded abroad; 'a circumstance, which she declared if it should 'ever happen to her, even though she should not 'then be in the same situation as at present, would 'infallibly break her heart. These remonstrances 'were made with such tenderness, and so much 'affected me, that to avoid any probability of 'such an event, I endeavoured to get an exchange 'into the horse-guards, a body of troops which 'very rarely goes abroad, unless where the king 'himself commands in person. I soon found an 'officer for my purpose, the terms were agreed on, 'and Mrs. Harris had ordered the money which 'I was to pay to be ready, notwithstanding the 'opposition made by Miss Betty, who openly dis- 'suaded her mother from it; alleging that the 'exchange was highly to my disadvantage; that 'I could never hope to rise in the army after it; 'not forgetting, at the same time, some insinua- 'tions very prejudicial to my reputation as a 'soldier.

'When every thing was agreed on, and the two 'commissions were actually made out, but not 'signed by the king, one day, at my return from 'hunting, Amelia flew to me, and eagerly em- 'bracing me, cried out, "O Billy, I have news "for you which delights my soul. Nothing sure "was ever so fortunate as the exchange you have "made. The regiment you was formerly in, is "ordered for Gibraltar."

'I received this news with far less transport than 'it was delivered. I answered coldly, Since the 'case was so, I heartily hoped the commissions 'might be both signed. "What do you say?" 'replied Amelia eagerly;—"Sure you told me "every thing was entirely settled. That look of "yours frightens me to death."—But I am run-

Digitized by Google

'ning into too minute particulars. In short, I 'received a letter by that very post, from the offi- 'cer with whom I had exchanged, insisting, that 'though his majesty had not signed the commis- 'sions, that still the bargain was valid, partly 'urging it as a right, and partly desiring it as a 'favour, that he might go to Gibraltar in my 'room.

'This letter convinced me in every point. I was 'now informed that the commissions were not 'signed, and consequently that the exchange was 'not completed: of consequence the other could 'have no right to insist on going; and as for grant- 'ing him such a favour, I too clearly saw I must 'do it at the expense of my honour. I was now 'reduced to a dilemma, the most dreadful which I 'think any man can experience; in which, I am 'not ashamed to own, I found love was not so 'overmatched by honour as he ought to have 'been. The thoughts of leaving Amelia in her 'present condition, to misery, perhaps to death or 'madness, were insupportable; nor could any 'other consideration but that, which now tor- 'mented me on the other side, have combated 'them a moment.'

'No woman upon earth,' cries Miss Matthews, 'can despise want of spirit in a man more than 'myself; and yet I cannot help thinking you was 'rather too nice on this occasion.'

'You will allow, Madam,' answered Booth, 'that whoever offends against the laws of honour 'in the least instance, is treated as the highest de- 'linquent. Here is no excuse, no pardon; and he 'doth nothing who leaves any thing undone. But 'if the conflict was so terrible with myself alone, 'what was my situation in the presence of Amelia? 'how could I support her sighs, her tears, her ago- 'nies, her despair! could I bear to think myself 'the cruel cause of her sufferings, for so I was! 'could I endure the thought of having it in my

Digitized by Google

'power to give her instant relief, for so it was, 'and refuse it her!

'Miss Betty was now again become my friend. 'She had scarce been civil to me for a fortnight 'last past, yet now she commended me to the 'skies, and as severely blamed her sister, whom 'she arraigned of the most contemptible weak-'ness, in preferring my safety to my honour: She 'said many illnatured things on the occasion, 'which I shall not now repeat.

'In the midst of this hurricane, the good doc-'tor came to dine with Mrs. Harris, and at my 'desire delivered his opinion on the matter.'

Here Mr. Booth was interrupted in his narrative, by the arrival of a person whom we shall introduce in the next chapter.

CHAP. IX.

Containing a Scene of a different Kind from any of the preceding.

THE gentleman who now arrived was the keeper; or if you please, (for so he pleased to call himself) the governor of the prison.

He used so little ceremony at his approach, that the bolt, which was very slight on the inside, gave way, and the door immediately flew open. He had no sooner entered the room than he acquainted Miss Matthews, that he had brought her very good news, for which he demanded a bottle of wine as his due.

This demand being complied with, he acquainted Miss Matthews, that the wounded gentleman was not dead, nor was his wound thought to be mortal: that loss of blood, and, perhaps, his fright, had occasioned his fainting away; 'but I 'believe, Madam,' said he, 'if you take the proper 'measures, you may be bailed to-morrow. I ex-

Digitized by Google

'pect the lawyer here this evening, and if you put 'the business into his hands, I warrant it will be 'done. Money to be sure must be parted with, 'that's to be sure. People to be sure will expect 'to touch a little in such cases. For my own part, 'I never desire to keep a prisoner longer than the 'law allows, not I: I always inform them they can 'be bailed as soon as I know it. I never make 'any bargain, not I; I always love to leave those 'things to the gentlemen and ladies themselves. 'I never suspect gentlemen and ladies of wanting 'generosity.'

Miss Matthews made a very slight answer to all these friendly professions. She said, she had done nothing she repented of, and was indifferent as to the event. 'All I can say,' cries she, 'is, that if 'the wretch is alive, there is no greater villain in 'life than himself;' and instead of mentioning any thing of the bail, she begged the keeper to leave her again alone with Mr. Booth. The keeper replied, 'Nay, Madam, perhaps it may be better to 'stay a little longer here, if you have not bail 'ready, than to buy them too dear. Besides, a 'day or two hence, when the gentleman is past all 'danger of recovery, to be sure some folks that 'would expect an extraordinary fee now, cannot 'expect to touch any thing. And to be sure you 'shall want nothing here. The best of all things 'are to be had here for money, both eatable and 'drinkable; though I say it, I shan't turn my 'back to any of the taverns for either eatables or 'wind. The captain there need not have been so 'shy of owning himself when he first came in; 'we have had captains and other great gentlemen 'here before now; and no shame to them, though 'I say it. Many a great gentleman is sometimes 'found in places that don't become them half so 'well, let me tell them that, captain Booth, let me 'tell them that.'

Digitized by Google

'I see, Sir,' answered Booth, a little discomposed, 'that you are acquainted with my title as 'well as my name.'

'Ay, Sir,' cries the keeper, 'and I honour you 'the more for it. I love the gentlemen of the 'army. I was in the army myself formerly; in 'the lord of Oxford's horse. It is true I rode pri-'vate; but I had money enough to have bought 'in quarter-master, when I took it into my head 'to marry, and my wife she did not like that I 'should continue a soldier, she was all for a pri-'vate life; and so I came to this business.'

'Upon my word, Sir,' answered Booth, 'you 'consulted your wife's inclinations very notably; 'but, pray, will you satisfy my curiosity in telling 'me, how you became acquainted that I was in 'the army? for my dress, I think, could not 'betray me.'

'Betray!' replied the keeper; 'there is no be-'traying here, I hope—I am not a person to be-'tray people—But you are so shy and peery, you 'would almost make one suspect there was more 'in the matter. And if there be, I promise you, 'you need not be afraid of telling it me. You will 'excuse me giving you a hint; but the sooner the 'better, that's all. Others may be beforehand with 'you, and first come first served on these occa-'sions, that's all. Informers are odious, there's no 'doubt of that, and no one would care to be an 'informer if he could help it, because of the ill 'usage they always receive from the mob: yet it 'is dangerous to trust too much; and when safety 'and a good part of the reward too are on one 'side, and the gallows on the other—I know 'which a wise man would chuse.'

'What the devil do you mean by all this?' cries Booth.

'No offence, I hope,' answered the keeper; 'I 'speak for your good, and if you have been upon

Digitized by Google

'the snaffling lay——you understand me, I am 'sure.'

'Not I,' answered Booth, 'upon my honour.'

'Nay, nay,' replied the keeper, with a contemptuous sneer, 'if you are so peery as that comes to, 'you must take the consequence.—But for my 'part, I know I would not trust Robinson with 'twopence untold.'

'What do you mean?' cries Booth, 'who is 'Robinson?'

'And you don't know Robinson!' answered the keeper with great emotion. To which Booth replying in the negative; the keeper, after some tokens of amazement, cried out; 'Well, captain, I 'must say you are the best at it, of all the gentle-'men I ever saw. However, I will tell you this: 'the lawyer and Mr. Robinson have been laying 'their heads together about you above half an hour 'this afternoon. I overheard them mention Cap-'tain Booth several times; and for my part, I would 'not answer that Mr. Murphy is not now gone 'about the business; but if you will impeach any 'to me of the road, or any thing else, I will step 'away to his worship Thrasher this instant, and 'I am sure I have interest enough with him to 'get you admitted an evidence.'

'And so,' cries Booth, 'you really take me for 'a highwayman?'

'No offence, captain, I hope,' said the keeper: 'as times go, there are many worse men in the 'world than those. Gentlemen may be driven to 'distress, and when they are, I know no more 'genteeler way than the road. It hath been many 'a brave man's case, to my knowledge, and men of 'as much honour too as any in the world.'

'Well, Sir,' said Booth, 'I asure you I am not 'that gentleman of honour you imagine me.'

Miss Matthews who had long understood the keeper no better than Mr. Booth, no sooner heard his meaning explained, than she was fired with

Digitized by Google

greater indignation than the gentleman had expressed. 'How dare you, Sir,' said she to the keeper, 'insult a man of fashion, and who hath 'had the honour to bear his majesty's commission 'in the army? as you yourself own you know. 'If his misfortunes have sent him hither, sure we 'have no laws that will protect such a fellow as 'you in insulting him?' 'Fellow!' muttered the keeper—'I would not advise you, Madam, to use 'such language to me.'—'Do you dare threaten 'me?' replied Miss Matthews in a rage; 'Venture 'in the least instance to exceed your authority 'with regard to me, and I will prosecute you with 'the utmost vengeance.'

A scene of very high altercation now ensued, till Booth interposed, and quieted the keeper, who was, perhaps, enough inclined to an accommodation; for, in truth, he waged unequal war. He was besides unwilling to incense Miss Matthews, whom he expected to be bailed out the next day, and who had more money left than he intended she should carry out of the prison with her; and as for any violent or unjustifiable methods, the lady had discovered much too great a spirit to be in danger of them. The governor, therefore, in a very gentle tone, declared, that if he had given any offence to the gentleman, he heartily asked his pardon; that if he had known him to be really a captain, he should not have entertained any such suspicions; but the captain was a very common title in that place, and belonged to several gentlemen that had never been in the army, or at most, had rid private like himself. 'To be sure, captain,' said he, 'as 'you yourself own, your dress is not very mili-'tary;' (for he had on a plain fustian suit) 'and 'besides, as the lawyer says, *noscitur a sosir*, is a 'very good rule. And I don't believe there is a 'greater rascal upon earth than that same Robin-'son that I was talking of. Nay, I assure you, I 'wish there may be no mischief hatching against

Digitized by Google

'you. But if there is, I will do all I can with the 'lawyer to prevent it. To be sure, Mr. Murphy 'is one of the cleverest men in the world at the 'law: that even his enemies must own; and as 'I recommend him to all the business I can '(and it is not a little to be sure that arises in this 'place), why, one good turn deserves another. 'And I may expect that he will not be concerned 'in any plot to ruin any friend of mine; at least, 'when I desire him not. I am sure he could not 'be an honest man if he would.'

Booth was then satisfied that Mr. Robinson, whom he did not yet know by name, was the gamester who had won his money at play. And now, Miss Matthews, who had very impatiently borne this long interruption, prevailed on the keeper to withdraw. As soon as he was gone, Mr. Booth began to felicitate her upon the news of the wounded gentleman being in a fair likelihood of recovery. To which, after short silence, she answered, 'There is something, perhaps, which you 'will not easily guess, that makes your congratu- 'lation more agreeable to me than the first ac- 'count I heard of the villain's having escaped the 'fate he deserves; for, I do assure you, at first, it 'did not make me amends for the interruption of 'my curiosity. Now, I hope, we shall be dis- 'turbed no more, till you have finished your whole 'story.—You left off, I think, somewhere in the 'struggle about leaving Amelia, the happy Amelia.' —'And can you call her happy at such a period?' cries Booth. 'Happy, ay, happy, in any situa- 'tion,' answered Miss Matthews, 'with such a 'husband. I, at least, may well think so, who 'have experienced the very reverse of her fortune; 'but I was not born to be happy. I may say 'with the poet:

"The blackest ink of fate was sure my lot,
"And when fate writ my name, it made a blot.

Digitized by Google

'Nay, nay, dear Miss Matthews,' answered Booth, 'you must, and shall banish such gloomy 'thoughts. Fate hath, I hope, many happy days 'in store for you.'——'Do you believe it, Mr. 'Booth?' replied she, 'indeed you know the con-'trary—You must know—For you can't have for-'got. No Amelia in the world can have quite ob-'literated—Forgetfulness is not in our own power. 'If it was, indeed, I have reason to think—But I 'know not what I am saying.—Pray do, proceed 'in that story.'

Booth so immediately complied with this request, that it is possible he was pleased with it. To say the truth, if all which unwittingly dropt from Miss Matthews was put together, some conclusions might, it seems, be drawn from the whole, which could not convey a very agreeable idea to a constant husband. Booth, therefore, proceeded to relate what is written in the third book of this history.

Digitized by Google

AMELIA.

BOOK. III.

CHAP. I.

In which Mr. Booth resumes his Story.

'IF I am not mistaken, Madam,' continued Booth, 'I was just going to acquaint you with 'the doctor's opinion, when we were interrupted 'by the keeper.

'The doctor having heard counsel on both sides, 'that is to say, Mrs. Harris for my staying, and 'Miss Betty for my going, at last delivered his 'own sentiments. As for Amelia, she sat silent, 'drowned in her tears; nor was I myself in a 'much better situation.

"As the commissions are not signed," said the doctor, "I think you may be said to remain in "your former regiment; and therefore I think "you ought to go on this expedition; your duty "to your king and country, whose bread you "have eaten, requires it; and this is a duty of "too high a nature to admit the least deficiency. "Regard to your character likewise requires you "to go; for the world, which might justly blame "your staying at home, if the case was even fairly "stated, will not deal so honestly by you: you "must expect to have every circumstance against

Digitized by Google

" you heightened, and most of what makes for " your defence omitted; and thus you will be " stigmatised as a coward, without any palliation. " As the malicious disposition of mankind is too " well known, and the cruel pleasure which they " take in destroying the reputations of others; the " use we are to make of this knowledge is to afford " no handle to reproach: for, bad as the world is, " it seldom falls on any man who hath not given " some slight cause for censure, though this, per- " haps, is often aggravated ten thousand fold; " and when we blame the malice of the aggrava- " tion, we ought not to forget our own impru- " dence in giving the occasion. Remember, my " boy, your honour is at stake; and you know how " nice the honour of a soldier is in these cases. " This is a treasure, which he must be your enemy " indeed who would attempt to rob you of.—— " Therefore, you ought to consider every one as " your enemy, who, by desiring you to stay, would " rob you of your honour."

" Do you hear that, sister?" cries Miss Betty.— " Yes, I do hear it," answered Amelia, with more spirit than I ever saw her exert before, " and " would preserve his honour at the expense of my " life. I will preserve it if it should be at that ex- " pense; and since it is Dr. Harrison's opinion that " he ought to go, I give my consent. Go, my " dear husband," cried she, falling upon her knees, " may every angel of heaven guard and preserve " you."—I cannot repeat her words without being 'affected,' said he, wiping his eyes, 'the excel- 'lence of that woman, no words can paint: Miss 'Matthews, she hath every perfection in human 'nature.

'I will not tire you with the repetition of any 'more that past on that occasion; nor with the 'quarrel that ensued between Mrs. Harris and the 'doctor; for the old lady could not submit to my 'leaving her daughter in her present condition.

Digitized by Google

'She fell severely on the army, and cursed the day 'in which her daughter was married to a soldier, 'not sparing the doctor for having had some share 'in the match. I will omit, likewise, the tender 'scene which past between Amelia and myself 'previous to my departure.'

'Indeed, I beg you would not,' cries Miss Matthews, 'nothing delights me more than scenes of 'tenderness. I should be glad to know, if pos-'sible, every syllable which was uttered on both 'sides.'

'I will indulge you then,' cries Booth, 'as far 'as is in my power. Indeed, I believe, I am able 'to recollect much the greatest part; for the im-'pression is never to be effaced from my memory.'

He then proceeded as Miss Matthews desired; but lest all our readers should not be of her opinion, we will, according to our usual custom, endeavour to accommodate ourselves to every taste, and shall therefore place this scene in a chapter by itself, which we desire all our readers who do not love, or who, perhaps, do not know the pleasure of tenderness, to pass over; since they may do this without any prejudice to the thread of the narrative.

CHAP. II.

Containing a Scene of the tender Kind.

'THE doctor, Madam,' continued Booth, 'spent 'his evening at Mrs. Harris's house, where I sat 'with him whilst he smoked his pillow pipe, as 'his phrase is. Amelia was retired above half an 'hour to her chamber, before I went to her. At 'my entrance, I found her on her knees, a posture 'in which I never disturbed her. In a few minutes 'she arose, came to me, and embracing me, said 'she had been praying for resolution to support the

Digitized by Google

'cruellest moment she had ever undergone, or could 'possibly undergo. I reminded her how much more 'bitter a farewel would be on a death-bed, when 'we never could meet in this world, at least, again. 'I then endeavoured to lessen all those objects 'which alarmed her most, and particularly the dan-'ger I was to encounter; upon which head I 'seemed a little to comfort her: but the probable 'length of my absence, and the certain length of 'my voyage, were circumstances which no oratory 'of mine could even palliate. "Oh, heavens!" 'said she, bursting into tears, "can I bear to "think that hundreds, thousands, for aught I "know, of miles or leagues; that lands and seas "are between us. What is the prospect from that "mount in our garden, where I have sat so many "happy hours with my Billy? what is the dis-"tance between that and the farthest hill which "we see from thence, compared to the distance "which will be between us! you cannot wonder "at this idea; you must remember, my Billy, at "this place, this very thought came formerly into "my foreboding mind. I then begged you to "leave the army. Why would you not comply? "—did I not tell you then that the smallest cot-"tage we could survey from the mount, would be "with you a paradise to me; it would be so still "—why can't my Billy think so? am I so much "his superior in love? where is the dishonour, "Billy? or if there be any, will it reach our ears "in our little hut? are glory and fame, and not "his Amelia, the happiness of my husband? go "then, purchase them at my expense. You will "pay a few sighs, perhaps, a few tears at parting; "and then new scenes will drive away the thoughts "of poor Amelia from your bosom: but what as-"sistance shall I have in my affliction? not that "any change of scene could drive you one mo-"ment from my remembrance; yet here every "object I behold will place your loved idea in

Digitized by Google

" the liveliest manner before my eyes. This is " the bed in which you have reposed; that is the " chair on which you sat. Upon these boards you " have stood. These books you have read to me. " Can I walk among our beds of flowers, without " viewing your favourites, nay, those which you " have planted with your own hands? can I see " one beauty from our beloved mount, which you " have not pointed out to me?"—Thus she went ' on, the woman, Madam, you see, still prevailing.' —'Since you mention it,' says Miss Matthews, with a smile, 'I own the same observation oc- ' curred to me. It is too natural to us to consider ' ourselves only, Mr. Booth.'—' You shall hear,' he cried.—' At last, the thoughts of her present ' condition suggested themselves.'——" But if," said she, " my situation, even in health, will be so " intolerable, how shall I, in the danger and ago- " nies of child-birth, support your absence!"— ' Here she stopped, and looking on me with all ' the tenderness imaginable, cried out, " And am " I then such a wretch to wish for your presence " at such a season? ought I not to rejoice that " you are out of the hearing of my cries or the " knowledge of my pains? if I die, will you not " have escaped the horrors of a parting, ten thou- " sand times more dreadful than this? go, go, my " Billy; the very circumstance which made me " most dread your departure, hath perfectly re- " conciled me to it. I perceive clearly now that I " was only wishing to support my own weakness " with your strength, and to relieve my own pains " at the price of yours. Believe me, my love, I am " ashamed of myself."—I caught her in my arms ' with raptures not to be exprest in words, called ' her my heroine; sure none ever better deserved ' that name; after which we remained for some ' time speechless, and locked in each other's em- ' braces.'—' I am convinced,' said Miss Matthews,

Digitized by Google

with a sigh, 'there are moments in life worth pur-
'chasing with worlds.'—

'At length the fatal morning came. I endea-
'voured to hide every pang of my heart, and to
'wear the utmost gaiety in my countenance.
'Amelia acted the same part. In these assumed
'characters we met the family at breakfast; at
'their breakfast, I mean; for we were both full
'already. The doctor had spent above an hour
'that morning in discourse with Mrs. Harris, and
'had in some measure reconciled her to my de-
'parture. He now made use of every art to relieve the
'poor distressed Amelia; not by inveighing against
'the folly of grief, or by seriously advising her not
'to grieve; both which were sufficiently performed
'by Miss Betty. The doctor, on the contrary, had
'recourse to every means which might cast a veil
'over the idea of grief, and raise comfortable
'images in my angel's mind. He endeavoured to
'lessen the supposed length of my absence, by dis-
'coursing on matters which were more distant in
'time. He said, he intended next year to rebuild
'a part of his parsonage-house.—"And you, cap-
"tain," says he, "shall lay the corner stone, I pro-
"mise you;" with many other instances of the
'like nature, which produced, I believe, some
'good effect on us both.

'Amelia spoke but little; indeed more tears than
'words dropt from her; however, she seemed re-
'solved to bear her affliction with resignation. But
'when the dreadful news arrived that the horses
'were ready, and I, having taken my leave of all
'the rest, at last approached her; she was unable
'to support the conflict with nature any longer;
'and clinging round my neck, she cried,—"Fare-
"wel, farewel for ever; for I shall never, never,
"see you more." At which words the blood en-
'tirely forsook her lovely cheeks, and she became
'a lifeless corpse in my arms.

Digitized by Google

'Amelia continued so long motionless, that the 'doctor, as well as Mrs. Harris, began to be under 'the most terrible apprehensions; so they informed 'me afterwards; for at that time I was incapable 'of making any observation. I had indeed very 'little more use of my senses than the dear crea-'ture whom I supported. At length, however, 'we were all delivered from our fears; and life 'again visited the loveliest mansion that human 'nature ever afforded it.

'I had been, and yet was, so terrified with what 'had happened, and Amelia continued yet so 'weak and ill, that I determined, whatever might 'be the consequence, not to leave her that day; 'which resolution she was no sooner acquainted 'with, than she fell on her knees, crying, "Good "Heaven! I thank thee for this reprieve at least. "Oh! that every hour of my future life could be "crammed into this dear day."

'Our good friend the doctor remained with us. 'He said, he had intended to visit a family in some 'affliction; but I don't know, says he, why I 'should ride a dozen miles after affliction, when 'we have enough here. Of all mankind the doc-'tor is the best of comforters. As his excessive 'good-nature makes him take vast delight in the 'office; so his great penetration into the human 'mind, joined to his great experience, renders him 'the most wonderful proficient in it; and he so 'well knows when to sooth, when to reason, and 'when to ridicule, that he never applies any of 'those arts improperly, which is almost univer-'sally the case with the physicians of the mind, 'and which it requires very great judgement and 'dexterity to avoid.

'The doctor principally applied himself to ridi-'culing the dangers of the siege, in which he suc-'ceeded so well, that he sometimes forced a smile 'even into the face of Amelia. But what most 'comforted her, were the arguments he used to

Digitized by Google

'convince her of the probability of my speedy, if 'not immediate return. He said, the general opi- 'nion was, that the place would be taken before 'our arrival there. In which case, we should have 'nothing more to do, than to make the best of our 'way home again.

'Amelia was so lulled by these arts, that she 'passed the day much better than I expected. 'Though the doctor could not make pride strong 'enough to conquer love; yet, he exalted the for- 'mer to make some stand against the latter; inso- 'much that my poor Amelia, I believe, more than 'once, flattered herself, to speak the language of 'the world, that her reason had gained an entire 'victory over her passion; till love brought up a 'reinforcement, if I may use that term, of tender 'ideas, and bore down all before him.

'In the evening, the doctor and I passed another 'half hour together, when he proposed to me to 'endeavour to leave Amelia asleep in the morn- 'ing, and promised me to be at hand when she 'awaked, and to support her with all the assist- 'ance in his power. He added, that nothing was 'more foolish, than for friends to take leave of 'each other. It is true, indeed, says he, in the 'common acquaintance and friendship of the 'world, this is a very harmless ceremony; but 'between two persons, who really love each other, 'the church of Rome never invented a penance 'half so severe as this, which we absurdly impose 'on ourselves.

'I greatly approved the doctor's proposal; 'thanked him, and promised, if possible, to put it 'in execution. He then shook me by the hand, and 'heartily wished me well, saying, in his blunt 'way; "Well, boy, I hope to see thee crowned "with laurels at thy return; one comfort I have "at least, that stone walls and a sea will prevent "thee from running away."

'When I had left the doctor, I repaired to my

Digitized by Google

'Amelia, whom I found in her chamber, em-
'ployed in a very different manner from what she
'had been the preceding night; she was busy in
'packing up some trinkets in a casket, which she
'desired me to carry with me. This casket was
'her own work, and she had just fastened it as I
'came to her.

'Her eyes very plainly discovered what had
'passed while she was engaged in her work; how-
'ever, her countenance was now serene, and she
'spoke, at least, with some cheerfulness. But
'after some time, "You must take care of this
"casket, Billy," said she.—"You must, indeed,
"Billy—for—" here passion almost choked her,
'till a flood of tears gave her relief, and then she
'proceeded—"For I shall be the happiest woman
"that ever was born when I see it again."—I told
'her, with the blessing of God that day would
'soon come. "Soon!" answered she,—"No, Billy,
"not soon; a week is an age;—but yet the happy
"day may come. It shall, it must, it will!—Yes,
"Billy, we shall meet never to part again;—even
"in this world I hope."——Pardon my weakness,
'Miss Matthews, but upon my soul I cannot help
'it,' cried he, wiping his eyes—'Well, I wonder
'at your patience, and I will try it no longer.
'Amelia tired out with so long a struggle between
'variety of passions, and having not closed her
'eyes during three successive nights, towards the
'morning fell into a profound sleep. In which
'sleep I left her—and having drest myself with all
'the expedition imaginable, singing, whistling,
'hurrying, attempting by every method to banish
'thought, I mounted my horse, which I had over
'night ordered to be ready, and galloped away
'from that house where all my treasure was de-
'posited.

'Thus, Madam, I have, in obedience to your
'commands, run through a scene, which, if it hath

Digitized by Google

'been tiresome to you, you must yet acquit me of 'having obtruded upon you. This I am convinced 'of, that no one is capable of tasting such a scene, 'who hath not a heart full of tenderness, and per- 'haps not even then, unless he hath been in the 'same situation.'

CHAP. III.

In which Mr. Booth sets forward on his Journey.

'WELL, Madam, we have now taken our 'leave of Amelia. I rode a full mile before I once 'suffered myself to look back; but now being 'come to the top of a little hill, the last spot I 'knew which could give me a prospect of Mrs. 'Harris's house, my resolution failed: I stopt and 'cast my eyes backward. Shall I tell you what I 'felt at that instant? I do assure you I am not 'able. So many tender ideas crowded at once 'into my mind, that, if I may use the expression, 'they almost dissolved my heart. And now, Ma- 'dam, the most unfortunate accident came first 'into my head. This was, that I had in the hurry 'and confusion left the dear casket behind me. 'The thought of going back at first suggested 'itself; but the consequences of that were too ap- 'parent. I therefore resolved to send my man, and 'in the mean time to ride on softly on my road. 'He immediately executed my orders, and after 'some time, feeding my eyes with that delicious 'and yet heart-felt prospect, I at last turned my 'horse to descend the hill, and proceeded about a 'hundred yards, when, considering with myself, 'that I should lose no time by a second indul- 'gence, I again turned back, and once more feast-

Digitized by Google

'ed my sight with the same painful pleasure, till 'my man returned, bringing me the casket, and an 'account that Amelia still continued in the sweet 'sleep I left her.—I now suddenly turned my horse 'for the last time, and with the utmost resolution 'pursued my journey.

'I perceived my man at his return—But be-'fore I mention any thing of him, it may be pro-'per, Madam, to acquaint you who he was. He 'was the foster-brother of my Amelia. This 'young fellow had taken it into his head to go 'into the army; and he was desirous to serve un-'der my command. The doctor consented to dis-'charge him; his mother at last yielded to his 'importunities; and I was very easily prevailed 'on to list one of the handsomest young fellows 'in England.

'You will easily believe I had some little par-'tiality to one whose milk Amelia had sucked; 'but as he had never seen the regiment, I had no 'opportunity to shew him any great mark of fa-'vour. Indeed, he waited on me as my servant; 'and I treated him with all the tenderness which 'can be used to one in that station.

'When I was about to change into the horse-'guards, the poor fellow began to droop, fearing 'that he should no longer be in the same corps 'with me, though certainly that would not have 'been the case. However, he had never men-'tioned one word of his dissatisfaction.—He is 'indeed a fellow of a noble spirit; but when he 'heard that I was to remain where I was, and that 'we were to go to Gibraltar together, he fell into 'transports of joy, little short of madness. In 'short, the poor fellow had imbibed a very strong 'affection for me; though this was what I knew 'nothing of till long after.

'When he returned to me then, as I was saying, 'with the casket, I observed his eyes all over

Digitized by Google

'blubbered with tears. I rebuked him a little too 'rashly on this occasion. Heyday! says I, what 'is the meaning of this; I hope I have not a milk-'sop with me. If I thought you would shew such 'a face to the enemy, I would leave you behind.— 'Your honour need not fear that, answered he, I 'shall find nobody there that I shall love well 'enough to make me cry. I was highly pleased 'with this answer, in which I thought I could 'discover both sense and spirit. I then asked him 'what had occasioned those tears since he had left 'me (for he had no sign of any at that time), 'and whether he had seen his mother at Mrs. Har-'ris's? He answered in the negative, and begged 'that I would ask him no more questions; adding, 'that he was not very apt to cry, and he hoped 'he should never give me such another oppor-'tunity of blaming him. I mention this only as an 'instance of his affection towards me; for I never 'could account for those tears, any otherwise than 'by placing them to the account of that distress 'in which he left me at that time. We travelled 'full forty miles that day without baiting, when 'arriving at the inn where I intended to rest that 'night, I retired immediately to my chamber, 'with my dear Amelia's casket, the opening of 'which was the nicest repast, and to which every 'other hunger gave way.

'It is impossible to mention to you all the little 'matters with which Amelia had furnished this 'casket. It contained medicines of all kinds, 'which her mother, who was the Lady Bountiful 'of that country, had supplied her with. The 'most valuable of all to me was a lock of her dear 'hair, which I have from that time to this worn in 'my bosom. What would I have then given for 'a little picture of my dear angel, which she had 'lost from her chamber about a month before? 'and which we had the highest reason in the

Digitized by Google

'world to imagine her sister had taken away; for 'the suspicion lay only between her and Amelia's 'maid, who was of all creatures the honestest, and 'whom her mistress had often trusted with things 'of much greater value; for the picture which 'was set in gold, and had two or three little 'diamonds round it, was worth about twelve 'guineas only; whereas Amelia left jewels in her 'care of much greater value.'

'Sure,' cries Miss Matthews, 'she could not be 'such a paltry pilferer.'

'Not on account of the gold or the jewels,' cries Booth. 'We imputed it to mere spite, with 'which I assure you she abounds; and she knew 'that next to Amelia herself, there was nothing 'which I valued so much as this little picture; 'for such a resemblance did it bear of the original, 'that Hogarth himself did never, I believe, draw 'a stronger likeness. Spite therefore was the only 'motive to this cruel depredation; and indeed her 'behaviour on the occasion sufficiently convinced 'us both of the justice of our suspicion, though 'we neither of us durst accuse her; and she her-'self had the assurance to insist very strongly '(though she could not prevail) with Amelia, to 'turn away her innocent maid, saying, she would 'not live in the house with a thief.'

Miss Matthews now discharged some curses on Miss Betty, not much worth repeating, and then Mr. Booth proceeded in his relation.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. IV.

A Sea-Piece.

'THE next day we joined the regiment, which 'was soon after to embark. Nothing but mirth and 'jollity were in the countenance of every officer 'and soldier; and as I now met several friends 'whom I had not seen for above a year before, I 'passed several happy hours, in which poor Ame-'lia's image seldom obtruded itself to interrupt 'my pleasure. To confess the truth, dear Miss 'Matthews, the tenderest of passions is capable of 'subsiding; nor is absence from our dearest 'friends so unsupportable as it may at first ap-'pear. Distance of time and place do really cure 'what they seem to aggravate; and taking leave 'of our friends resembles taking leave of the 'world; concerning which it hath been often said, 'that it is not death, but dying, which is terrible.' —Here Miss Matthews burst into a fit of laughter, and cried, 'I sincerely ask your pardon; but I 'cannot help laughing at the gravity of your phi-'losophy.' Booth answered, That the doctrine of the passions had been always his favourite study; that he was convinced every man acted entirely from that passion which was uppermost; 'Can I then think,' said he, 'without entertaining 'the utmost contempt for myself, that any plea-'sure upon earth could drive the thoughts of 'Amelia one instant from my mind?

'At length we embarked aboard a transport, 'and sailed for Gibraltar; but the wind, which 'was at first fair, soon chopped about; so that we 'were obliged, for several days, to beat to wind-'ward, as the sea phrase is. During this time, 'the taste which I had of a seafaring life did not 'appear extremely agreeable. We rolled up and

Digitized by Google

'down in a little narrow cabin, in which were 'three officers, all of us extremely sea-sick; our 'sickness being much aggravated by the motion of 'the ship, by the view of each other, and by the 'stench of the men. But this was but a little 'taste indeed of the misery which was to follow; 'for we were got about six leagues to the west-'ward of Scilly, when a violent storm arose at 'north-east, which soon raised the waves to the 'height of mountains. The horror of this is not 'to be adequately described to those who have 'never seen the like. The storm began in the 'evening, and as the clouds brought on the night 'apace, it was soon entirely dark; nor had we, 'during many hours, any other light than what 'was caused by the jarring elements, which fre-'quently sent forth flashes, or rather streams of 'fire; and whilst these presented the most dreadful 'objects to our eyes, the roaring of the winds, 'the dashing of the waves against the ship and 'each other, formed a sound altogether as horrible 'for our ears; while our ship, sometimes lifted 'up as it were to the skies, and sometimes swept 'away at once as into the lowest abyss, seemed to 'be the sport of the winds and seas. The cap-'tain himself almost gave all for lost, and exprest 'his apprehension of being inevitably cast on the 'rocks of Scilly, and beat to pieces. And now, 'while some on board were addressing themselves 'to the Supreme Being, and others applying for 'comfort to strong liquors, my whole thoughts 'were entirely engaged by my Amelia. A thou-'sand tender ideas crowded into my mind. I can 'truly say, that I had not a single consideration 'about myself, in which she was not concerned. 'Dying to me was leaving her; and the fear of 'never seeing her more, was a dagger stuck in my 'heart. Again, all the terrors with which this 'storm, if it reached her ears, must fill her gentle 'mind on my account, and the agonies which she

Digitized by Google

'must undergo, when she heard of my fate, gave
'me such intolerable pangs, that I now repented
'my resolution, and wished, I own I wished, that
'I had taken her advice, and preferred love and a
'cottage to all the dazzling charms of honour.

'While I was tormenting myself with those me-
'ditations, and had concluded myself as certainly
'lost, the master came into the cabin, and with a
'cheerful voice, assured us that we had escaped
'the danger, and that we had certainly past to the
'westward of the rock. This was comfortable
'news to all present; and my captain, who had
'been some time on his knees, leapt suddenly up,
'and testified his joy with a great oath.

'A person unused to the sea would have been
'astonished at the satisfaction which now discover-
'ed itself in the master or in any on board; for
'the storm still raged with great violence, and the
'daylight which now appeared, presented us with
'sights of horror sufficient to terrify minds which
'were not absolute slaves to the passion of fear;
'but so great is the force of habit, that what in-
'spires a landman with the highest apprehension
'of danger, gives not the least concern to a sailor,
'to whom rocks and quicksands are almost the
'only objects of terror.

'The master, however, was a little mistaken in
'the present instance; for he had not left the cabin
'above an hour, before my man came running to
'me, and acquainted me that the ship was half
'full of water; that the sailors were going to hoist
'out the boat and save themselves, and begged
'me to come that moment along with him, as I
'tendered my preservation. With this account,
'which was conveyed to me in a whisper, I ac-
'quainted both the captain and ensign; and we all
'together immediately mounted the deck, where
'we found the master making use of all his ora-
'tory to persuade the sailors that the ship was in
'no danger; and at the same time employing all

Digitized by Google

'his authority to set the pumps a-going, which he 'assured them would keep the water under, and 'save his dear Lovely Peggy (for that was the 'name of the ship), which he swore he loved as 'dearly as his own soul.

'Indeed this sufficiently appeared; for the leak 'was so great, and the water flowed in so plenti-'fully, that his Lovely Peggy was half filled, be-'fore he could be brought to think of quitting 'her; but now the boat was brought alongside 'the ship; and the master himself, notwithstand-'ing all his love for her, quitted his ship, and 'leapt into the boat. Every man present attempt-'ed to follow his example, when I heard the voice 'of my servant roaring forth my name in a kind of 'agony. I made directly to the ship side, but was 'too late; for the boat, being already overladen, 'put directly off. And now, Madam, I am going 'to relate to you an instance of heroic affection in 'a poor fellow towards his master, to which love 'itself, even among persons of superior education, 'can produce but few similar instances. My poor 'man being unable to get me with him into the 'boat, leapt suddenly into the sea, and swam back 'to the ship; and when I gently rebuked him for 'his rashness, he answered, He chose rather to die 'with me, than to live to carry the account of my 'death to my Amelia; at the same time bursting 'into a flood of tears, he cried, "Good Heavens! "what will that poor lady feel when she hears of "this!" 'This tender concern for my dear love 'endeared the poor fellow more to me, than the 'gallant instance which he had just before given 'of his affection towards myself.

'And now, Madam, my eyes were shocked with 'a sight, the horror of which can scarce be ima-'gined: for the boat had scarce got four hun-'dred yards from the ship, when it was swallowed 'up by the merciless waves, which now ran so

Digitized by Google

'high, that out of the number of persons which 'were in the boat none recovered the ship; though 'many of them we saw miserably perish before 'our eyes, some of them very near us, without any 'possibility of giving them the least assistance.

'But whatever we felt for them, we felt, I be-'lieve, more for ourselves, expecting every minute 'when we should share the same fate. Among the 'rest, one of our officers appeared quite stupified 'with fear. I never, indeed, saw a more miserable 'example of the great power of that passion: I 'must not, however, omit doing him justice, by 'saying, that I afterwards saw the same man be-'have well in an engagement, in which he was 'wounded. Though there likewise he was said to 'have betrayed the same passion of fear in his 'countenance.

'The other of our officers was no less stupified '(if I may so express myself) with fool-hardiness, 'and seemed almost insensible of his danger. To 'say the truth, I have, from this and some other 'instances which I have seen, been almost inclined 'to think, that the courage as well as cowardice of 'fools proceeds from not knowing what is or what 'is not the proper object of fear; indeed, we may 'account for the extreme hardiness of some men, 'in the same manner as for the terrors of children 'at a bugbear. The child knows not but that the 'bugbear is the proper object of fear, the block-'head knows not that a cannon ball is so.

'As to the remaining part of the ship's crew, 'and the soldiery, most of them were dead drunk; 'and the rest were endeavouring, as fast as they 'could, to prepare for death in the same manner.

'In this dreadful situation we were taught that 'no human condition should inspire men with ab-'solute despair; for as the storm had ceased for 'some time, the swelling of the sea began consi-'rably to abate; and we now perceived the man

Digitized by Google

'of war which convoyed us, at no great distance 'astern. Those aboard her easily perceived our 'distress, and made towards us. When they came 'pretty near, they hoisted out two boats to our as-'sistance. These no sooner approached the ship, 'than they were instantaneously filled, and I my-'self got a place in one of them, chiefly by the 'aid of my honest servant, of whose fidelity to 'me on all occasions I cannot speak or think too 'highly. Indeed, I got into the boat so much the 'more easily, as a great number on board the ship 'were rendered, by drink, incapable of taking any 'care for themselves. There was time, however, 'for the boat to pass and repass; so that when 'we came to call over names, three only, of all 'that remained in the ship, after the loss of her 'own boat, were missing.

'The captain, ensign, and myself were received 'with many congratulations by our officers on 'board the man of war.—The sea officers too, all 'except the captain, paid us their compliments, 'though these were of the rougher kind, and not 'without several jokes on our escape. As for the 'captain himself, we scarce saw him during many 'hours; and when he appeared, he presented a 'view of majesty beyond any that I had ever seen. 'The dignity which he preserved, did indeed give 'me rather the idea of a Mogul, or a Turkish 'emperor, than of any of the monarchs of Chris-'tendom. To say the truth, I could resemble his 'walk on the deck to nothing but to the image of 'Captain Gulliver strutting among the Lilliputi-'tians; he seemed to think himself a being of an 'order superior to all around him, and more espe-'cially to us of the land service. Nay, such was 'the behaviour of all the sea officers and sailors 'to us and our soldiers, that instead of appearing 'to be subjects of the same prince, engaged in 'one quarrel, and joined to support one cause;

Digitized by Google

'we landmen father seemed to be captives on 'board an enemy's vessel. This is a grievous 'misfortune, and often proves so fatal to the ser- 'vice, that it is great pity some means could not 'be found of curing it.'

Here Mr. Booth stopt a while, to take breath. We will therefore give the same refreshment to the reader.

CHAP. V.

The Arrival of Booth at Gibraltar, with what there befel him.

'THE adventures,' continued Booth, 'which 'happened to me from this day till my arrival at 'Gibraltar, are not worth recounting to you. 'After a voyage, the remainder of which was to- 'lerably prosperous, we arrived in that garrison, 'the natural strength of which is so well known 'to the whole world.

'About a week after my arrival, it was my for- 'tune to be ordered on a sally-party, in which my 'left leg was broke with a musket-ball; and I 'should most certainly have either perished mise- 'rably, or must have owed my preservation to 'some of the enemy, had not my faithful servant 'carried me off on his shoulders, and afterwards, 'with the assistance of one of his comrades, 'brought me back into the garrison.

'The agony of my wound was so great, that it 'threw me into a fever, from whence my surgeon 'apprehended much danger. I now began again 'to feel for my Amelia, and for myself on her ac- 'count; and the disorder of my mind, occasioned 'by such melancholy contemplations, very highly 'aggravated the distemper of my body; insomuch 'that it would probably have proved fatal, had it 'not been for the friendship of one Captain James,

Digitized by Google

'an officer of our regiment, and an old acquaint-
'ance, who is undoubtedly one of the pleasantest
'companions, and one of the best-natured men in
'the world. This worthy man, who had a head
'and a heart perfectly adequate to every office of
'friendship, stayed with me almost day and night
'during my illness; and by strengthening my
'hopes, raising my spirits, and cheering my
'thoughts, preserved me from destruction.

'The behaviour of this man alone is a sufficient
'proof of the truth of my doctrine, that all men
'act entirely from their passions; for Bob James
'can never be supposed to act from any motive of
'virtue or religion; since he constantly laughs at
'both; and yet his conduct towards me alone
'demonstrates a degree of goodness, which, per-
'haps, few of the votaries of either virtue or re-
'ligion can equal.'

'You need not take much pains,' answered Miss Matthews, with a smile, 'to convince me of your 'doctrine. I have been always an advocate for 'the same. I look upon the two words you men-'tion, to serve only as clokes under which hypo-'crisy may be the better enabled to cheat the 'world. I have been of that opinion ever since I 'read that charming fellow Mandevil.'

'Pardon me, Madam,' answered Booth, 'I hope 'you do not agree with Mandevil neither, who 'hath represented human nature in a picture of 'the highest deformity. He hath left out of his 'system the best passion which the mind can pos-'sess, and attempts to derive the effects or ener-'gies of that passion, from the base impulses of 'pride or fear. Whereas it is as certain that love 'exists in the mind of man, as that its opposite 'hatred doth; and the same reasons will equally 'prove the existence of the one as the existence of 'the other.'

'I don't know, indeed,' replied the lady, 'I

Digitized by Google

'never thought much about the matter. This I 'know, that when I read Mandevil, I thought 'all he said was true; and I have been often told, 'that he proves religion and virtue to be only 'mere names. However, if he denies there is any 'such thing as love, that is most certainly wrong. '—I am afraid I can give him the lie myself.'

'I will join with you, Madam, in that,' answered Booth, 'at any time.'

'Will you join with me?' answered she, looking eagerly at him—'O Mr. Booth! I know not 'what I was going to say—What—Where did you 'leave off?—I would not interrupt you—but I am 'impatient to know something.'

'What, Madam?' cries Booth, 'If I can give 'you any satisfaction.——'

'No, no,' said she, 'I must hear all, I would 'not for the world break the thread of your story '—Besides, I am afraid to ask—Pray, pray, Sir, 'go on.'

'Well, Madam,' cries Booth, 'I think I was 'mentioning the extraordinary acts of friendship 'done me by Captain James; nor can I help taking 'notice of the almost unparalleled fidelity of poor 'Atkinson (for that was my man's name), who 'was not only constant in the assiduity of his at-'tendance, but, during the time of my danger, 'demonstrated a concern for me which I can hard-'ly account for, as my prevailing on his captain 'to make him a serjeant was the first favour he 'ever received at my hands, and this did not hap-'pen till I was almost perfectly recovered of my 'broken leg. Poor fellow! I shall never forget 'the extravagant joy his halbert gave him; I re-'member it the more, because it was one of the 'happiest days of my own life; for it was upon 'this day that I received a letter from my dear 'Amelia, after a long silence, acquainting me that 'she was out of all danger from her lying-in.

Digitized by Google

'I was now once more able to perform my duty; 'when (so unkind was the fortune of war) the 'second time I mounted the guard, I received a 'violent contusion from the bursting of a bomb. 'I was felled to the ground, where I lay breath-'less by the blow, till honest Atkinson came to 'my assistance, and conveyed me to my room, 'where a surgeon immediately attended me.

'The injury I had now received was much more 'dangerous in my surgeon's opinion than the 'former; it caused me to spit blood, and was at-'tended with a fever, and other bad symptoms; 'so that very fatal consequences were appre-'hended.

'In this situation, the image of my Amelia 'haunted me day and night; and the apprehen-'sions of never seeing her more were so intoler-'able, that I had thoughts of resigning my com-'mission, and returning home, weak as I was, 'that I might have, at least, the satisfaction of 'dying in the arms of my love. Captain James, 'however, persisted in dissuading me from any 'such resolution. He told me, my honour was 'too much concerned, attempted to raise my hopes 'of recovery to the utmost of his power; but 'chiefly he prevailed on me by suggesting, that 'if the worst which I apprehended, should hap-'pen, it was much better for Amelia, that she 'should be absent than present in so melancholy 'an hour. "I know," cried he, "the extreme "joy which must arise in you from meeting again "with Amelia, and the comfort of expiring in her "arms; but consider what she herself must endure "upon the dreadful occasion, and you would not "wish to purchase any happiness at the price of "so much pain to her." This argument, at length, 'prevailed on me; and it was after many long 'debates resolved, that she should not even know 'my present condition, till my doom either for 'life or death was absolutely fixed.'

Digitized by Google

'Oh! Heavens! how great! how generous!' cried Miss Matthews. 'Booth, thou art a noble 'fellow; and I scarce think there is a woman upon 'earth worthy so exalted a passion.'

Booth made a modest answer to the compliment which Miss Matthews had paid him. This drew more civilities from the lady; and these again more acknowledgements. All which we shall pass by, and proceed with our history.

CHAP. VI.

Containing Matters which will please some Readers.

'TWO months and more, had I continued in a 'state of uncertainty, sometimes with more flat- 'tering, and sometimes with more alarming symp- 'toms; when one afternoon poor Atkinson came 'running into my room, all pale and out of breath, 'and begged me not to be surprised at his news. 'I asked him eagerly what was the matter, and if 'it was any thing concerning Amelia?——I had 'scarce uttered the dear name, when she herself 'rushed into the room, and ran hastily to me, 'crying, "Yes, it is, it is your Amelia herself!"

'There is nothing so difficult to describe, and 'generally so dull when described, as scenes of 'excessive tenderness.'

'Can you think so?' says Miss Matthews; 'surely there is nothing so charming!—O! Mr. 'Booth, our sex is d—ned by the want of tender- 'ness in yours—O were they all like you—cer- 'tainly no man was ever your equal.'

'Indeed, Madam,' cries Booth, 'you honour me 'too much—But—well—when the first transports 'of our meeting were over, Amelia began gently 'to chide me for having concealed my illness from 'her; for in three letters which I had writ her

Digitized by Google

'since the accident had happened, there was not 'the least mention of it, or any hint given by 'which she could possibly conclude I was other- 'wise than in perfect health. And when I had ex- 'cused myself, by assigning the true reason, she 'cried—"O Mr. Booth! and do you know so "little of your Amelia, as to think I could or "would survive you!—would it not be better for "one dreadful sight to break my heart all at once, "than to break it by degrees?—O Billy! can any "thing pay me for the loss of this embrace!"—— 'But I ask your pardon——how ridiculous doth 'my fondness appear in your eyes!'

'How often,' answered she, 'shall I assert the 'contrary?——What would you have me say, 'Mr. Booth? shall I tell you I envy Mrs. Booth 'of all the women in the world? would you be- 'lieve me if I did? I hope you—What am I say- 'ing?——Pray make no farther apology, but go 'on.'

'After a scene,' continued he, 'too tender to be 'conceived by many, Amelia informed me, that 'she had received a letter from an unknown hand, 'acquainting her with my misfortune, and advi- 'sing her, if she ever desired to see me more, to 'come directly to Gibraltar. She said, she should 'not have delayed a moment, after receiving this 'letter, had not the same ship brought her one 'from me written with rather more than usual 'gaiety, and in which there was not the least men- 'tion of my indisposition. This, she said, greatly 'puzzled her and her mother, and the worthy di- 'vine endeavoured to persuade her to give credit 'to my letter, and to impute the other to a spe- 'cies of wit with which the world greatly abounds. 'This consists entirely in doing various kinds of 'mischief to our fellow-creatures; by belying one, 'deceiving another, exposing a third, and draw- 'ing in a fourth to expose himself; in short, by

Digitized by Google

'making some the objects of laughter, others of 'contempt; and indeed not seldom, by subject- 'ing them to very great inconveniencies, perhaps 'to ruin, for the sake of a jest.

'Mrs. Harris and the doctor derived the letter 'from this species of wit. Miss Betty, however, 'was of a different opinion, and advised poor 'Amelia to apply to an officer whom the governor 'had sent over in the same ship, by whom the re- 'port of my illness was so strongly confirmed, 'that Amelia immediately resolved on her voyage.

'I had a great curiosity to know the author of 'this letter; but not the least trace of it could be 'discovered. The only person with whom I lived 'in any great intimacy was Captain James; and 'he, Madam, from what I have already told you, 'you will think to be the last person I could sus- 'pect; besides, he declared upon his honour, that 'he knew nothing of the matter; and no man's 'honour is, I believe, more sacred. There was 'indeed an ensign of another regiment who knew 'my wife, and who had sometimes visited me in 'my illness; but he was a very unlikely man to 'interest himself much in any affairs which did 'not concern him; and he too declared he knew 'nothing of it.'

'And did you never discover this secret?' cried Miss Matthews.

'Never to this day,' answered Booth.

'I fancy,' said she, 'I could give a shrewd guess '———What so likely as that Mrs. Booth, when 'you left her, should have given her foster-bro- 'ther orders to send her word of whatever befel 'you?—Yet stay—that could not be neither; for 'then she would not have doubted whether she 'should leave dear England on the receipt of the 'letter.—No, it must have been by some other 'means!—yet that I own appeared extremely 'natural to me; for if I had been left by such a

Digitized by Google

'husband, I think I should have pursued the same 'method.'

'No, Madam,' cried Booth, 'it must have been 'conveyed by some other channel; for my Ame-'lia, I am certain, was entirely ignorant of the man-'ner; and as for poor Atkinson, I am convinced 'he would not have ventured to take such a step 'without acquainting me. Besides, the poor fel-'low had, I believe, such a regard for my wife, 'out of gratitude for the favours she hath done 'his mother, that I make no doubt he was highly 'rejoiced at her absence from my melancholy 'scene. Well, whoever writ it, is a matter very 'immaterial; yet, as it seemed so odd and unac-'countable an incident, I could not help mention-'ing it.

'From the time of Amelia's arrival, nothing re-'markable happened till my perfect recovery, un-'less I should observe her remarkable behaviour, 'so full of care and tenderness, that it was perhaps 'without a parallel.'

'O no, Mr. Booth,' cries the lady—'It is fully 'equalled, I am sure, by your gratitude. There 'is nothing, I believe, so rare as gratitude in your 'sex, especially in husbands. So kind a remem-'brance is, indeed, more than a return to such an 'obligation; for where is the mighty obligation 'which a woman confers, who being possessed of 'an inestimable jewel, is so kind to herself as to 'be careful and tender of it? I do not say this to 'lessen your opinion of Mrs. Booth. I have no 'doubt but that she loves you as well as she is 'capable. But I would not have you think so 'meanly of our sex, as to imagine there are not a 'thousand women susceptible of true tenderness 'towards a meritorious man.——Believe me, Mr. 'Booth, if I had received such an account of an 'accident having happened to such a husband, a 'mother and a parson would not have held me a

Digitized by Google

'moment. I should have leapt into the first fish-
'ing-boat I could have found, and bid defiance to
'the winds and waves.———Oh! there is no true
'tenderness but in a woman of spirit. I would
'not be understood all this while to reflect on
'Mrs. Booth. I am only defending the cause of
'my sex; for, upon my soul, such compliments to
'a wife are a satire on all the rest of womankind.'

'Sure you jest, Miss Matthews,' answered Booth, with a smile; 'however, if you please, I' will proceed in my story.'

CHAP. VII.

The Captain, continuing his Story, recounts some Particulars which, we doubt not, to many good People, will appear unnatural.

'I WAS no sooner recovered from my indis-
'position, than Amelia herself fell ill. This, I am
'afraid, was occasioned by the fatigues which I
'could not prevent her from undergoing on my
'account; for as my disease went off with violent
'sweats, during which the surgeon strictly or-
'dered that I should lie by myself, my Amelia
'could not be prevailed upon to spend many hours
'in her own bed. During my restless fits she
'would sometimes read to me several hours to-
'gether; indeed, it was not without difficulty that
'she ever quitted my bedside. These fatigues,
'added to the uneasiness of her mind, overpow-
'ered her weak spirits, and threw her into one of
'the worst disorders that can possibly attend a
'woman. A disorder very common among the
'ladies, and our physicians have not agreed upon
'its name. Some call it the fever on the spirits,
'some a nervous fever, some the vapours, and some
'the hysterics.'

Digitized by Google

'O say no more,' cries Miss Matthews; 'I pity 'you, I pity you from my soul. A man had better 'be plagued with all the curses of Egypt than with 'a vapourish wife.'

'Pity me! Madam,' answered Booth, 'pity ra-'ther that dear creature, who, from her love and 'care of my unworthy self, contracted a distemper, 'the horrors of which are scarce to be imagined. 'It is, indeed, a sort of complication of all diseases 'together, with almost madness added to them. 'In this situation, the siege being at an end, the 'governor gave me leave to attend my wife to 'Montpelier, the air of which was judged to be 'most likely to restore her to health. Upon this 'occasion she wrote to her mother to desire a re-'mittance, and set forth the melancholy condition 'of her health, and her necessity for money, in such 'terms as would have touched any bosom not void 'of humanity, though a stranger to the unhappy 'sufferer. Her sister answered it, and I believe I 'have a copy of the answer in my pocket. I keep 'it by me as a curiosity, and you would think it 'more so, could I shew you my Amelia's letter. 'He then searched his pocket-book, and finding 'the letter among many others, he read it in the 'following words:'

"DEAR SISTER,

"My mamma being much disordered, hath "commanded me to tell you, she is both shocked "and surprised at your extraordinary request, or, "as she chuses to call it, order for money. You "know my dear, she says, that your marriage "with this red-coat man was entirely against her "consent, and the opinion of all your family (I "am sure I may here include myself in that num-"ber), and yet, after this fatal act of disobedience, "she was prevailed on to receive you as her child; "not, however, nor are you so to understand it,

Digitized by Google

"as the favourite which you was before. She "forgave you; but this was as a christian and a "parent; still preserving in her own mind a just "sense of your disobedience, and a just resent- "ment on that account. And yet, notwithstand- "ing this resentment, she desires you to remem- "ber, that when you a second time ventured to "oppose her authority, and nothing would serve "you but taking a ramble (an indecent one, I "can't help saying) after your fellow, she thought "fit to shew the excess of a mother's tenderness, "and furnished you with no less than fifty pounds "for your foolish voyage. How can she then be "otherwise than surprised at your present de- "mand? which, should she be so weak to comply "with, she must expect to be every month repeat- "ed, in order to supply the extravagance of a "young rakish officer. — You say she will com- "passionate your sufferings; yes, surely she doth "greatly compassionate them, and so do I too, "though you was neither so kind, nor so civil as "to suppose I should. But I forgive all your "slights to me, as well now as formerly. Nay, I "not only forgive, but I pray daily for you.—But, "dear sister, what could you expect less than what "hath happened? you should have believed your "friends, who were wiser and older than you. I "do not here mean myself, though I own I am "eleven months and some odd weeks your supe- "rior; though, had I been younger, I might per- "haps have been able to advise you; for wisdom, "and what some may call beauty, do not always "go together. You will not be offended at this; "for I know in your heart you have always held "your head above some people, whom perhaps o- "ther people have thought better of; but why do I "mention what I scorn so much?—No, my dear sis- "ter, Heaven forbid it should ever be said of me, "that I value myself upon my face—not but if I

Digitized by Google

" could believe men perhaps—but I hate and de-
" spise men—you know I do, my dear, and I wish
" you had despised them as much; but *jacta est*
" *alea*, as the doctor says.——You are to make
" the best of your fortune; what fortune I mean
" my mamma may please to give you, for you
" know all is in her power. Let me advise you
" then to bring your mind to your circumstances,
" and remember (for I can't help writing it, as it
" is for your own good) the vapours are a distem-
" per which very ill become a knapsack. Remem-
" ber, my dear, what you have done, remember
" what my mamma hath done, remember we have
" something of yours to keep, and do not con-
" sider yourself as an only child—No, nor as a
" favourite child; but be pleased to remember,

" Dear sister,

" Your most affectionate sister,

" And most obedient humble servant,

" E. HARRIS."

'O brave Miss Betty!' cried Miss Matthews, 'I always held her in high esteem; but I protest 'she exceeds even what I could have expected 'from her.'

'This letter, Madam,' cries Booth, 'you will 'believe was an excellent cordial for my poor 'wife's spirits. So dreadful indeed was the effect 'it had upon her, that as she had read it in my 'absence, I found her at my return home in the 'most violent fits; and so long was it before she 'recovered her senses, that I despaired of that 'blest event ever happening, and my own senses 'very narrowly escaped from being sacrificed to 'my despair. However, she came at last to her-'self, and I began to consider of every means of 'carrying her immediately to Montpelier, which

Digitized by Google

'was now become much more necessary than 'before.

'Though I was greatly shocked at the barbarity 'of the letter, yet I apprehended no very ill con- 'sequence from it; for as it was believed all over 'the army that I had married a great fortune, I 'had received offers of money, if I wanted it, from 'more than one. Indeed, I might have easily car- 'ried my wife to Montpelier at any time; but she 'was extremely averse to the voyage, being de- 'sirous of our returning to England, as I had leave 'to do; and she grew daily so much better, that 'had it not been for the receipt of that cursed— 'which I have just read to you, I am persuaded 'she might have been able to return to England 'in the next ship.

'Among others, there was a colonel in the gar- 'rison, who had not only offered but importuned 'me to receive money of him: I, now, therefore, 'repaired to him; and as a reason for altering my 'resolution, I produced the letter, and at the same 'time acquainted him with the true state of my 'affairs. The colonel read the letter, shook his 'head, and after some silence, said, he was sorry 'I had refused to accept his offer before; but that 'he had now so ordered matters, and disposed of 'his money, that he had not a shilling left to 'spare from his own occasions.

'Answers of the same kind I had from several 'others; but not one penny could I borrow of 'any; for I have been since firmly persuaded, that 'the honest colonel was not content with denying 'me himself, but took effectual means, by spread- 'ing the secret I had so foolishly trusted him with, 'to prevent me from succeeding elsewhere; for 'such is the nature of men, that whoever denies 'himself to do you a favour, is unwilling that it 'should be done to you by any other.

'This was the first time I had ever felt that

Digitized by Google

'distress which arises from the want of money;
'a distress very dreadful indeed in a married state;
'for what can be more miserable than to see any
'thing necessary for the preservation of a beloved
'creature, and not be able to supply it?

'Perhaps you may wonder, Madam, that I have
'not mentioned Captain James on this occasion;
'but he was at that time laid up at Algiers (whi-
'ther he had been sent by the governor), in a fe-
'ver. However, he returned time enough to supply
'me, which he did with the utmost readiness, on
'the very first mention of my distress; and the
'good colonel, notwithstanding his having dis-
'posed of his money, discounted the captain's
'draft. You see, Madam, an instance, in the
'generous behaviour of my friend James, how
'false are all universal satires against human kind.
'He is indeed one of the worthiest men the world
'ever produced.

'But, perhaps, you will be more pleased still
'with the extravagant generosity of my sergeant.
'The day before the return of Mr. James, the
'poor fellow came to me, with tears in his eyes,
'and begged I would not be offended at what he
'was going to mention. He then pulled a purse
'from his pocket, which contained, he said, the
'sum of twelve pounds, and which he begged me
'to accept, crying, he was sorry it was not in his
'power to lend me whatever I wanted. I was so
'struck with this instance of generosity and friend-
'ship in such a person, that I gave him an oppor-
'tunity of pressing me a second time, before I
'made him an answer. Indeed, I was greatly sur-
'prised how he came to be worth that little sum,
'and no less at his being acquainted with my own
'wants. In both which points he presently satis-
'fied me. As to the first, it seems he had plundered
'a Spanish officer of fifteen pistoles; and as to the
'second, he confessed he had it from my wife's

Digitized by Google

'maid, who had overheard some discourse be-
'tween her mistress and me. Indeed people, I
'believe, always deceive themselves, who imagine
'they can conceal distrest circumstances from
'their servants; for these are always extremely
'quicksighted on such occasions.'

'Good Heaven!' cries Miss Matthews, 'how
'astonishing is such behaviour in so low a fellow!'

'I thought so myself,' answered Booth; 'and
'yet I know not, on a more strict examination into
'the matter, why we should be more surprised to
'see greatness of mind discover itself in one degree
'or rank of life, than in another. Love, bene-
'volence, or what you will please to call it, may
'be the reigning passion in a beggar as well as in
'a prince; and wherever it is, its energies will be
'the same.

'To confess the truth, I am afraid we often
'compliment what we call upper life, with too
'much injustice, at the expense of the lower. As
'it is no rare thing to see instances which degrade
'human nature in persons of the highest birth
'and education, so I apprehend, that examples of
'whatever is really great and good, have been
'sometimes found amongst those who have wanted
'all such advantages. In reality, palaces, I make
'no doubt, do sometimes contain nothing but
'dreariness and darkness, and the sun of righte-
'ousness hath shone forth with all its glory in a
'cottage.'

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VIII.

The Story of Booth continued.

MR. Booth thus went on:

'We now took leave of the garrison, and having landed at Marseilles, arrived at Montpelier, 'without any thing happening to us worth remembrance, except the extreme sea-sickness of 'poor Amelia; but I was afterwards well repaid 'for the terrors which it occasioned me, by the 'good consequences which attended it; for I believe it contributed even more than the air of 'Montpelier, to the perfect re-establishment of 'her health.'

'I ask your pardon, for interrupting you,' cries Miss Matthews, 'but you never satisfied me whether you took the sergeant's money.——You 'have made me half in love with that charming 'fellow.'

'How can you imagine, Madam,' answered Booth, 'I should have taken from a poor fellow 'what was of so little consequence to me, and at 'the same time of so much to him?——Perhaps, 'now, you will derive this from the passion of 'pride.'

'Indeed,' says she, 'I neither derive it from the 'passion of pride, nor from the passion of folly: 'but methinks you should have accepted the offer, 'and I am convinced you hurt him very much 'when you refused it. But pray proceed in your 'story.' Then Booth went on as follows:

'As Amelia recovered her health and spirits 'daily, we began to pass our time very pleasantly 'at Montpelier; for the greatest enemy to the 'French will acknowledge, that they are the best 'people in the world to live amongst for a little 'while. In some countries it is almost as easy to

Digitized by Google

'get a good estate as a good acquaintance. In 'England, particularly, acquaintance is of almost 'as slow growth as an oak; so that the age of man 'scarce suffices to bring it to any perfection, and 'families seldom contract any great intimacy till 'the third, or at least the second generation. So 'shy indeed are we English of letting a stranger 'into our houses, that one would imagine we re-'garded all such as thieves. Now the French are 'the very reverse. Being a stranger among them 'entitles you to the better place, and to the greater 'degree of civility; and if you wear but the ap-'pearance of a gentleman, they never suspect you 'are not one. Their friendship indeed seldom ex-'tends so far as their purse; nor is such friendship 'usual in other countries. To say the truth, po-'liteness carries friendship far enough in the ordi-'nary occasions of life, and those who want this 'accomplishment, rarely make amends for it by 'their sincerity; for bluntness, or rather rude-'ness, as it commonly deserves to be called, is 'not always so much a mark of honesty as it is 'taken to be.

'The day after our arrival we became acquainted 'with Mons. Bagillard. He was a Frenchman of 'great wit and vivacity, with a greater share of 'learning than gentlemen are usually possessed of. 'As he lodged in the same house with us, we were 'immediately acquainted, and I liked his conver-'sation so well, that I never thought I had too 'much of his company. Indeed, I spent so much 'of my time with him, that Amelia (I know not 'whether I ought to mention it) grew uneasy at 'our familiarity, and complained of my being too 'little with her, from my violent fondness for my 'new acquaintance; for our conversation turning 'chiefly upon books, and principally Latin ones '(for we read several of the classics together), she 'could have but little entertainment by being with 'us. When my wife had once taken it into her

Digitized by Google

'head that she was deprived of my company by 'M. Bagillard, it was impossible to change her 'opinion; and though I now spent more of my 'time with her than I had ever done before, she 'still grew more and more dissatisfied, till, at last, 'she very earnestly desired me to quit my lodg-'ings, and insisted upon it with more vehemence 'than I had ever known her express before. To 'say the truth, if that excellent woman could ever 'be thought unreasonable, I thought she was so 'on this occasion.

'But in what light soever her desires appeared 'to me, as they manifestly arose from an affection 'of which I had daily the most endearing proofs, 'I resolved to comply with her, and accordingly 'removed to a distant part of the town; for it is 'my opinion, that we can have but little love for 'the person whom we will never indulge in an un-'reasonable demand. Indeed, I was under a dif-'ficulty with regard to Mons. Bagillard; for as I 'could not possibly communicate to him the true 'reason for quitting my lodgings; so I found it as 'difficult to deceive him by a counterfeit one; be-'sides, I was apprehensive I should have little less 'of his company than before. I could, indeed, 'have avoided this dilemma by leaving Mont-'pelier; for Amelia had perfectly recovered her 'health; but I had faithfully promised Captain 'James to wait his return from Italy, whither he 'was gone some time before from Gibraltar; nor 'was it proper for Amelia to take any long jour-'ney, she being now near six months gone with 'child.

'This difficulty, however, proved to be less than 'I had imagined it; for my French friend, whe-'ther he suspected any thing from my wife's be-'haviour, though she never, as I observed, shewed 'him the least incivility, became suddenly as cold 'on his side. After our leaving the lodgings, he

Digitized by Google

'never made above two or three formal visits; in-
'deed, his time was soon after entirely taken up
'by an intrigue with a certain countess, which
'blazed all over Montpelier.

'We had not been long in our new apartments
'before an English officer arrived at Montpelier,
'and came to lodge in the same house with us.
'This gentleman, whose name was Bath, was of
'the rank of a major, and had so much singula-
'rity in his character, that, perhaps, you never
'heard of any like him. He was far from having
'any of those bookish qualifications, which had
'before caused my Amelia's disquiet. It is true,
'his discourse generally turned on matters of no
'feminine kind; war and martial exploits being
'the ordinary topics of his conversation; how-
'ever, as he had a sister with whom Amelia was
'greatly pleased, an intimacy presently grew be-
'tween us, and we four lived in one family.

'The major was a great dealer in the marvel-
'lous, and was constantly the little hero of his
'own tale. This made him very entertaining to
'Amelia, who, of all persons in the world, hath
'the truest taste and enjoyment of the ridiculous;
'for whilst no one sooner discovers it in the cha-
'racter of another, no one so well conceals her
'knowledge of it from the ridiculous person. I
'cannot help mentioning a sentiment of hers on
'this head, as I think it doth her great honour.
"If I had the same neglect," said she, "for ri-
"diculous people with the generality of the world,
"I should rather think them the objects of tears
"than laughter; but, in reality, I have known
"several who, in some parts of their characters,
"have been extremely ridiculous, in others have
"been altogether as amiable. For instance," said
'she, "Here is the major, who tells us of many
"things which he has never seen, and of others
"which he hath never done, and both in the most

Digitized by Google

" extravagant excess; and yet how amiable is his " behaviour to his poor sister, whom he hath not " only brought over hither for her health, at his " own expense, but is come to bear her com- " pany." I believe, Madam, I repeat her very ' words; for I am very apt to remember what she ' says.

' You will easily believe, from a circumstance ' I have just mentioned in the major's favour, es- ' pecially when I have told you that his sister was ' one of the best of girls, that it was entirely ne- ' cessary to hide from her all kind of laughter at ' any part of her brother's behaviour. To say ' the truth, this was easy enough to do; for the ' poor girl was so blinded with love and gratitude, ' and so highly honoured and reverenced her bro- ' ther, that she had not the least suspicion that ' there was a person in the world capable of ' laughing at him.

' Indeed, I am certain she never made the least ' discovery of our ridicule; for I am well con- ' vinced she would have resented it; for besides ' the love she bore her brother, she had a little ' family pride, which would sometimes appear. ' To say the truth, if she had any fault, it was ' that of vanity, but she was a very good girl ' upon the whole; and none of us are entirely ' free from faults.'

' You are a good-natured fellow, Will,' answered Miss Matthews; ' but vanity is a fault of the ' first magnitude in a woman, and often the occa- ' sion of many others.'

To this Booth made no answer; but continued his story.

' In this company we passed two or three months ' very agreeably, till the major and I both betook ' ourselves to our several nurseries; my wife being ' brought to bed of a girl, and Miss Bath confined ' to her chamber by a surfeit, which had like to ' have occasoned her death.'

Digitized by Google

Here Miss Matthews burst into a loud laugh, of which, when Booth asked the reason, she said, she could not forbear at the thoughts of two such nurses: 'And did you really,' says she, 'make 'your wife's caudle yourself?'

'Indeed, Madam,' said he, 'I did; and do you 'think that so extraordinary?'

'Indeed I do,' answered she; 'I thought the 'best husbands had looked on their wives lying-in 'as a time of festival and jollity. What! did you 'not even get drunk in the time of your wife's 'delivery? tell me honestly how you employed 'yourself at this time.'

'Why, then, honestly,' replied he, 'and in de-'fiance of your laughter, I lay behind her bolster, 'and supported her in my arms; and upon my 'soul, I believe I felt more pain in my mind than 'she underwent in her body. And now answer me 'as honestly: Do you really think it a proper 'time of mirth, when the creature one loves to 'distraction is undergoing the most racking tor-'ments, as well as in the most imminent danger? 'and—— but I need not express any more tender 'circumstances.'

'I am to answer honestly,' cried she——'Yes, 'and sincerely,' cries Booth—'Why, then, ho-'nestly and sincerely,' says she, 'may I never 'see Heaven, if I don't think you an angel of a 'man.'

'Nay, Madam,' answered Booth,—'but, in-'deed, you do me too much honour, there are 'many such husbands—Nay, have we not an ex-'ample of the like tenderness in the major? though 'as to him, I believe, I shall make you laugh. 'While my wife lay in, Miss Bath being extremely 'ill, I went one day to the door of her apartment, 'to inquire after her health, as well as for the 'major, whom I had not seen during a whole 'week. I knocked softly at the door, and being 'bid to open it, I found the major in his sister's

Digitized by Google

'antichamber warming her posset. His dress was 'certainly whimsical enough, having on a wo- 'man's bedgown, and a very dirty flannel night- 'cap, which being added to a very odd person '(for he is a very awkward thin man, near seven 'feet high) might have formed, in the opinion of 'most men, a very proper object of laughter. The 'major started from his seat at my entering into 'the room, and with much emotion, and a great 'oath, cried out, "Is it you, Sir?" I then in- 'quired after his and his sister's health. He an- 'swered, That his sister was better, and he was 'very well, "though I did not expect, Sir," cried 'he, with not a little confusion, "to be seen by "you in this situation." I told him, I thought 'it impossible he could appear in a situation more 'becoming his character. "You do not?" an- 'swered he. "By G— I am very much obliged "to you for that opinion; but, I believe, Sir, "however my weakness may prevail on me to "descend from it, no man can be more con- "scious of his own dignity than myself." His 'sister then called to him from the inner room; 'upon which he rang the bell for her servant, and 'then after a stride or two across the room, he 'said, with an elated aspect, "I would not have "you think, Mr. Booth, because you have caught "me in this deshabille, by coming upon me a little "too abruptly, I cannot help saying a little too "abruptly, that I am my sister's nurse. I know "better what is due to the dignity of a man, and "I have shewn it in a line of battle.——I think "I have made a figure there, Mr. Booth, and be- "coming my character; by G— I ought not to "be despised too much, if my nature is not totally "without its weaknesses." He uttered this, and 'some more of the same kind, with great majesty, 'or, as he called it, dignity. Indeed, he used some 'hard words that I did not understand; for all

Digitized by Google

'his words are not to be found in a dictionary. 'Upon the whole, I could not easily refrain from 'laughter; however, I conquered myself, and soon 'after retired from him, astonished that it was 'possible for a man to possess true goodness, and 'be, at the same time, ashamed of it.

'But if I was surprised at what had past at this 'visit, how much more was I surprised the next 'morning, when he came very early to my cham- 'ber, and told me he had not been able to sleep 'one wink at what had past between us! "There "were some words of yours," says he, "which "must be further explained before we part. You "told me, Sir, when you found me in that situa- "tion, which I cannot bear to recollect, that you "thought I could not appear in one more becom- "ing my character; these were the words, I shall "never forget them. Do you imagine that there "is any of the dignity of a man wanting in my "character? do you think that I have, during my "sister's illness, behaved with a weakness that sa- "vours too much of effeminacy? I know how "much it is beneath a man to whine and whimper "about a trifling girl as well as you, or any man; "and if my sister had died, I should have behaved "like a man on the occasion. I would not have "you think I confined myself from company "merely upon her account. I was very much "disordered myself. And when you surprised "me in that situation, I repeat again, in that si- "tuation, her nurse had not left the room three "minutes, and I was blowing the fire for fear it "should have gone out."—In this manner he ran 'on almost a quarter of an hour, before he would 'suffer me to speak. At last, looking stedfastly 'in his face, I asked him, if I must conclude that 'he was in earnest?——"In earnest," says he, re- 'peating my words, "Do you then take my cha- "racter for a jest?"—Lookee, Sir, said I, very

Digitized by Google

'gravely, I think we know one another very well; 'and I have no reason to suspect you should im- 'pute it to fear, when I tell you, I was so far from 'intending to affront you, that I meant you one 'of the highest compliments. Tenderness for wo- 'men is so far from lessening, that it proves a true 'manly character. The manly Brutus shewed the 'utmost tenderness to his Portia; and the great 'king of Sweden, the bravest, and even fiercest of 'men, shut himself up three whole days in the 'midst of a campaign, and would see no company 'on the death of a favourite sister. At these 'words, I saw his features soften; and he cried 'out, "D—n me, I admire the king of Sweden "of all the men in the world; and he is a rascal "that is ashamed of doing any thing which the "king of Sweden did.—And yet if any king of "Sweden in France was to tell me that his sister "had more merit than mine, by G— I'd knock "his brains about his ears. Poor little Betsey! "she is the honestest, worthiest girl that ever was "born. Heaven be praised, she is recovered; for, "if I had lost her, I never should have enjoyed "another happy moment." In this manner he ran 'on some time, till the tears began to overflow '——which, when he perceived, he stopt; per- 'haps he was unable to go on; for he seemed 'almost choked;—after a short silence, however, 'having wiped his eyes with his handkerchief, he 'fetched a deep sigh, and cried, "I am ashamed "you should see this, Mr. Booth; but d—n me, "nature will get the better of dignity." I now 'comforted him with the example of Xerxes, as 'I had before done with that of the king of 'Sweden; and soon after we sat down to break- 'fast together with much cordial friendship; for 'I assure you, with all his oddity, there is not a 'better-natured man in the world than the major.'

'Good-natured, indeed!' cries Miss Matthews,

Digitized by Google

with great scorn.—'A fool! how can you mention 'such a fellow with commendation?'

Booth spoke as much as he could in defence of his friend; indeed, he had represented him in as favourable a light as possible, and had particularly left out those hard words, with which, as he hath observed a little before, the major interlarded his discourse. Booth then proceeded as in the next chapter.

CHAP. IX.

Containing very extraordinary Matters.

'MISS Bath,' continued Booth, 'now recovered so fast, that she was abroad as soon as 'my wife. Our little partie quarrée began to 'grow agreeable again; and we mixed with the 'company of the place more than we had done 'before. Mons. Bagillard now again renewed his 'intimacy, for the countess, his mistress, was gone 'to Paris; at which my wife, at first, shewed no 'dissatisfaction; and I imagined, that, as she had 'a friend and companion of her own sex (for Miss 'Bath and she had contracted the highest fondness for each other) that she would the less miss 'my company. However, I was disappointed in 'this expectation; for she soon began to express 'her former uneasiness, and her impatience for 'the arrival of Captain James, that we might entirely quit Montpelier.

'I could not avoid conceiving some little displeasure at this humour of my wife, which I was 'forced to think a little unreasonable.—"A little, "do you call it," says Miss Matthews, "Good "Heavens! what a husband are you!"—How 'little worthy,' answered he, 'as you will say 'hereafter, of such a wife as my Amelia. One

Digitized by Google

'day as we were sitting together, I heard a violent 'scream; upon which my wife, starting up, cried 'out, "Sure that's Miss Bath's voice," and imme-'diately ran towards the chamber whence it pro-'ceeded. I followed her; and when we arrived, 'we there beheld the most shocking sight imagi-'nable; Miss Bath lying dead on the floor, and 'the major all bloody kneeling by her, and roar-'ing out for assistance. Amelia, though she was 'herself in little better condition than her friend, 'ran hastily to her, bared her neck, and attempted 'to loosen her stays, while I ran up and down, 'scarce knowing what I did, calling for water and 'cordials, and dispatching several servants one 'after another for doctors and surgeons.

'Water, cordials, and all necessary implements 'being brought, Miss Bath was, at length, reco-'vered, and placed in her chair, when the major 'seated himself by her. And now the young lady 'being restored to life, the major, who, till then, 'had engaged as little of his own, as of any other 'person's attention, became the object of all our 'considerations, especially his poor sister's, who 'had no sooner recovered sufficient strength, than 'she began to lament her brother, crying out, 'that he was killed; and bitterly bewailing her 'fate, in having revived from her swoon to behold 'so dreadful a spectacle. While Amelia applied 'herself to sooth the agonies of her friend, I be-'gan to inquire into the condition of the major. 'In which I was assisted by a surgeon, who now 'arrived.—The major declared with great cheer-'fulness, that he did not apprehend his wound to 'be in the least dangerous, and therefore begged 'his sister to be comforted, saying, he was con-'vinced the surgeon would soon give her the same 'assurance; but that good man was not so liberal 'of assurances as the major had expected; for as 'soon as he had probed the wound, he afforded

Digitized by Google

'no more than hopes, declaring that it was a very 'ugly wound; but added, by way of consolation, 'that he had cured many much worse.

'When the major was drest, his sister seemed 'to possess his whole thoughts, and all his care 'was to relieve her grief. He solemnly protested, 'that it was no more than a flesh wound, and not 'very deep, nor could, as he apprehended, be in 'the least dangerous; and as for the cold expres- 'sions of the surgeon, he very well accounted for 'them from a motive too obvious to be mentioned. '—From these declarations of her brother, and 'the interposition of her friends, and, above all, 'I believe, from that vast vent which she had 'given to her fright, Miss Bath seemed a little 'pacified: Amelia, therefore, at last prevailed; 'and as terror abated, curiosity became the supe- 'rior passion. I therefore now began to inquire 'what had occasioned that accident whence all 'the uproar arose.

'The major took me by the hand, and looking 'very kindly at me, said, "My dear Mr. Booth, "I must begin by asking your pardon; for I have "done you an injury, for which nothing but the "height of friendship in me can be an excuse; "and therefore nothing but the height of friend- "ship in you can forgive." This preamble, Ma- 'dam, you will easily believe, greatly alarmed all 'the company, but especially me.——I answered, 'dear major, I forgive you, let it be what it will; 'but what is it possible you can have done to in- 'jure me? "That," replied he, "which I am con- "vinced a man of your honour and dignity of "nature, by G—— must conclude to be one of "the highest injuries. I have taken out of your "own hands the doing yourself justice. I am "afraid I have killed the man who hath injured "your honour. I mean that villain Bagillard— "but I cannot proceed; for you, Madam," said

Digitized by Google

'he to my wife, "are concerned; and I know "what is due to the dignity of your sex."—Ame-'lia, I observed, turned pale at these words, but 'eagerly begged him to proceed.—"Nay, Ma-'dam," answered he, "if I am commanded by a "lady, it is a part of my dignity to obey." He 'then proceeded to tell us, that Bagillard had 'rallied him upon a supposition that he was pur-'suing my wife with a view of gallantry; telling 'him, that he could never succeed; giving hints 'that if it had been possible, he should have suc-'ceeded himself; and ending with calling my 'poor Amelia an accomplished prude; upon which 'the major gave Bagillard a box on the ear, and 'both immediately drew their swords.

'The major had scarce ended his speech, when 'a servant came into the room, and told me there 'was a friar below who desired to speak with me 'in great haste. I shook the major by the hand, 'and told him I not only forgave him, but was 'extremely obliged to his friendship; and then 'going to the friar, I found that he was Bagil-'lard's confessor, from whom he came to me, with 'an earnest desire of seeing me, that he might ask 'my pardon, and receive my forgiveness before 'he died, for the injury he had intended me. My 'wife at first opposed my going, from some sud-'den fears on my account; but when she was 'convinced they were groundless, she consented.

'I found Bagillard in his bed; for the major's 'sword had passed up to the very hilt through his 'body. After having very earnestly asked my 'pardon, he made me many compliments on the 'possession of a woman, who, joined to the most 'exquisite beauty, was mistress of the most im-'pregnable virtue; as a proof of which, he ac-'knowledged the vehemence as well as ill success 'of his attempts; and to make Amelia's virtue 'appear the brighter, his vanity was so predomi-

Digitized by Google

'nant, he could not forbear running over the 'names of several women of fashion who had 'yielded to his passion, which, he said, had never 'raged so violently for any other as for my poor 'Amelia; and that this violence, which he had 'found wholly unconquerable, he hoped would 'procure his pardon at my hands. It is unne-'cessary to mention what I said on the occasion. 'I assured him of my entire forgiveness; and so 'we parted. To say the truth, I afterwards 'thought myself almost obliged to him for a meet-'ing with Amelia, the most luxuriously delicate 'that can be imagined.

'I now ran to my wife, whom I embraced with 'raptures of love and tenderness. When the first 'torrent of these was a little abated, "Confess "to me, my dear," said she, "could your good-"ness prevent you from thinking me a little un-"reasonable in expressing so much uneasiness at "the loss of your company, while I ought to have "rejoiced in the thoughts of your being so well "entertained? I know you must; and then con-"sider what I must have felt, while I knew I was "daily lessening myself in your esteem, and "forced into a conduct, which I was sensible must "appear to you, who was ignorant of my motive, "to be mean, vulgar, and selfish. And yet, what "other course had I to take, with a man whom no "denial, no scorn could abash?—But if this was a "cruel task, how much more wretched still was "the constraint I was obliged to wear in his pre-"sence before you, to shew outward civility to the "man whom my soul detested, for fear of any "fatal consequence from your suspicion; and this "too, while I was afraid he would construe it to "be an encouragement?—Do you not pity your "poor Amelia when you reflect on her situation?"

'—Pity!' cried I, 'my love! is pity an adequate 'expression for esteem, for adoration?—But how,

Digitized by Google

my love, could he carry this on so secretly—by 'letters?' "O no, he offered me many; but I "never would receive but one, and that I returned "him. Good G— I would not have such a letter "in my possession for the universe, I thought my "eyes contaminated with reading it."—'O brave;' cried Miss Matthews, 'heroic, I protest.

'Had I a wish that did not bear
'The stamp and image of my dear,
'I'd pierce my heart through ev'ry vein,
'And die to let it out again.'

'And can you really,' cried he, 'laugh at so 'much tenderness?' 'I laugh at tenderness! O 'Mr. Booth!' answered she, 'Thou knowest but 'little of Calista.' 'I thought formerly,' cried he, 'I knew a great deal, and thought you, of all wo-'men in the world, to have the greatest——of all 'women!'—'Take care, Mr. Booth,' said she.—— 'By Heaven! if you thought so, you thought 'truly. But what is the object of my tenderness '—such an object as———' 'Well, Madam,' says he, 'I hope you will find one.'——'I thank you 'for that hope, however,' says she, 'cold as it is. 'But pray go on with your story;' which command he immediately obeyed.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. X.

Containing a Letter of a very curious Kind.

'THE major's wound,' continued Booth, 'was 'really as slight as he believed it; so that in a very 'few days he was perfectly well; nor was Bagil- 'lard, though run through the body, long appre- 'hending to be in any danger of his life. The 'major then took me aside, and wishing me heartily 'joy of Bagillard's recovery, told me, I should 'now, by the gift (as it were) of Heaven, have 'an opportunity of doing myself justice. I an- 'swered, I could not think of any such thing; for 'that when I imagined he was on his death-bed, 'I had heartily and sincerely forgiven him. "Very "right," replied the major, "and consistent with "your honour, when he was on his death-bed; "but that forgiveness was only conditional, and "is revoked by his recovery." I told him, I could 'not possibly revoke it; for that my anger was 'really gone.—"What hath anger," cried he, "to "do with the matter? the dignity of my nature "hath been always my reason for drawing my "sword; and when that is concerned, I can as "readily fight with the man I love, as with the "man I hate."—I will not tire you with the repe- 'tition of the whole argument, in which the ma- 'jor did not prevail; and I really believe, I sunk 'a little in his esteem upon that account, till Cap- 'tain James, who arrived soon after, again per- 'fectly reinstated me in his favour.

'When the captain was come, there remained 'no cause of our longer stay at Montpelier; for 'as to my wife, she was in a better state of health 'than I had ever known her; and Miss Bath had 'not only recovered her health, but her bloom, 'and from a pale skeleton was become a plump,

Digitized by Google

'handsome, young woman. James was again my 'cashier; for, far from receiving any remittance, it 'was now a long time since I had received any 'letter from England, though both myself and my 'dear Amelia had written several, both to my mo-'ther and sister; and now, at our departure from 'Montpelier, I bethought myself of writing to my 'good friend the doctor, acquainting him with 'our journey to Paris, whither I desired he would 'direct his answer.

'At Paris we all arrived, without encountering 'any adventure on the road worth relating; nor 'did any thing of consequence happen here during 'the first fortnight; for as you know neither Cap-'tain James nor Miss Bath, it is scarce worth tell-'ing you, that an affection, which afterwards 'ended in a marriage, began now to appear be-'tween them, in which it may appear odd to you 'that I made the first discovery of the lady's flame, 'and my wife of the captain's.

'The seventeenth day after our arrival at Paris, 'I received a letter from the doctor, which I have 'in my pocket-book; and, if you please, I will 'read it you; for I would not willingly do any 'injury to his words.'

The lady, you may easily believe, desired to hear the letter, and Booth read it as follows:

"MY DEAR CHILDREN,

"For I will now call you so, as you have "neither of you now any other parent in this "world. Of this melancholy news I should have "sent you earlier notice, if I had thought you "ignorant of it, or indeed if I had known whither "to have written. If your sister hath received "any letters from you, she hath kept them a se-"cret, and perhaps out of affection to you hath "reposited them in the same place where she keeps "her goodness, and, what I am afraid is much "dearer to her, her money. The reports concern-

Digitized by Google

"ing you, have been various; so is always the "case in matters where men are ignorant; for "when no man knows what the truth is, every "man thinks himself at liberty to report what he "pleases. Those who wish you well, son Booth, "say simply that you are dead; others, that you "ran away from the siege, and was cashiered. As "for my daughter, all agree that she is a saint "above; and there are not wanting those who "hint that her husband sent her thither. From "this beginning you will expect, I suppose, bet-"ter news than I am going to tell you; but pray, "my dear children, why may not I, who have "always laughed at my own afflictions, laugh at "yours, without the censure of much malevo-"lence? I wish you could learn this temper from "me; for, take my word for it, nothing truer "ever came from the mouth of a heathen than "that sentence,

"——*Leve fit quod bene fertur onus.**

"And though I must confess, I never thought "Aristotle (whom I do not take for so great a "blockhead as some who have never read him) "doth not very well resolve the doubt which he "hath raised in his Ethics, viz. How a man, in "the midst of King Priam's misfortunes, can be "called happy? yet I have long thought that "there is no calamity so great, that a christian "philosopher may not reasonably laugh at it. If "the heathen Cicero, doubting of immortality "(for so wise a man must have doubted of that "which had such slender arguments to support it) "could assert it as the office of wisdom, *Humanas "res despicere atque infra se positas arbitrari.*†

* The burthen becomes light by being well borne.

† To look down on all human affairs as matters below his consideration.

Digitized by Google

"Which passage, with much more to the same "purpose, you will find in the third book of his "Tusculan Questions.

"With how much greater confidence may a "good christian despise, and even deride, all tem- "porary and short transitory evils? if the poor "wretch, who is trudging on to his miserable "cottage, can laugh at the storms and tempests, "the rain and whirlwinds which surround him, "while his richest hope is only that of rest; how "much more cheerfully must a man pass through "such transient evils, whose spirits are buoyed "up with the certain expectation of finding a "noble palace, and the most sumptuous enter- "tainment ready to receive him? I do not much "like the simile; but I cannot think of a better. "And yet, inadequate as the simile is, we may, "I think, from the actions of mankind, conclude, "that they will consider it as much too strong; "for in the case I have put of the entertainment, "is there any man so tender or poor-spirited as "not to despise, and often to deride, the fiercest "of those inclemencies which I have mentioned; "but in our journey to the glorious mansions of "of everlasting bliss, how severely is every little "rub, every trifling accident lamented; and if "fortune showers down any of her heavier storms "upon us, how wretched do we presently appear "to ourselves and to others! The reason of "this can be no other than that we are not in "earnest in our faith; at the best we think, with "too little attention, on this our great concern. "While the most paltry matters of this world, "even those pitiful trifles, those childish gewgaws, "riches, and honours, are transacted with the ut- "most earnestness, and most serious application; "the grand and weighty affair of immortality is "postponed and disregarded, nor ever brought "into the least competition with our affairs here.

Digitized by Google

"If one of my cloth should begin a discourse of "Heaven in the scenes of business or pleasure; "in the Court of Requests, at Garraway's, or at "White's, would he gain a hearing, unless, per- "haps, of some sorry jester who would desire to "ridicule him? would he not presently acquire "the name of the mad parson, and be thought by "all men worthy of Bedlam? or would he not be "treated as the Romans treated their Aretalogi,* "and considered in the light of a buffoon? But "why should I mention those places of hurry and "worldly pursuit?—What attention do we engage "even in the pulpit? here, if a sermon be pro- "longed a little beyond the usual hour, doth it "not set half the audience asleep? as I question "not I have by this time both my children.—Well "then, like a good-natured surgeon, who pre- "pares his patient for a painful operation, by en- "deavouring as much as he can to deaden his sen- "sation, I will now communicate to you, in your "slumbering condition, the news with which I "threatened you. Your good mother, you are to "know, is dead at last, and hath left her whole "fortune to her elder daughter.—This is all the "ill news I have to tell you. Confess now, if "you are awake, did you not expect it was much "worse; did not you apprehend that your charm- "ing child was dead? far from it, he is in perfect "health, and the admiration of every body; what "is more, he will be taken care of, with the ten- "derness of a parent, till your return. What "pleasure must this give you! if indeed any thing "can add to the happiness of a married couple, "who are extremely and deservedly fond of each "other, and, as you write me, in perfect health. "A superstitious heathen would have dreaded the

* A set of beggarly philosophers, who diverted great men at their table with burlesque discourses on virtue.

Digitized by Google

" malice of Nemesis in your situation; but as I " am a Christian, I shall venture to add another " circumstance to your felicity, by assuring you " that you have, besides your wife, a faithful and " zealous friend.—Do not, therefore, my dear chil- " dren, fall into that fault which the excellent " Thucydides observes, is too common in human " nature, to bear heavily the being deprived of " the smaller good, without conceiving, at the " same time, any gratitude for the much greater " blessings which we are suffered to enjoy. I have " only farther to tell you, my son, that when you " call at Mr. Morand's, Rue Dauphine, you will " find yourself worth a hundred pounds. Good " Heaven! how much richer are you than millions " of people who are in want of nothing! farewel, " and know me for

" Your sincere and affectionate friend."

'There, Madam,' cries Booth, 'how do you like 'the letter?'

'Oh! extremely,' answered she, 'the doctor 'is a charming man; I always loved dearly to 'hear him preach. I remember to have heard of 'Mrs. Harris's death above a year before I left the 'country; but never knew the particulars of her 'will before. I am extremely sorry for it, upon 'my honour.'

'Oh fy! Madam,' cries Booth, 'have you so 'soon forgot the chief purport of the doctor's 'letter?'

'Ay, ay,' cried she, 'these are very pretty things 'to read, I acknowledge; but the loss of fortune 'is a serious matter; and I am sure a man of Mr. 'Booth's understanding must think so.' 'One 'consideration, I must own, Madam,' answered he, 'a good deal baffled all the doctor's arguments. 'This was my concern for my little growing fa- 'mily, who must one day feel the loss; nor was I

Digitized by Google

'so easy upon Amelia's account as upon my 'own, though she herself put on the utmost 'cheerfulness, and stretched her invention to the 'utmost to comfort me.—But sure, Madam, there 'is something in the doctor's letter to admire 'beyond the philosophy of it; what think you of 'that easy, generous, friendly manner, in which 'he sent me the hundred pounds?'

'Very noble and great indeed,' replied she. 'But pray go on with your story; for I long to 'hear the whole.'

CHAP. XI.

In which Mr. Booth relates his Return to England.

'NOTHING remarkable, as I remember, hap-'pened during our stay at Paris, which we left 'soon after, and came to London. Here we 'rested only two days, and then, taking leave of 'our fellow-travellers, we set out for Wiltshire, 'my wife being so impatient to see the child which 'she had left behind her, that the child she car-'ried with her was almost killed with the fatigue 'of the journey.

'We arrived at our inn late in the evening, 'Amelia, though she had no great reason to be 'pleased with any part of her sister's behaviour, 'resolved to behave to her as if nothing wrong 'had ever happened. She, therefore, sent a kind 'note to her the moment of our arrival, giving 'her her option, whether she would come to us 'at the inn, or whether we should that evening 'wait on her. The servant, after waiting an hour, 'brought us an answer, excusing her from coming 'to us so late, as she was disordered with a cold, 'and desiring my wife by no means to think of 'venturing out after the fatigue of her journey;

Digitized by Google

'saying, she would, on that account, defer the 'great pleasure of seeing her till the morning, 'without taking any more notice of your humble 'servant, than if no such person had been in the 'world, though I had very civilly sent my com-'pliments to her. I should not mention this 'trifle, if it was not to shew you the nature of 'the woman, and that it will be a kind of key to 'her future conduct.

'When the servant returned, the good doctor, 'who had been with us almost all the time of his 'absence, hurried us away to his house, where 'we presently found a supper and a bed prepared 'for us. My wife was eagerly desirous to see her 'child that night; but the doctor would not suffer 'it; and as he was at nurse at a distant part of 'the town, and the doctor assured her he had 'seen him in perfect health that evening, she suf-'fered herself at last to be dissuaded.

'We spent that evening in the most agreeable 'manner; for the doctor's wit and humour, joined 'to the highest cheerfulness and good-nature, 'made him the most agreeable companion in the 'world; and he was now in the highest spirits, 'which he was pleased to place to our account. 'We sat together to a very late hour; for so ex-'cellent is my wife's constitution, that she de-'clared she was scarce sensible of any fatigue 'from her late journies.

'Amelia slept not a wink all night, and in the 'morning early the doctor accompanied us to the 'little infant. The transports we felt on this oc-'casion were really enchanting, nor can any but a 'fond parent conceive, I am certain, the least idea 'of them. Our imaginations suggested a hun-'dred agreeable circumstances, none of which had, 'perhaps, any foundation. We made words and 'meaning out of every sound, and in every feature 'found out some resemblance to my Amelia, as 'she did to me.

Digitized by Google

'But I ask your pardon for dwelling on such 'incidents; and will proceed to scenes, which, to 'most persons, will be more entertaining.

'We went hence to pay a visit to Miss Harris, 'whose reception of us was, I think, truly ridi- 'culous; and as you know the lady, I will endea- 'vour to describe it particularly. At our first 'arrival we were ushered into a parlour, where we 'were suffered to wait almost an hour. At length 'the lady of the house appeared in deep mourning, 'with a face, if possible, more dismal than her 'dress, in which, however, there was every ap- 'pearance of art. Her features were indeed 'screwed up to the very height of grief. With 'this face, and in the most solemn gait, she ap- 'proached Amelia, and coldly saluted her. After 'which, she made me a very distant formal cour- 'tesy, and we all sat down. A short silence now 'ensued, which Miss Harris at length broke, with 'a deep sigh, and said, "Sister, here is a great "alteration in this place since you saw it last; "Heaven hath been pleased to take my poor mo- "ther to itself."—(Here she wiped her eyes, and 'then continued) "I hope I know my duty, and "have learned a proper resignation to the divine "will; but something is to be allowed to grief for "the best of mothers; for so she was to us both; "and if at last she made any distinction, she must "have had her reasons for so doing. I am sure "I can truly say I never wished, much less desired "it." The tears now stood in poor Amelia's 'eyes; indeed, she had paid too many already 'for the memory of so unnatural a parent. She 'answered with the sweetness of an angel, that 'she was far from blaming her sister's emotions on 'so tender an occasion; that she heartily joined 'with her in her grief; for that nothing which her 'mother had done in the latter part of her life 'could efface the remembrance of that tenderness 'which she had formerly shewn her. Her sister

Digitized by Google

'caught hold of the word efface, and rung the 'changes upon it.—"Efface!" cried she, "O Miss "Emily (for you must not expect me to repeat "names that will be for ever odious), I wish "indeed every thing could be effaced.—Effaced! "O that that was possible! we might then have "still enjoyed my poor mother; for I am con- "vinced she never recovered her grief on a cer- "tain occasion."——Thus she ran on, and after 'many bitter strokes upon her sister, at last di- 'rectly charged her mother's death on my mar- 'riage with Amelia. I could be silent then no 'longer. I reminded her of the perfect reconci- 'liation between us before my departure, and the 'great fondness which she expressed for me; nor 'could I help saying in very plain terms, that if 'she had ever changed her opinion of me, as I 'was not conscious of having deserved such a 'change by my own behaviour, I was well con- 'vinced to whose good offices I owed it. Guilt 'hath very quick ears to an accusation. Miss 'Harris immediately answered to the charge. She 'said, such suspicions were no more than she ex- 'pected; that they were of a piece with every 'other part of my conduct, and gave her one con- 'solation, that they served to account for her sis- 'ter Emily's unkindness, as well to herself as to 'her poor deceased mother, and in some measure 'lessened the guilt of it with regard to her, since 'it was not easy to know how far a woman is in 'the power of her husband. My dear Amelia 'reddened at this reflection on me; and begged 'her sister to name any single instance of un- 'kindness or disrespect, in which she had ever 'offended. To this the other answered, (I am 'sure I repeat her words, though I cannot mimic 'either the voice or air with which they were 'spoken)—"Pray, Miss Emily, which is to be the "judge, yourself or that gentleman? I remember

Digitized by Google

" the time when I could have trusted to your " judgement in any affair; but you are now no " longer mistress of yourself, and are not answer- " able for your actions. Indeed, it is my constant " prayer that your actions may not be imputed to " you.—It was the constant prayer of that blessed " woman, my dear mother, who is now a saint " above; a saint whose name I can never mention " without a tear, though I find you can hear it " without one.—I cannot help observing some " concern on so melancholy an occasion; it seems " due to decency; but perhaps (for I always " wish to excuse you) you are forbid to cry.

'The idea of being bid or forbid to cry, struck so 'strongly on my fancy, that indignation only 'could have prevented me from laughing. But 'my narrative, I am afraid, begins to grow te- 'dious.—In short, after hearing, for near an hour, 'every malicious insinuation which a fertile ge- 'nius could invent, we took our leave, and sepa- 'rated as persons who would never willingly meet 'again.

'The next morning, after this interview, Ame- 'lia received a long letter from Miss Harris; in 'which, after many bitter invectives against me, 'she excused her mother, alleging that she had 'been driven to do as she did, in order to prevent 'Amelia's ruin, if her fortune had fallen into my 'hands. She likewise very remotely hinted that 'she would be only a trustee for her sister's chil- 'dren, and told her, that on one condition only, 'she would consent to live with her as a sister. 'This was, if she could by any means be sepa- 'rated from that man, as she was pleased to call 'me, who had caused so much mischief in the 'family.

'I was so enraged at this usage, that, had not 'Amelia intervened, I believe I should have ap- 'plied to a magistrate for a search-warrant for

Digitized by Google

'that picture, which there was so much reason to 'suspect she had stolen; and which, I am con- 'vinced, upon a search, we should have found 'in her possession.'

'Nay, it is possible enough,' cries Miss Matthews; 'for I believe there is no wickedness of 'which the lady is not capable.'

'This agreeable letter was succeeded by another 'of the like comfortable kind, which informed 'me that the company in which I was, being an 'additional one raised in the beginning of the war, 'was reduced; so that I was now a lieutenant on 'half-pay.

'Whilst we were meditating on our present situ- 'ation, the good doctor came to us. When we 'related to him the manner in which my sister had 'treated us, he cried out, "Poor soul! I pity her "heartily;" for this is the severest resentment he 'ever expresses; indeed, I have often heard him 'say, that a wicked soul is the greatest object of 'compassion in the world.'—A sentiment which we shall leave the reader a little time to digest.

CHAP. XII.

In which Mr. Booth concludes his Story.

'THE next day the doctor set out for his par- 'sonage, which was about thirty miles distant, 'whither Amelia and myself accompanied him, 'and where we stayed with him all the time of his 'residence there, being almost three months.

'The situation of the parish under my good 'friend's care is very pleasant. It is placed among 'meadows, washed by a clear trout stream, and 'flanked on both sides with downs. His house, 'indeed, would not much attract the admiration of 'the virtuoso. He built it himself, and it is re-

Digitized by Google

'markable only for its plainness; with which the 'furniture so well agrees, that there is no one 'thing in it that may not be absolutely necessary, 'except books, and the prints of Mr. Hogarth, 'whom he calls a moral satirist.

'Nothing, however, can be imagined more 'agreeable than the life that the doctor leads in 'this homely house, which he calls his earthly pa- 'radise. All his parishoners, whom he treats as 'his children, regard him as their common father. 'Once in a week he constantly visits every house 'in the parish, examines, commends, and rebukes, 'as he finds occasion. This is practised likewise by 'his curate in his absence; and so good an effect 'is produced by this their care, that no quarrels 'ever proceed either to blows or law-suits; no 'beggar is to be found in the whole parish; nor 'did I ever hear a very profane oath all the time 'I lived in it.

'But to return, from so agreeable a digression, 'to my own affairs, that are much less worth 'your attention. In the midst of all the pleasures 'I tasted in this sweet place, and in the most de- 'lightful company, the woman and man whom I 'loved above all things, melancholy reflections 'concerning my unhappy circumstances would 'often steal into my thoughts. My fortune was 'now reduced to less than forty pounds a year; 'I had already two children, and my dear Amelia 'was again with child.

'One day the doctor found me sitting by myself, 'and employed in melancholy contemplations on 'this subject. He told me he had observed me 'growing of late very serious; that he knew the 'occasion, and neither wondered at, nor blamed 'me. He then asked me if I had any prospect of 'going again into the army; if not, what scheme 'of life I proposed to myself?

'I told him, that as I had no powerful friends, 'I could have but little expectations in a military

Digitized by Google

'way; that I was as incapable of thinking of any 'other scheme, as all business required some know-'ledge or experience, and likewise money to set 'up with; of all which I was destitute.

"You must know then, child," said the doctor, "that I have been thinking on this subject as well "as you; for I can think, I promise you, with a "pleasant countenance." These were his words. "As to the army, perhaps means might be found "of getting you another commission; but my "daughter seems to have a violent objection to it; "and to be plain, I fancy you yourself will find "no glory make you amends for your absence "from her. And for my part," said he, "I never "think those men wise, who, for any worldly in-"terest, forego the greatest happiness of their lives. "If I mistake not," says he, "a country life, where "you could be always together, would make you "both much happier people."

'I answered, that of all things I preferred it 'most; and I believed Amelia was of the same 'opinion.

'The doctor, after a little hesitation, proposed 'to me to turn farmer, and offered to let me his 'parsonage, which was then become vacant. He 'said, it was a farm which required but little 'stock, and that little should not be wanting.

'I embraced this offer very eagerly, and with 'great thankfulness, and immediately repaired to 'Amelia to communicate it to her, and to know 'her sentiments.

'Amelia received the news with the highest 'transports of joy; she said that her greatest fear 'had always been of my entering again into the 'army. She was so kind as to say, that all stations 'of life were equal to her, unless as one afforded 'her more of my company than another. "And "as to our children," said she, "let us breed them "up to an humble fortune, and they will be con-

Digitized by Google

" tented with it; for none," added my angel, " de-
" serves happiness, or indeed, are capable of it,
" who make any particular station a necessary in-
" gredient."

'Thus, Madam, you see me degraded from my 'former rank in life; no longer Captain Booth, 'but Farmer Booth at your service.

'During my first year's continuance in this new 'scene of life, nothing, I think, remarkable hap-'pened; the history of one day would, indeed, be 'the history of the whole year.'

'Well, pray then,' said Miss Matthews, 'do let 'us hear the history of that day; I have a strange 'curiosity to know how you could kill your time; 'and do, if possible, find out the very best day you 'can.'

'If you command me, Madam,' answered Booth, 'you must yourself be accountable for the dulness 'of the narrative. Nay, I believe, you have im-'posed a very difficult task on me; for the greatest 'happiness is incapable of description.

'I rose, then, Madam——'

'O, the moment you waked, undoubtedly,' said Miss Matthews.——

'Usually,' said he, 'between five and six.'

'I will have no usually,' cried Miss Matthews, 'you are confined to a day, and it is to be the best 'and happiest in the year.'

'Nay, Madam,' cries Booth, 'then I must tell 'you the day in which Amelia was brought to bed, 'after a painful and dangerous labour; for that I 'think was the happiest day of my life.'

'I protest,' said she, 'you are become farmer 'Booth, indeed. What a happiness have you 'painted to my imagination! you put me in mind 'of a newspaper, where my lady such-a-one is 'delivered of a son, to the great joy of some illus-'trious family.'

'Why then, I do assure you, Miss Matthews,'

Digitized by Google

cries Booth, 'I scarce know a circumstance that 'distinguished one day from another. The whole 'was one continued series of love, health, and 'tranquillity. Our lives resembled a calm sea.'—

'The dullest of all ideas,' cries the lady.

'I know,' said he, 'it must appear dull in de-'scription; for who can describe the pleasures 'which the morning air gives to one in perfect 'health; the flow of spirits which springs up from 'exercise; the delights which parents feel from 'the prattle, and innocent follies of their children; 'the joy with which the tender smile of a wife in-'spires a husband; or lastly, the cheerful, solid 'comfort which a fond couple enjoy in each other's 'conversation.—All these pleasures, and every 'other of which our situation was capable, we 'tasted in the highest degree. Our happiness 'was, perhaps, too great; for fortune seemed to 'grow envious of it, and interposed one of the 'most cruel accidents that could have befallen us, 'by robbing us of our dear friend the doctor.'

'I am sorry for it,' said Miss Matthews. 'He 'was indeed a valuable man, and I never heard of 'his death before.'

'Long may it be before any one hears of it,' cries Booth. 'He is, indeed, dead to us; but will, 'I hope, enjoy many happy years of life. You 'know, Madam, the obligations he had to his 'patron the earl; indeed, it was impossible to be 'once in his company without hearing of them; 'I am sure you will neither wonder that he was 'chosen to attend the young lord in his travels as 'his tutor, nor that the good man, however dis-'agreeable it might be (as in fact it was) to his 'inclination, should comply with the earnest re-'quest of his friend and patron.

'By this means I was bereft not only of the best 'companion in the world, but of the best coun-'sellor; a loss of which I have since felt the bitter

Digitized by Google

'consequence; for no greater advantage, I am convinced, can arrive to a young man who hath any 'degree of understanding, than an intimate converse with one of riper years, who is not only 'able to advise, but who knows the manner of advising. By this means alone, youth can enjoy 'the benefit of the experience of age, and that at 'a time of life when such experience will be of 'more service to a man, than when he hath lived 'long enough to acquire it of himself.

'From want of my sage counsellor, I now fell 'into many errors. The first of these was in enlarging my business, by adding a farm of one 'hundred a year to the parsonage; in renting 'which I had also as bad a bargain as the doctor 'had before given me a good one. The consequence of which was, that whereas, at the end of 'the first year, I was worth upwards of fourscore 'pounds; at the end of the second, I was near 'half that sum worse (as the phrase is) than nothing.

'A second folly I was guilty of, in uniting 'families with the curate of the parish, who had 'just married, as my wife and I thought, a very 'good sort of a woman. We had not, however, 'lived one month together, before I plainly perceived this good sort of a woman had taken a 'great prejudice against my Amelia; for which, 'if I had not known something of the human 'passions, and that high place which envy holds 'among them, I should not have been able to account; for so far was my angel from having 'given her any cause of dislike, that she had treated her not only with civility, but kindness.

'Besides superiority in beauty, which, I believe, 'all the world would have allowed to Amelia, 'there was another cause of this envy, which I 'am almost ashamed to mention, as it may well be 'called my greatest folly. You are to know then,

Digitized by Google

'Madam, that from a boy I had been always fond 'of driving a coach, in which I valued myself on 'having some skill. This, perhaps, was an in- 'nocent, but I allow it to have been a childish 'vanity. As I had an opportunity, therefore, of 'buying an old coach and harness very cheap (in- 'deed they cost me but twelve pounds) and as I 'considered that the same horses which drew my 'waggons, would likewise draw my coach, I re- 'solved on indulging myself in the purchase.

'The consequence of setting up this poor old 'coach is inconceivable. Before this, as my wife 'and myself had very little distinguished ourselves 'from the other farmers and their wives, either 'in our dress, or our way of living, they treated 'us as their equals; but now they began to con- 'sider us as elevating ourselves into a state of su- 'periority, and immediately began to envy, hate, 'and declare war against us. The neighbouring 'little squires too, were uneasy to see a poor renter 'become their equal in a matter in which they 'placed so much dignity; and not doubting but it 'arose in me from the same ostentation, they began 'to hate me likewise, and to turn my equipage 'into ridicule; asserting that my horses, which 'were as well matched as any in the kingdom, 'were of different colours and sizes; with much 'more of that kind of wit, the only basis of which 'is lying.

'But what will appear more surprising to you, 'Madam, was, that the curate's wife, who being 'lame, had more use of the coach than my Amelia '(indeed, she seldom went to church in any other 'manner) was one of my bitterest enemies on the 'occasion. If she had ever any dispute with Ame- 'lia, which all the sweetness of my poor girl could 'not sometimes avoid, she was sure to introduce 'with a malicious sneer, "Though my husband "doth not keep a coach, Madam." Nay, she

Digitized by Google

'took this opportunity to upbraid my wife with 'the loss of her fortune, alleging, That some folks 'might have had as good pretensions to a coach 'as other folks, and a better to, as they brought 'a better fortune to their husbands, but that all 'people had not the art of making brick without 'straw.

'You will wonder, perhaps, Madam, how I can 'remember such stuff, which, indeed, was a long 'time only matter of amusement to both Amelia 'and myself; but we, at last, experienced the 'mischievous nature of envy, and that it tends 'rather to produce tragical than comical events. 'My neighbours now began to conspire against 'me. They nicknamed me, in derision, the Squire 'Farmer. Whatever I bought, I was sure to buy 'dearer, and when I sold, I was obliged to sell 'cheaper than any other. In fact, they were all 'united; and while they every day committed 'trespasses on my lands with impunity, if any of 'my cattle escaped into their fields, I was either 'forced to enter into a law-suit, or to make amends 'fourfold for the damage sustained.

'The consequences of all this could be no other 'than that ruin which ensued. Without tiring 'you with particulars, before the end of four years, 'I became involved in debt near three hundred 'pounds, more than the value of all my effects. 'My landlord seized my stock for rent; and to 'avoid immediate confinement in prison, I was 'forced to leave the country, with all that I hold 'dear in the world, my wife, and my poor little 'family.

'In this condition, I arrived in town five or six 'days ago. I had just taken a lodging in the verge 'of the court, and had writ my dear Amelia word 'where she might find me, when she had settled 'her affairs in the best manner she could. That 'very evening, as I was returning home from a

Digitized by Google

'coffee-house, a fray happening in the street, I 'endeavoured to assist the injured party, when I 'was seized by the watch, and after being confined 'all night in the round-house, was conveyed in 'the morning before a justice of peace, who com-'mitted me hither; where I should probably have 'starved, had I not, from your hands, found a 'most unaccountable preservation. — And here, 'give me leave to assure you, my dear Miss Mat-'thews, that whatever advantage I may have 'reaped from your misfortune, I sincerely lament 'it; nor would I have purchased any relief to 'myself at the price of seeing you in this dread-'ful place.'

He spake these last words with great tenderness; for he was a man of consummate good-nature, and had formerly had much affection for this young lady; indeed, more than the generality of people are capable of entertaining for any person whatsoever.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

AMELIA.

BOOK IV.

CHAP. I.

Containing very mysterious Matter.

MISS Matthews did not in the least fall short of Mr. Booth in expressions of tenderness. Her eyes, the most eloquent orators on such occasions, exerted their utmost force; and, at the conclusion of his speech, she cast a look as languishingly sweet as ever Cleopatra gave to Antony. In real fact, this Mr. Booth had been her first love, and had made more impressions on her young heart, which the learned in this branch of philosophy affirm, and perhaps truly, are never to be eradicated.

When Booth had finished his story, a silence ensued of some minutes; an interval which the painter would describe much better than the writer. Some readers may, however, be able to make pretty pertinent conjectures, by what I have said above, especially when they are told that Miss Matthews broke the silence by a sigh, and cried, 'Why is 'Mr. Booth unwilling to allow me the happiness 'of thinking my misfortunes have been of some 'little advantage to him? sure the happy Amelia 'would not be so selfish to envy me that pleasure,

Digitized by Google

'No; not if she was as much the fondest as she 'is the happiest of women.' 'Good Heavens! 'Madam,' said he, 'do you call my poor Amelia the 'happiest of women?' 'Indeed I do,' answered she briskly. — 'O Mr. Booth! there is a speck of 'white in her fortune, which, when it falls to the 'lot of a sensible woman, makes her full amends 'for all the crosses which can attend her—Perhaps 'she may not be sensible of it; but if it had been 'my blest fate — O Mr. Booth! could I have 'thought when we were first acquainted, that the 'most agreeable man in the world had been capable 'of making the kind, the tender, the affectionate 'husband—the happy Amelia, in those days, was 'unknown; Heaven had not then given her a 'prospect of the happiness it intended her — but 'yet it did intend it her; for sure there is a fatality 'in the affairs of love; and the more I reflect on 'my own life, the more I am convinced of it. O 'Heavens! how a thousand little circumstances 'crowd into my mind. When you first marched 'into our town, you had then the colours in your 'hand; as you passed under the window where 'I stood, my glove, by accident, dropt into the 'street; you stooped, took up my glove, and put-'ting it upon the spike belonging to your colours, 'lifted it up to the window. Upon this a young 'lady, who stood by, said, "So, Miss, the young "officer hath accepted your challenge." I blushed 'then, and I blush now, when I confess to you, 'I thought you the prettiest young fellow I had 'ever seen; and, upon my soul, I believe you was 'then the prettiest fellow in the world.' — Booth here made a low bow, and cried, 'O dear Ma-'dam, how ignorant was I of my own happiness!' 'Would you really have thought so?' answered she; 'however, there is some politeness, if there 'be no sincerity in what you say.' Here the governor of the enchanted castle interrupted

Digitized by Google

them, and entering the room without any ceremony, acquainted the lady and gentleman, that it was locking-up time; and addressing Booth by the name of captain, asked him if he would not please to have a bed; adding, that he might have one in the next room to the lady, but that it would come dear; for that he never let a bed in that room under a guinea, nor could he afford it cheaper to his father.

No answer was made to this proposal; but Miss Matthews, who had already learnt some of the ways of the house, said, she believed Mr. Booth would like to drink a glass of something; upon which the governor immediately trumpeted forth the praises of his rack-punch, and without waiting for any farther commands, presently produced a large bowl of that liquor.

The governor, having recommended the goodness of his punch by a hearty draught, began to revive the other matter, saying, that he was just going to bed, and must first lock up.—'But suppose,' said Matthews, with a smile, 'the captain and I should 'have a mind to sit up all night.'—'With all my 'heart, said the governor; but I expect a conside-'ration for those matters. For my part, I don't 'inquire into what doth not concern me; but single 'and double are two things. If I lock up double, 'I expect half a guinea; and I'm sure the captain 'cannot think that's out of the way—It is but the 'price of a bagnio.'

Miss Matthews's face became the colour of scarlet at those words—However, she mustered up her spirits, and turning to Booth said, 'What say you, 'captain? for my own part, I had never less incli-'nation to sleep; which hath the greater charms 'for you, the punch or the pillow?' 'I hope, Ma-'dam,' answered Booth, 'you have a better opi-'nion of me, than to doubt my preferring Miss 'Matthews's conversation to either.' 'I assure

Digitized by Google

'you,' replied she, 'it is no compliment to you, 'to say I prefer yours to sleep at this time.'

The governor then, having received his fee, departed; and, turning the key, left the gentleman and the lady to themselves.

In imitation of him, we will lock up likewise a scene, which we do not think proper to expose to the eyes of the public. If any over curious readers should be disappointed on this occasion, we will recommend such readers to the apologies with which certain gay ladies have lately been pleased to oblige the world, where they will possibly find every thing recorded that past at this interval.

But though we declice painting the scene, it is not our intention to conceal from the world the frailty of Mr. Booth, or of his fair partner, who certainly past that evening in a manner inconsistent with the strict rules of virtue and chastity.

To say the truth, we are much more concerned for the behaviour of the gentleman than of the lady, not only for his sake, but for the sake of the best woman in the world, whom we should be sorry to consider as yoked to a man of no worth nor honour.

We desire, therefore, the good-natured and candid reader will be pleased to weigh attentively the several unlucky circumstances which concurred so critically, that fortune seemed to have used her utmost endeavours to ensnare poor Booth's constancy. Let the reader set before his eyes a fine young woman, in a manner, a first love, conferring obligations, and using every art to soften, to allure, to win, and to enflame; let him consider the time and place; let him remember that Mr. Booth was a young fellow, in the highest vigour of life; and lastly, let him add one single circumstance, that the parties were alone together; and then, if he will not acquit the defendant, he must be convicted; for I have nothing more to say in his defence.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. II.

The latter Part of which we expect will please our Reader better than the former.

A WHOLE week did our lady and gentleman live in this criminal conversation, in which the happiness of the former was much more perfect than that of the latter; for though the charms of Miss Matthews, and her excessive endearments, sometimes lulled every thought in the sweet lethargy of pleasure; yet in the intervals of his fits, his virtue alarmed and roused him, and brought the image of poor injured Amelia to haunt and torment him. In fact, if we regard this world only, it is the interest of every man to be either perfectly good, or completely bad. He had better destroy his conscience, than gently wound it. The many bitter reflections which every bad action costs a mind in which there are any remains of goodness, are not to be compensated by the highest pleasures which such an action can produce.

So it happened to Mr. Booth. Repentance never failed to follow his transgressions; and yet so perverse is our judgement, and so slippery is the descent of vice, when once we are entered into it, the same crime which he now repented of, became a reason for doing that which was to cause his future repentance; and he continued to sin on, because he had begun. His repentance, however, returned still heavier and heavier, till, at last, it flung him into a melancholy, which Miss Matthews plainly perceived, and at which she could not avoid expressing some resentment in obscure hints, and ironical compliments on Amelia's superiority to her whole sex, who could not cloy a gay young fellow by many years possession. She would then repeat the compliments which others had made to her own beauty—and could not for-

Digitized by Google

bear once crying out: 'Upon my soul, my dear 'Billy, I believe the chief disadvantage on my 'side, is in my superior fondness; for love, in the 'minds of men, hath one quality, at least, of a 'fever, which is to prefer coldness in the object. 'Confess, dear Will, is there not something vastly 'refreshing in the cool air of a prude.'—Booth fetched a deep sigh, and begged her never more to mention Amelia's name.—'O Will,' cries she, 'did that request proceed from the motive I 'could wish, I should be the happiest of woman-'kind.'—'You would not sure, Madam,' said Booth, 'desire a sacrifice which I must be a vil-'lain to make to any?'——'Desire!' answered she, 'are there any bounds to the desires of love! 'have not I been sacrificed? hath not my first 'love been torn from my bleeding heart?—I claim 'a prior right—As for sacrifices, I can make them 'too; and would sacrifice the whole world at the 'least call of my love.'

Here she delivered a letter to Booth, which she had received within an hour, the contents of which were these:

'DEAREST MADAM,

'THOSE only who truly know what love is, 'can have any conception of the horrors I felt at 'hearing of your confinement at my arrival in 'town, which was this morning. I immediately 'sent my lawyer to inquire into the particulars, 'who brought me the agreeable news that the 'man, whose heart's blood ought not to be valued 'at the rate of a single hair of yours, is entirely 'out of all danger, and that you might be ad-'mitted to bail. I presently ordered him to go 'with two of my tradesmen, who are to be bound 'in any sum for your appearance, if he should be 'mean enough to prosecute you. Though you 'may expect my attorney with you soon, I would 'not delay sending this, as I hope the news will

Digitized by Google

'be agreeable to you. My chariot will attend at 'the same time, to carry you wherever you please. 'You may easily guess what a violence I have 'done to myself in not waiting on you in person; 'but I, who know your delicacy, feared it might 'offend, and that you might think me ungenerous 'enough to hope from your distresses an unhappi-'ness which I am resolved to owe to your free 'gift alone, when your good-nature shall induce 'you to bestow on me what no man living can 'merit. I beg you will pardon all the contents of 'this hasty letter, and do me the honour of be-'lieving me,

'Dearest Madam,

'Your most passionate admirer,

'and most obedient humble servant,

'DAMON.'

Booth thought he had somewhere before seen the same hand; but in his present hurry of spirits could not recollect whose it was; nor did the lady give him any time for reflection: for he had scarce read the letter when she produced a little bit of paper, and cried out, 'Here, Sir, here are 'the contents which he fears will offend me.' She then put a bank-bill of a hundred pounds into Mr. Booth's hands, and asked him with a smile, if he did not think she had reason to be offended with so much insolence?

Before Booth could return any answer, the governor arrived, and introduced Mr. Rogers the attorney, who acquainted the lady, that he had brought her discharge from her confinement, and that a chariot waited at the door to attend her wherever she pleased.

She received the discharge from Mr. Rogers, and said, she was very much obliged to the gentleman who employed him, but that she would not

Digitized by Google

make use of the chariot, as she had no notion of leaving that wretched place in a triumphant manner; in which resolution, when the attorney found her obstinate, he withdrew, as did the governor, with many bows, and as many ladyships.

They were no sooner gone, than Booth asked the lady, Why she would refuse the chariot of a gentleman who had behaved with such excessive respect? She looked earnestly upon him, and cried, 'How unkind is that question! do you 'imagine I would go and leave you in such a situ-'ation? thou knowest but little of Calista. Why, 'do you think I would accept this hundred 'pounds from a man I dislike, unless it was to be 'serviceable to the man I love? I insist on your 'taking it as your own, and using whatever you 'want of it.'

Booth protested in the solemnest manner, that he would not touch a shilling of it, saying, he had already received too many obligations at her hands, and more than ever he should be able, he feared, to repay. 'How unkind,' answered she, 'is every word you say? why will you mention 'obligations? love never confers any. It doth 'every thing for its own sake. I am not there-'fore obliged to the man whose passion makes 'him generous; for I feel how inconsiderable the 'whole world would appear to me, if I could throw 'it after my heart.'

Much more of this kind past, she still pressing the bank-note upon him, and he as absolutely refusing, till Booth left the lady to dress herself, and went to walk in the area of the prison.

Miss Matthews now applied to the governor, to know by what means she might procure the captain his liberty. The governor answered, 'As he 'cannot get bail, it will be a difficult matter; and 'money, to be sure, there must be; for people, no 'doubt, expect to touch on these occasions. When 'prisoners have not wherewithal as the law re-

Digitized by Google

'quires to entitle themselves to justice, why they 'must be beholden to other people, to give them 'their liberty; and people will not, to be sure, 'suffer others to be beholden to them for nothing, 'whereof there is good reason; for how should 'we all live if it was not for these things!'—— 'Well, well,' said she, 'and how much will it cost?' '——' How much!' answered he,—'How much! '—why, let me see.'—Here he hesitated some time, and then answered, 'That for five guineas 'he would undertake to procure the captain his 'discharge.' That being the sum which he computed to remain in the lady's pocket; for as to the gentleman's, he had long been acquainted with the emptiness of it.

Miss Matthews, to whom money was as dirt (indeed she may be thought not to have known the value of it) delivered him the bank-bill, and bid him get it changed; for if the whole, says she, will procure him his liberty, he shall have it this evening.

'The whole, Madam,' answered the governor, as soon as he had recovered his breath; for it almost forsook him at the sight of the black word hundred. 'No, no.—There might be people indeed '— but I am not one of those. A hundred! no, 'nor nothing like it. —As for myself, as I said, I 'will be content with five guineas, and I am sure 'that's little enough. What other people will ex-'pect, I cannot exactly say.—To be sure his wor-'ship's clerk will expect to touch pretty handsome-'ly; as for his worship himself, he never touches 'any thing, that is, not to speak of; but then the 'constable will expect something, and the watch-'men must have something, and the lawyers on 'both sides they must have their fees for finishing.' '—'Well,' said she, 'I leave all to you. If it 'costs me twenty pounds I will have him dischar-'ged this afternoon. —But you must give his dis-

Digitized by Google

'charge into my hands, without letting the captain 'know any thing of the matter.'

The governor promised to obey her commands in every particular; nay, he was so very industrious, that though dinner was just then coming upon the table, at her earnest request, he set out immediately on the purpose, and went, as he said, in pursuit of the lawyer.

All the other company assembled at table as usual, where poor Booth was the only person out of spirits. This was imputed by all present to a wrong cause; nay, Miss Matthews herself either could not, or would not, suspect that there was any thing deeper than the despair of being speedily discharged, that lay heavy on his mind.

However, the mirth of the rest, and a pretty liberal quantity of punch, which he swallowed after dinner (for Miss Matthews had ordered a very large bowl at her own expense, to entertain the good company at her farewel) so far exhilarated his spirits, that, when the young lady and he retired to their tea, he had all the marks of gaiety in his countenance, and his eyes sparkled with good humour.

The gentleman and lady had spent about two hours in tea and conversation, when the governor returned, and privately delivered to the lady the discharge for her friend, and the sum of eighty-two pounds five shillings; the rest having been, he said, disbursed in the business, of which he was ready at any time to render an exact account.

Miss Matthews being again alone with Mr. Booth, she put the discharge into his hands, desiring him to ask her no questions; and adding, 'I 'think, Sir, we have neither of us now any thing 'more to do at this place.' She then summoned the governor, and ordered a bill of that day's expense, for long scores were not usual there; and at the same time ordered a hackney-coach, without ha-

Digitized by Google

ving yet determined whither she would go, but fully determined she was, wherever she went, to take Mr. Booth with her.

The governor was now approaching with a long roll of paper, when a faint voice was heard to cry out hastily, 'Where is he?'—and presently a female spectre, all pale and breathless, rushed into the room, and fell into Mr. Booth's arms, where she immediately fainted away.

Booth made a shift to support his lovely burthen; though he was himself in a condition very little different from hers. Miss Matthews likewise, who presently recollected the face of Amelia, was struck motionless with the surprise; nay, the governor himself, though not easily moved at sights of horror, stood aghast, and neither offered to speak nor stir.

Happily for Amelia, the governess of the mansions had, out of curiosity, followed her into the room, and was the only useful person present on this occasion; she immediately called for water, and ran to the lady's assistance, fell to loosening her stays, and performed all the offices proper at such a season; which had so good an effect, that Amelia soon recovered the disorder which the violent agitation of her spirits had caused, and found herself alive and awake in her husband's arms.

Some tender caresses, and a soft whisper or two past privately between Booth and his lady; nor was it without great difficulty, that poor Amelia put some restraint on her fondness, in a place so improper for a tender interview. She now cast her eyes round the room, and fixing them on Miss Matthews, who stood like a statue; she soon recollected her, and addressing her by her name, said, 'Sure, Madam, I cannot be mistaken in those features; though meeting you here might almost 'make me suspect my memory.'

Miss Matthews's face was now all covered with

Digitized by Google

scarlet. The reader may easily believe she was on no account pleased with Amelia's presence; indeed, she expected from her some of those insults, of which virtuous women are generally so liberal to a frail sister; but she was mistaken, Amelia was not one

> Who thought the nation ne'er would thrive,
> Till all the whores were burnt alive.

Her virtue could support itself with its own intrinsic worth, without borrowing any assistance from the vices of other women; and she considered their natural infirmities as the objects of pity, not of contempt or abhorrence.

When Amelia therefore perceived the visible confusion in Miss Matthews, she presently called to remembrance some stories which she had imperfectly heard; for as she was not naturally attentive to scandal, and had kept very little company since her return to England, she was far from being a mistress of the lady's whole history. However, she had heard enough to impute her confusion to the right cause; she advanced to her, and told her, she was extremely sorry to meet her in such a place, but hoped that no very great misfortune was the occasion of it.

Miss Matthews began, by degrees, to recover her spirits. She answered, with a reserved air, 'I am 'much obliged to you, Madam, for your concern; 'we are all liable to misfortunes in this world. In-'deed, I know not why I should be much ashamed 'of being in any place where I am in such good 'company.'

Here Booth interposed. He had before acquainted Amelia in a whisper, that his confinement was at an end. 'The unfortunate accident, my dear,' said he, 'which brought this young lady to this me-'lancholy place, is entirely determined; and

Digitized by Google

'she is now as absolutely at her liberty as my-'self.'

Amelia imputing the extreme coldness and reserve of the lady to the cause already mentioned, advanced still more and more in proportion as she drew back; till the governor, who had withdrawn some time, returned, and acquainted Miss Matthews that her coach was at the door; upon which the company soon separated. Amelia and Booth went together in Amelia's coach, and poor Miss Matthews was obliged to retire alone, after having satisfied the demands of the governor, which in one day only had amounted to a pretty considerable sum; for he, with great dexterity, proportioned the bills to the abilities of his guests.

It may seem, perhaps, wonderful to some readers, that Miss Matthews should have maintained that cold reserve towards Amelia, so as barely to keep within the rules of civility, instead of embracing an opportunity which seemed to offer, of gaining some degree of intimacy with a wife, whose husband she was so fond of; but, besides that, her spirits were entirely disconcerted by so sudden and unexpected a disappointment; and besides the extreme horrors which she conceived at the presence of her rival, there is, I believe, something so outrageously suspicious in the nature of all vice, especially when joined with any great degree of pride, that the eyes of those whom we imagine privy to our failings, are intolerable to us, and we are apt to aggravate their opinions to our disadvantage far beyond the reality.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. III.

Containing wise Observations of the Author, and other Matters.

THERE is nothing more difficult than to lay down any fixed and certain rules for happiness; or indeed to judge with any precision of the happiness of others, from the knowledge of external circumstances. There is sometimes a little speck of black in the brightest and gayest colours of fortune, which contaminates and deadens the whole. On the contrary, when all without looks dark and dismal, there is often a secret ray of light within the mind, which turns every thing to real joy and gladness.

I have in the course of my life seen many occasions to make this observation; and Mr. Booth was at present a very pregnant instance of its truth. He was just delivered from a prison, and in the possession of his beloved wife and children; and (which might be imagined greatly to augment his joy) fortune had done all this for him within an hour, without giving him the least warning or reasonable expectation of this strange reverse in his circumstances; and yet it is certain, that there were very few men in the world more seriously miserable than he was at this instant. A deep melancholy seized his mind, and cold damp sweats overspread his person, so that he was scarce animated; and poor Amelia, instead of a fond warm husband, bestowed her caresses on a dull lifeless lump of clay. He endeavoured, however, at first, as much as possible, to conceal what he felt, and attempted, what is the hardest of all tasks, to act the part of a happy man; but he found no supply of spirits to carry on this deceit, and would have probably sunk under his attempt, had not poor Amelia's simplicity

Digitized by Google

helped him to another fallacy, in which he had much better success.

This worthy woman very plainly perceived the disorder in her husband's mind; and having no doubt of the cause of it, especially when she saw the tears stand in his eyes at the sight of his children, threw her arms round his neck, and embracing him with rapturous fondness, cried out, 'My dear Billy, let nothing make you uneasy. 'Heaven will, I doubt not, provide for us and 'these poor babes. Great fortunes are not necessary to happiness. For my own part, I can 'level my mind with any state; and for those 'poor little things, whatever condition of life we 'breed them to, that will be sufficient to maintain them in. How many thousands abound in 'affluence, whose fortunes are much lower than 'ours! for it is not from nature, but from education and habit, that our wants are chiefly derived. Make yourself easy therefore, my dear 'love; for you have a wife who will think herself 'happy with you, and endeavour to make you so 'in any situation. Fear nothing, Billy, industry 'will always provide us a wholesome meal; and I 'will take care, that neatness and cheerfulness 'shall make it a pleasant one.'

Booth presently took the cue which she had given him. He fixed his eyes on her for a minute with great earnestness and inexpressible tenderness; and then cried, 'O my Amelia, how much 'are you my superior in every perfection! how 'wise, how great, how noble are your sentiments! 'why can I not imitate what I so much admire? 'why can I not look with your constancy, on 'those dear little pledges of our loves? All my 'philosophy is baffled with the thought that my 'Amelia's children are to struggle with a cruel, 'hard, unfeeling world, and to buffet those waves 'of fortune which have overwhelmed their father. '— Here I own I want your firmness, and am not

Digitized by Google

'without an excuse for wanting it; for am I not 'the cruel cause of all your wretchedness? have 'I not stept between you and fortune, and been 'the cursed obstacle to all your greatness and 'happiness?'

'Say not so, my love,' answered she. 'Great 'I might have been, but never happy with any 'other man. Indeed, dear Billy, I laugh at the 'fears you formerly raised in me; what seemed 'so terrible at a distance, now it approaches 'nearer, appears to have been a mere bugbear— 'and let this comfort you, that I look on myself 'at this day as the happiest of women; nor have 'I done any thing which I do not rejoice in, and 'would, if I had the gift of prescience, do again.'

Booth was so overcome with this behaviour, that he had no words to answer. To say the truth, it was difficult to find any worthy of the occasion. He threw himself prostrate at her feet, whence poor Amelia was forced to use all her strength as well as entreaties to raise, and place him in his chair.

Such is ever the fortitude of perfect innocence, and such the depression of guilt in minds not utterly abandoned. Booth was naturally of a sanguine temper; nor would any such apprehensions as he mentioned have been sufficient to have restrained his joy, at meeting with his Amelia. In fact, areflexion on the injury he had done her was the sole cause of his grief. This it was that enervated his heart, and threw him into agonies, which all that profusion of heroic tenderness that the most excellent of women intended for his comfort, served only to heighten and aggravate; as the more she rose in his admiration, the more she quickened his sense of his own unworthiness.

After a disagreeable evening, the first of that kind that he had ever past with his Amelia, in which he had the utmost difficulty to force a little cheerfulness, and in which her spirits were at length

Digitized by Google

overpowered by discerning the oppression on his, they retired to rest, or rather to misery, which need not be described.

The next morning at breakfast, Booth began to recover a little from his melancholy, and to taste the company of his children. He now first thought of inquiring of Amelia, by what means she had discovered the place of his confinement. Amelia, after gently rebuking him for not having himself acquainted her with it, informed him, that it was known all over the country, and that she had traced the original of it to her sister; who had spread the news with a malicious joy, and added a circumstance which would have frightened her to death, had not her knowledge of him made her give little credit to it, which was, that he was committed for murder. But though she had discredited this part, she said, the not hearing from him, during several successive posts, made her too apprehensive of the rest: that she got a conveyance therefore for herself and children to Salisbury; from whence the stage-coach had brought them to town, and having deposited the children at his lodging, of which he had sent her an account on his first arrival in town, she took a hack, and came directly to the prison where she heard he was, and where she found him.

Booth excused himself, and with truth, as to his not having writ; for, in fact, he had writ twice from the prison, though he had mentioned nothing of his confinement; but as he sent away his letters after nine at night, the fellow, to whom they were intrusted, had burnt them both for the sake of putting the twopence in his own pocket, or rather in the pocket of the keeper of the next gin-shop.

As to the account which Amelia gave him, it served rather to raise than to satisfy his curiosity. He began to suspect, that some person had seen

Digitized by Google

both him and Miss Matthews together in the prison, and had confounded her case with his; and this the circumstance of murder made the more probable. But who this person should be, he could not guess. After giving himself therefore some pains in forming conjectures to no purpose, he was forced to rest contented with his ignorance of the real truth.

Two or three days now past without producing any thing remarkable; unless it were, that Booth more and more recovered his spirits, and had now almost regained his former degree of cheerfulness, when the following letter arrived, again to torment him:——

'DEAR BILLY,

'To convince you I am the most reasonable of 'women, I have given you up three whole days 'to the unmolested possession of my fortunate 'rival, I can refrain no longer from letting you 'know that I lodge in Dean-street, not far from 'the church, at the sign of the Pelican and Trum-'pet; where I expect this evening to see you— 'Believe me, I am with more affection than any 'other woman in the world can be,

'My dear Billy,

'Your affectionate, fond, doating

'F. MATTHEWS.'

Booth tore the letter with rage, and threw it into the fire; resolving never to visit the lady more, unless it was to pay her the money she had lent him, which he was determined to do the very first opportunity; for it was not at present in his power.

This letter threw him back into his fit of dejection, in which he had not continued long, when a packet from the country brought him the following from his friend Dr. Harrison;

Digitized by Google

'SIR, *Lyons, January* 21, N. S.

'THOUGH I am now on my return home, I 'have taken up my pen to communicate to you 'some news I have heard from England, which 'gives me much uneasiness, and concerning which 'I can indeed deliver my sentiments with much 'more ease this way than any other. In my an-'swer to your last, I very freely gave you my 'opinion, in which it was my misfortune to dis-'approve of every step you had taken; but those 'were all pardonable errors. Can you be so par-'tial to yourself, upon cool and sober reflexion, 'to think what I am going to mention is so? I 'promise you, it appears to me a folly of so mon-'strous a kind, that, had I heard it from any but 'a person of the highest honour, I should have 'rejected it as utterly incredible. I hope you 'already guess what I am about to name; since, 'Heaven forbid, your conduct should afford you 'any choice of such gross instances of weakness. 'In a word, then, you have set up an equipage. 'What shall I invent in your excuse, either to 'others or to myself? In truth, I can find no 'excuse for you, and what is more, I am certain 'you can find none for yourself. I must deal 'therefore very plainly and sincerely with you. 'Vanity is always contemptible; but when joined 'with dishonesty, it becomes odious and detest-'able. At whose expense are you to support this 'equipage? is it not entirely at the expense of 'others? and will it not finally end in that of your 'poor wife and children? you know you are two 'years in arrears to me. If I could impute this to 'any extraordinary or common accident, I think 'I should never have mentioned it; but I will not 'suffer my money to support the ridiculous, 'and, I must say, criminal vanity of any one. I 'expect, therefore, to find, at my return, that you

Digitized by Google

'have either discharged my whole debt, or your 'equipage. Let me beg you seriously to consider 'you circumstances and condition in life, and to 'remember that your situation will not justify 'any the least unnecessary expense. *Simply to 'be poor*, says my favourite Greek historian, *was 'not held scandalous by the wise Athenians, but 'highly so, to owe that poverty to our own indis-'cretion.* Present my affections to Mrs. Booth, 'and be assured, that I shall not, without great 'reason, and great pain too, ever cease to be,

'Your most faithful friend,

'R. HARRISON.'

Had this letter come at any other time, it would have given Booth the most sensible affliction; but so totally had the affair of Miss Matthews possessed his mind, that, like a man in the most raging fit of the gout, he was scarce capable of any additional torture; nay, he even made an use of this latter epistle, as it served to account to Amelia for that concern which he really felt on another account. The poor deceived lady, therefore, applied herself to give him comfort where he least wanted it. She said, he might easily perceive that the matter had been misrepresented to the doctor, who would not, she was sure, retain the least anger against him when he knew the real truth.

After a short conversation on this subject, in which Booth appeared to be greatly consoled by the arguments of his wife, they parted. He went to take a walk in the Park, and she remained at home, to prepare him his dinner.

He was no sooner departed than his little boy, not quite six years old, said to Amelia, 'La! 'mamma, what is the matter with poor papa, what 'makes him look so as if he was going to cry? he 'is not half so merry as he used to be in the

Digitized by Google

'country.' Amelia answered, 'Oh! my dear, 'your papa is only a little thoughtful, he will be 'merry again soon.'—Then looking fondly on her children, she burst into an agony of tears, and cried, 'Oh Heavens! what have these poor little 'infants done? why will the barbarous world en- 'deavour to starve them, by depriving us of our 'only friend?—O my dear, your father is ruined, 'and we are undone!'—The children presently accompanied their mother's tears, and the daughter cried—'Why, will any body hurt poor papa? hath 'he done any harm to any body?'—'No, my dear 'child,' said the mother, 'he is the best man in 'the world, and therefore they hate him.' Upon which the boy, who was extremely sensible at his years, answered, 'Nay, mamma, how can that be? 'have not you often told me, that if I was good, 'every body would love me?' 'All good people 'will,' answered she. 'Why don't they love papa 'then?' replied the child, 'for I am sure he is 'very good.' 'So they do, my dear,' said the mother, 'but there are more bad people in the 'world, and they will hate you for your goodness.' 'Why then bad people,' cries the child, 'are loved 'by more than the good.'—'No matter for that, 'my dear,' said she, 'the love of one good person 'is more worth having, than that of a thousand 'wicked ones; nay, if there was no such person 'in the world, still you must be a good boy; for 'there is one in Heaven who will love you, and 'his love is better for you than that of all man- 'kind.'

This little dialogue, we are apprehensive, will be read with contempt by many; indeed, we should not have thought it worth recording, was it not for the excellent example which Amelia here gives to all mothers. This admirable woman never let a day pass, without instructing her children in some lesson of religion and morality. By which

Digitized by Google

means she had, in their tender minds, so strongly annexed the ideas of fear and shame to every idea of evil of which they were susceptible, that it must require great pains and length of habit to separate them. Though she was the tenderest of mothers, she never suffered any symptom of malevolence to shew itself in their most trifling actions without discouragement, without rebuke; and, if it broke forth with any rancour, without punishment. In which she had such success, that not the least marks of pride, envy, malice, or spite discovered itself in any of their little words or deeds.

CHAP. IV.

In which Amelia appears in no unamiable Light.

AMELIA, with the assistance of a little girl, who was their only servant, had drest her dinner; and she had likewise drest herself as neat as any lady, who had a regular set of servants, could have done; when Booth returned, and brought with him his friend James, whom he had met with in the Park; and who, as Booth absolutely refused to dine away from his wife, to whom he had promised to return, had invited himself to dine with him. Amelia had none of that paltry pride which possesses so many of her sex, and which disconcerts their tempers, and gives them the air and looks of furies, if their husbands bring in an unexpected guest, without giving them timely warning to provide a sacrifice to their own vanity. Amelia received her husband's friend with the utmost complaisance and good humour; she made indeed some apology for the homeliness of her dinner; but it was politely turned as a compliment to Mr. James's friendship, which could carry him where he was sure of being so ill entertained; and gave

Digitized by Google

not the least hint how magnificently she would have provided, *had she expected the favour of so much good company.* A phrase which is generally meant to contain not only an apology for the lady of the house, but a tacit satire on her guests for their intrusion, and is at least a strong insinuation that they are not welcome.

Amelia failed not to inquire very earnestly after her old friend Mrs. James, formerly Miss Bath, and was very sorry to find that she was not in town. The truth was, as James had married out of a violent liking of, or appetite to, her person, possession had surfeited him, and he was now grown so heartily tired of his wife, that she had very little of his company; she was forced therefore to content herself with being the mistress of a large house and equipage in the country, ten months in the year by herself. The other two he indulged her with the diversions of the town, but then, though they lodged under the same roof, she had little more of her husband's society, than if they had been one hundred miles apart. With all this, as she was a woman of calm passions, she made herself contented; for she had never had any violent affection for James; the match was of the prudent kind, and to her advantage; for his fortune, by the death of an uncle, was become very considerable; and she had gained every thing by the bargain but a husband, which her constitution suffered her to be very well satisfied without.

When Amelia, after dinner, retired to her children, James began to talk to his friend concerning his affairs. He advised Booth very earnestly to think of getting again into the army, in which he himself had met with such success, that he had obtained the command of a regiment, to which his brother-in-law was lieutenant-colonel. These preferments they both owed to the favour of fortune only; for though there was no objection to

Digitized by Google

either of their military characters, yet neither of them had any extraordinary desert; and, if merit in the service was a sufficient recommendation, Booth, who had been twice wounded in the siege, seemed to have the fairest pretensions; but he remained a poor half-pay lieutenant, and the others were, as we have said, one of them a lieutenant-colonel, and the other had a regiment. Such rises we often see in life, without being able to give any satisfactory account of the means, and therefore ascribe them to the good fortune of the person.

Both Colonel James and his brother-in-law were members of parliament; for as the uncle of the former had left him, together with his estate, an almost certain interest in a borough, so he chose to confer this favour on Colonel Bath; a circumstance which would have been highly immaterial to mention here; but as it serves to set forth the goodness of James, who endeavoured to make up in kindness to the family, what he wanted in fondness for his wife.

Colonel James then endeavoured all in his power to persuade Booth to think again of a military life, and very kindly offered him his interest towards obtaining him a company in the regiment under his command. Booth must have been a madman, in his present circumstances, to have hesitated one moment at accepting such an offer, and he well knew Amelia, notwithstanding her aversion to the army, was much too wise to make the least scruple of giving her consent. Nor was he, as it appeared afterwards, mistaken in his opinion of his wife's understanding: for she made not the least objection when it was communicated to her, but contented herself with an express stipulation, that wherever he was commanded to go (for the regiment was now abroad) she would accompany him.

Booth, therefore, accepted his friend's proposal

Digitized by Google

with a profusion of acknowledgements; and it was agreed, that Booth should draw up a memorial of his pretensions, which Colonel James undertook to present to some man of power, and to back it with all the force he had.

Nor did the friendship of the colonel stop here. 'You will excuse me, dear Booth,' said he, 'if 'after what you have told me' (for he had been very explicit in revealing his affairs to him) 'I 'suspect you must want money at this time. If 'that be the case, as I am certain it must be, I 'have fifty pieces at your service.' This generosity brought the tears into Booth's eyes; and he at length confest, that he had not five guineas in the house; upon which James gave him a bank-bill for twenty pounds, and said, he would give him thirty more the next time he saw him.

Thus did this generous colonel (for generous he really was to the highest degree) restore peace and comfort to this little family; and by this act of beneficence make two of the worthiest people two of the happiest that evening.

Here, reader, give me leave to stop a minute, to lament that so few are to be found of this benign disposition; that, while wantonness, vanity, avarice and ambition are every day rioting and triumphing in the follies and weakness, the ruin and desolation of mankind, scarce one man in a thousand is capable of tasting the happiness of others. Nay, give me leave to wonder that pride, which is constantly struggling, and often imposing on itself to gain some little pre-eminence, should so seldom hint to us the only certain as well as laudable way of setting ourselves above another man, and that is, by becoming his benefactor.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. V.

Containing an Eulogium upon Innocence, and other grave Matters.

BOOTH past that evening, and all the succeeding day, with his Amelia, without the interruption of almost a single thought concerning Miss Matthews, after having determined to go on the Sunday, the only day he could venture without the verge in the present state of his affairs, and pay her what she had advanced for him in the prison. But she had not so long patience; for the third day, while he was sitting with Amelia, a letter was brought to him. As he knew the hand, he immediately put it in his pocket unopened, not without such an alteration in his countenance, that had Amelia, who was then playing with one of the children, cast her eyes towards him, she must have remarked it. This accident, however, luckily gave him time to recover himself; for Amelia was so deeply engaged with the little one, that she did not even remark the delivery of the letter. The maid soon after returned into the room, saying, the chairman desired to know if there was any answer to the letter—'What letter,' cries Booth.—'The letter 'I gave you just now,' answered the girl.—'Sure,' cries Booth, 'the child is mad, you gave me no 'letter.'—'Yes, indeed, I did, Sir,' said the poor girl. 'Why, then, as sure as fate,' cries Booth, 'I threw it into the fire in my reverie; why, 'child, why did you not tell me it was a letter? 'bid the chairman come up,—stay, I will go down 'myself; for he will otherwise dirt the stairs with 'his feet.'

Amelia was gently chiding the girl for her carelessness, when Booth returned, saying, it was very true that she had delivered him a letter from

Digitized by Google

Colonel James, and that perhaps it might be of consequence. 'However,' says he, 'I will step to 'the coffee-house, and send him an account of 'this strange accident, which I know he will par- 'don in my present situation.'

Booth was overjoyed at this escape, which poor Amelia's total want of all jealousy and suspicion made it very easy for him to accomplish; but his pleasure was considerably abated, when, upon opening the letter, he found it to contain, mixed with several very strong expressions of love, some pretty warm ones of the upbraiding kind; but what most alarmed him was a hint, that it was in her (Miss Matthews's) power, to make Amelia as miserable as herself. Besides the general knowledge of

——— *Furens quid fœmina possit,*

he had more particular reasons to apprehend the rage of a lady, who had given so strong an instance how far she could carry her revenge. She had already sent a chairman to his lodgings, with a positive command not to return without an answer to her letter. This might of itself have possibly occasioned a discovery; and he thought he had great reason to fear, that if she did not carry matters so far as purposely and avowedly to reveal the secret to Amelia, her indiscretion would at least effect the discovery of that which he would at any price have concealed. Under these terrors he might, I belive, be considered as the most wretched of human beings.

O innocence, how glorious and happy a portion art thou to the breast that possesses thee! thou fearest neither the eyes nor the tongues of men. Truth, the most powerful of all things, is thy strongest friend; and the brighter the light is in which thou art displayed, the more it discovers thy transcendent beauties. Guilt, on the con-

Digitized by Google

trary, like a base thief, suspects every eye that beholds him to be privy to his transgressions, and every tongue that mentions his name to be proclaiming them. Fraud and falsehood are his weak and treacherous allies; and he lurks trembling in the dark, dreading every ray of light, lest it should discover him, and give him up to shame and punishment.

While Booth was walking in the Park with all these horrors in his mind, he again met his friend Colonel James, who soon took notice of that deep concern which the other was incapable of hiding. After some little conversation, Booth said, 'My 'dear colonel, I am sure I must be the most insen- 'sible of men, if I did not look on you as the best 'and the truest friend; I will, therefore, without 'scruple, repose a confidence in you of the highest 'kind. I have often made you privy to my ne- 'cessities, I will now acquaint you with my shame, 'provided you have leisure enough to give me a 'hearing: for I must open to you a long history, 'since I will not reveal my fault, without inform- 'ing you, at the same time, of those circum- 'stances which, I hope, will in some measure 'excuse it.'

The colonel very readily agreed to give his friend a patient hearing. So they walked directly to a coffee-house at the corner of Spring-Garden, where, being in a room by themselves, Booth opened his whole heart, and acquainted the colonel with his amour with Miss Matthews, from the very beginning to his receiving that letter which had caused all his present uneasiness, and which he now delivered into his friend's hand.

The colonel read the letter very attentively twice over (he was silent indeed long enough to have read it oftener); and then, turning to Booth, said, 'Well, Sir; and is it so grievous a calamity 'to be the object of a young lady's affection; es-

Digitized by Google

'pecially of one whom you allow to be so ex-
'tremely handsome?' 'Nay, but my dear friend,'
cries Booth, 'do not jest with me; you who
'know my Amelia.' 'Well, my dear friend,' an-
swered James, 'and you know Amelia, and this
'lady too—But what would you have me do for
'you?' 'I would have you give me your advice,'
says Booth, 'by what method I shall get rid of
'this dreadful woman without a discovery.' 'And
'do you really,' cries the other, 'desire to get rid
'of her?' 'Can you doubt it,' saith Booth, 'after
'what I have communicated to you, and after
'what you yourself have seen in my family? for
'I hope, notwithstanding this fatal slip, I do not
'appear to you in the light of a profligate.'
'Well,' answered James, 'and whatever light I
'may appear to you in, if you are really tired of
'the lady, and if she be really what you have re-
'presented her, I'll endeavour to take her off your
'hands; but I insist upon it, that you do not de-
'ceive me in any particular.' Booth protested in
the most solemn manner, that every word which
he had spoken was strictly true; and being asked
whether he would give his honour never more to
visit the lady, he assured James that he never
would. He then, at his friend's request, delivered
him Miss Matthews's letter, in which was a second
direction to her lodgings, and declared to him,
that if he could bring him safely out of this ter-
rible affair, he should think himself to have a still
higher obligation to his friendship, than any which
he had already received from it.

Booth pressed the colonel to go home with him
to dinner; but he excused himself, being, as he
said, already engaged. However, he undertook in
the afternoon to do all in his power, that Booth
should receive no more alarms from the quarter of
Miss Matthews, whom the colonel undertook to
pay all the demands she had on his friend. They

Digitized by Google

then separated. The colonel went to dinner at the King's-Arms, and Booth returned in high spirits to meet his Amelia.

The next day, early in the morning, the colonel came to the coffee-house, and sent for his friend, who lodged but at a little distance. The colonel told him he had a little exaggerated the lady's beauty; however, he said, he excused that: 'For 'you might think, perhaps,' cries he, 'that your 'inconstancy to the finest woman in the world 'might want some excuse. Be that as it will,' said he, 'you may make yourself easy, as it will 'be, I am convinced, your own fault, if you have 'ever any further molestation from Miss Mat-'thews.'

Booth poured forth very warmly a great profusion of gratitude on this occasion; and nothing more anywise material past at this interview, which was very short, the colonel being in a great hurry, as he had, he said, some business of very great importance to transact that morning.

The colonel had now seen Booth twice, without remembering to give him the thirty pounds. This the latter imputed entirely to forgetfulness; for he had always found the promises of the former to be equal in value with the notes or bonds of other people. He was more surprised at what happened the next day, when meeting his friend in the Park, he received only a cold salute from him; and though he past him five or six times, and the colonel was walking with a single officer of no great rank, and with whom he seemed in no earnest conversation, yet could not Booth, who was alone, obtain any further notice from him.

This gave the poor man some alarm; though he could scarce persuade himself there was any design in all this coldness or forgetfulness. Once he imagined that he had lessened himself in the colonel's opinion, by having discovered his in-

Digitized by Google

constancy to Amelia; but the known character of the other presently cured him of this suspicion, for he was a perfect libertine with regard to women; that being indeed the principal blemish in his character, which otherwise might have deserved much commendation for good nature, generosity, and friendship. But he carried this one to a most unpardonable height; and made no scruple of openly declaring, that if he ever liked a woman well enough to be uneasy on her account, he would cure himself, if he could, by enjoying her, whatever might be the consequence.

Booth could not therefore be persuaded that the colonel would so highly resent in another a fault, of which he was himself most notoriously guilty. After much consideration, he could derive this behaviour from nothing better than a capriciousness in his friend's temper, from a kind of inconstancy of mind, which makes men grow weary of their friends, with no more reason than they often are of their mistresses. To say the truth, there are jilts in friendship as well as in love; and by the behaviour of some men in both, one would almost imagine that they industriously sought to gain the affections of others, with a view only of making the parties miserable.

This was the consequence of the colonel's behaviour to Booth. Former calamities had afflicted him, but this almost distracted him; and the more so, as he was not able well to account for such conduct, nor to conceive the reason of it.

Amelia, at his return, presently perceived the disturbance in his mind, though he endeavoured with his utmost power to hide it; and he was at length prevailed upon by her entreaties to discover to her the cause of it; which she no sooner heard, than she applied as judicious a remedy to his disordered spirits, as either of those great mental physicians, Tully or Aristotle, could have thought of.

Digitized by Google

She used many arguments to persuade him that he was in an error; and had mistaken forgetfulness and carelessness for a designed neglect.

But as this physic was only eventually good, and as its efficacy depended on her being in the right, a point in which she was not apt to be too positive, she thought fit to add some consolation of a more certain and positive kind. 'Admit,' said she, 'my dear, that Mr. James should prove 'the unaccountable person you have suspected, 'and should, without being able to allege any 'cause, withdraw his friendship from you (for 'surely the accident of burning his letter is too 'trifling and ridiculous to mention), why should 'this grieve you? the obligations he hath conferred 'on you, I allow, ought to make his misfortunes 'almost your own; but they should not, I think, 'make you see his faults so very sensibly, espe-'cially when, by one of the greatest faults in the 'world committed against yourself, he hath con-'siderably lessened all obligations; for sure, if the 'same person who hath contributed to my hap-'piness at one time, doth every thing in his 'power maliciously and wantonly to make me 'miserable at another, I am very little obliged to 'such a person. And let it be a comfort to my 'dear Billy, that, however other friends may 'prove false and fickle to him, he hath one friend, 'whom no inconstancy of her own, nor any 'change of his fortune, nor time, nor age, nor 'sickness, nor any accident, can ever alter; but 'who will esteem, will love, and doat on him for 'ever.' So saying, she flung her snowy arms about his neck, and gave him a caress so tender, that it seemed almost to balance all the malice of his fate.

And, indeed, the behaviour of Amelia would have made him completely happy, in defiance of all adverse circumstances, had it not been for those

Digitized by Google

bitter ingredients which he himself had thrown into his cup; and which prevented him from truly relishing his Amelia's sweetness, by cruelly reminding him how unworthy he was of this excellent creature.

Booth did not long remain in the dark as to the conduct of James, which, at first, appeared to him to be so great a mystery; for this very afternoon he received a letter from Miss Matthews, which unravelled the whole affair. By this letter, which was full of bitterness and upbraiding, he discovered that James was his rival with that lady, and was, indeed, the identical person who had sent the hundred pound note to Miss Matthews, when in the prison. He had reason to believe likewise, as well by the letter as by other circumstances, that James had hitherto been an unsuccessful lover; for the lady, though she had forfeited all title to virtue, had not yet so far forfeited all pretensions to delicacy, as to be, like the dirt in the street, indifferently common to all. She distributed her favours only to those she liked, in which number that gentleman had not the happiness of being included.

When Booth had made this discovery, he was not so little versed in human nature, as any longer to hesitate at the true motive to the colonel's conduct; for he well knew how odious a sight a happy rival is to an unfortunate lover. I believe he was, in reality glad to assign the cold treatment he had received from his friend, to a cause, which, however unjustifiable, is at the same time highly natural; and to acquit him of a levity, fickleness, and caprice, which he must have been unwillingly obliged to have seen in a much worse light.

He now resolved to take the first opportunity of accosting the colonel, and of coming to a perfect explanation upon the whole matter. He debated likewise with himself, whether he should not throw himself at Amelia's feet, and confess a crime to

Digitized by Google

her, which he found so little hopes of concealing, and which he foresaw would occasion him so many difficulties and terrors to endeavour to conceal. Happy had it been for him, had he wisely pursued this step; since, in all probability, he would have received immediate forgiveness from the best of women; but he had not sufficient resolution; or, to speak perhaps more truly, he had too much pride to confess his guilt, and preferred the danger of the highest inconveniencies to the certainty of being put to the blush.

CHAP. VI.

In which may appear, that Violence is sometimes done to the Name of Love.

WHEN that happy day came, in which unhallowed hands are forbidden to contaminate the shoulders of the unfortunate, Booth went early to the colonel's house, and being admitted to his presence, began with great freedom, though with great gentleness, to complain of his not having dealt with him with more openness. 'Why, my 'dear colonel,' said he, 'would you not acquaint 'me with that secret which this letter hath dis-'closed?' James read the letter, at which his countenance changed more than once; and then, after a short silence, said, 'Mr. Booth, I have 'been to blame, I own it; and you upbraid me 'with justice. The true reason was, that I was 'ashamed of my own folly. D—n me, Booth, if 'I have not been a most consummate fool, a very 'dupe to this woman; and she hath a particular 'pleasure in making me so. I know what the 'impertinence of virtue is, and I can submit to it; 'but to be treated thus by a whore—You must 'forgive me, dear Booth, but your success was a 'kind of triumph over me, which I could not bear.

Digitized by Google

'I own, I have not the least reason to conceive 'any anger against you; and yet, curse me, if I 'should not have been less displeased at your ly- 'ing with my own wife; nay, I could almost 'have parted with half my fortune to you more 'willingly, than have suffered you to receive that 'trifle of my money, which you received at her 'hands. However, I ask your pardon, and I 'promise you, I will never more think of you with 'the least ill-will, on the account of this woman; 'but as for her, d—n me, if I do not enjoy her by 'some means or other, whatever it costs me; for 'I am already above two hundred pounds out of 'pocket, without having scarce had a smile in 'return.'

Booth expressed much astonishment at this declaration; he said, he could not conceive how it was possible to have such an affection for a woman, who did not shew the least inclination to return it. James gave her a hearty curse, and said, 'Pox of 'her inclination; I want only the possession of her 'person; and that you will allow is a very fine one. 'But, besides my passion for her, she hath now 'piqued my pride; for how can a man of my for- 'tune brook being refused by a whore?' 'Since 'you are so set on the business,' cries Booth, 'you 'will excuse my saying so; I fancy you had better 'change your method of applying to her, for, as 'she is, perhaps, the vainest woman upon earth, 'your bounty may probably do you little service; 'nay, may rather actually disoblige her. Vanity is 'plainly her predominant passion, and, if you will 'administer to that, it will infallibly throw her into 'your arms. To this I attribute my own unfortu- 'nate success. Whilst she relieved my wants and 'distresses, she was daily feeding her own vanity; 'whereas, as every gift of yours asserted your su- 'periority, it rather offended than pleased her. In- 'deed, women generally love to be of the obliging

Digitized by Google

'side; and if we examine their favourites, we shall 'find them to be much oftener such as they have 'conferred obligations on, than such as they have 'received them from.'

There was something in this speech which pleased the colonel; and he said, with a smile, 'I 'don't know how it is, Will; but you know women 'better than I.' 'Perhaps, colonel,' answered Booth, 'I have studied their minds more.' 'I 'don't, however, much envy you your knowledge,' replied the other; 'for I never think their minds 'worth considering. However, I hope I shall pro-'fit a little by your experience with Miss Mat-'thews. Damnation seize the proud insolent har-'lot! the devil take me, if I don't love her more 'than I ever loved a woman!'

The rest of their conversation turned on Booth's affairs. The colonel again reassumed the part of a friend, gave him the remainder of the money, and promised to take the first opportunity of laying his memorial before a great man.

Booth was greatly overjoyed at this success. Nothing now lay on his mind, but to conceal his frailty from Amelia, to whom he was afraid Miss Matthews, in the rage of her resentment, would communicate it. This apprehension made him stay almost constantly at home; and he trembled at every knock at the door. His fear, moreover, betrayed him into a meanness which he would have heartily despised on any other occasion. This was to order the maid to deliver him any letter directed to Amelia; at the same time strictly charging her not to acquaint her mistress with her having received any such orders.

A servant of any acuteness would have formed strange conjectures from such an injunction; but this poor girl was of perfect simplicity; so great indeed was her simplicity, that had not Amelia been void of all suspicion of her husband, the

Digitized by Google

maid would have soon after betrayed her master.

One afternoon, while they were drinking tea, little Betty, so was the maid called, came into the room; and calling her master forth, delivered him a card which was directed to Amelia. Booth having read the card, on his return into the room, chid the girl for calling him, saying, 'If you can 'read, child, you must see it was directed to your 'mistress.' — To this the girl answered pertly enough, 'I am sure, Sir, you ordered me to bring 'every letter first to you.' This hint, with many women, would have been sufficient to have blown up the whole affair; but Amelia, who heard what the girl said, through the medium of love and confidence, saw the matter in a much better light than it deserved; and, looking tenderly on her husband, said, 'Indeed, my love, I must blame 'you for a conduct, which, perhaps, I ought ra- 'ther to praise, as it proceeds only from the ex- 'treme tenderness of your affection. But why will 'you endeavour to keep any secrets from me? be- 'lieve me, for my own sake, you ought not; for, 'as you cannot hide the consequences, you make 'me always suspect ten times worse than the rea- 'lity. While I have you and my children well 'before my eyes, I am capable of facing any news 'which can arrive; for what ill news can come '(unless indeed it concerns my little babe in the 'country) which doth not relate to the badness of 'our circumstances? and those, I thank Heaven, 'we have now a fair prospect of retrieving. Be- 'sides, dear Billy, though my understanding be 'much inferior to yours, I have sometimes had the 'happiness of luckily hitting on some argument 'which hath afforded you comfort. This you 'know, my dear, was the case with regard to Co- 'lonel James, whom I persuaded you to think you 'had mistaken, and you see the event proved me

Digitized by Google

'in the right.' So happily, both for herself and Mr. Booth, did the excellence of this good woman's disposition deceived her, and force her to see every thing in the most advantageous light to her husband.

The card being now inspected, was found to contain the compliments of Mrs. James to Mrs. Booth, with an account of her being arrived in town, and having brought with her a very great cold. Amelia was overjoyed at the news of her arrival; and having drest herself in the utmost hurry, left her children to the care of her husband, and ran away to pay her respects to her friend, whom she loved with a most sincere affection. But how was she disappointed, when, eager with the utmost impatience, and exulting with the thoughts of presently seeing her beloved friend, she was answered at the door that the lady was not at home! nor could she, upon telling her name, obtain any admission. This, considering the account she had received of the lady's cold, greatly surprised her; and she returned home very much vexed at her disappointment.

Amelia, who had no suspicion that Mrs. James was really at home, and, as the phrase is, was denied, would have made a second visit the next morning, had she not been prevented by a cold, which she herself now got, and which was attended with a slight fever. This confined her several days to her house, during which Booth officiated as her nurse, and never stirred from her.

In all this time she heard not a word from Mrs. James, which gave her some uneasiness, but more astonishment. The tenth day, when she was perfectly recovered, about nine in the evening, when she and her husband were just going to supper, she heard a most violent thundering at the door, and presently after a rustling of silk upon the staircase, at the same time a female voice cried out pretty

Digitized by Google

loud—'Bless me! what am I to climb up another 'pair of stairs?' upon which Amelia, who well knew the voice, presently ran to the door, and ushered in Mrs. James most splendidly dressed; who put on as formal a countenance, and made as formal a courtesy to her old friend, as if she had been her very distant acquaintance.

Poor Amelia, who was going to rush into her friend's arms, was struck motionless by this behaviour; but recollecting her spirits, as she had an excellent presence of mind, she presently understood what the lady meant, and resolved to treat her in her own way. Down therefore the company sat, and silence prevailed for some time, during which Mrs. James surveyed the room with more attention than she would have bestowed on one much finer. At length the conversation began, in which the weather and the diversions of the town were well canvassed. Amelia, who was a woman of great humour, performed her part to admiration; so that a bystander would have doubted, in every other article than dress, which of the two was the most accomplished fine lady.

After a visit of twenty minutes, during which not a word of any former occurrences was mentioned, nor indeed any subject of discourse started, except only those two above-mentioned, Mrs. James rose from her chair, and retired in the same formal manner in which she had approached. We will pursue her for the sake of the contrast, during the rest of the evening. She went from Amelia directly to a rout, where she spent two hours in a crowd of company, talked again and again over the diversions and news of the town, played two rubbers at whist, and then retired to her own apartment, where, having passed another hour in undressing herself, she went to her own bed.

Booth and his wife, the moment their companion was gone, sat down to supper on a piece of cold meat, the remains of their dinner. After which,

Digitized by Google

over a pint of wine, they entertained themselves for a while with the ridiculous behaviour of their visitant. But Amelia declaring she rather saw her as the object of pity than anger, turned the discourse to pleasanter topics. The little actions of their children, the former scenes and future prospects of their life, furnished them with many pleasant ideas; and the contemplation of Amelia's recovery threw Booth into raptures. At length they retired, happy in each other.

It is possible some readers may be no less surprised at the behaviour of Mrs. James, than was Amelia herself, since they may have perhaps received so favourable an impression of that lady from the account given of her by Mr. Booth, that her present demeanour may seem unnatural and inconsistent with her former character. But they will be pleased to consider the great alteration in her circumstances, from a state of dependency on a brother, who was himself no better than a soldier of fortune, to that of being wife to a man of a very large estate, and considerable rank in life. And what was her present behaviour more than that of a fine lady, who considered form and show as essential ingredients of human happiness, and imagined all friendship to consist in ceremony, courtesies, messages, and visits? in which opinion, she hath the honour to think with much the larger part of one sex, and no small number of the other.

CHAP. VII.

Containing a very extraordinary and pleasing Incident.

THE next evening, Booth and Amelia went to walk in the Park with their children. They were now on the verge of the Parade, and Booth was

Digitized by Google

describing to his wife the several buildings round it; when, on a sudden, Amelia, missing her little boy, cried out, 'Where's little Billy?' Upon which, Booth casting his eyes over the grass, saw a foot-soldier shaking the boy at a little distance. At this sight, without making any answer to his wife, he leapt over the rails, and running directly up to the fellow, who had a firelock with a bayonet fixed in his hand, he seized him by the collar, and tript up his heels, and, at the same time, wrested his arms from him. A sergeant upon duty, seeing the affray at some distance, ran presently up, and being told what had happened, gave the sentinel a hearty curse, and told him he deserved to be hanged. A by-stander gave this information; for Booth was returned with his little boy to meet Amelia, who staggered towards him as fast as she could, all pale and breathless, and scarce able to support her tottering limbs. The sergeant now came up to Booth, to make an apology for the behaviour of the soldier, when, of a sudden, he turned almost as pale as Amelia herself. He stood silent whilst Booth was employed in comforting and recovering his wife; and then addressing himself to him, said, 'Bless me! lieutenant, could I imagine it had been 'your honour; and was it my little master that 'the rascal used so—I am glad I did not know it, 'for I should certainly have run my halbert into 'him.'

Booth presently recognised his old faithful servant Atkinson, and gave him a hearty greeting; saying, He was very glad to see him in his present situation. 'Whatever I am,' answered the sergeant, 'I shall always think I owe it to your honour.' Then taking the little boy by the hand—he cried, 'What a vast fine young gentleman master is 'grown!' and cursing the soldier's inhumanity, swore heartily he would make him pay for it.

As Amelia was much disordered with her fright, she did not recollect her foster-brother till he was

Digitized by Google

introduced to her by Booth; but she no sooner knew him, than she bestowed a most obliging smile on him; and calling him by the name of honest Joe, said, she was heartily glad to see him in England.——'See, my dear,' cries Booth, 'what pre-'ferment your old friend is come to. You would 'scarce know him, I believe, in his present state 'of finery.' 'I am very well pleased to see it,' answered Amelia, 'and I wish him joy of being made 'an officer with all my heart.' In fact, from what Mr. Booth said, joined to the sergeant's laced coat, she believed that he had obtained a commission. So weak and absurd is human vanity, that this mistake of Amelia's possibly put poor Atkinson out of countenance; for he looked at this instant more silly than he had ever done in his life; and making her a most respectful bow, muttered something about obligations, in a scarce articulate or intelligible manner.

The sergeant had, indeed, among many other qualities, that modesty which a Latin author honours by the name of ingenuous: Nature had given him this, notwithstanding the meanness of his birth; and six years conversation in the army had not taken it away. To say the truth, he was a noble fellow; and Amelia, by supposing he had a commission in the guards, had been guilty of no affront to that honourable body,

Booth had a real affection for Atkinson, though, in fact, he knew not half his merit. He acquainted him with his lodgings, where he earnestly desired to see him.

Amelia, who was far from being recovered from the terrors into which the seeing her husband engaged with the soldier had thrown her, desired to go home: nor was she well able to walk without some assistance. While she supported herself, therefore, on her husband's arm, she told Atkinson, she should be obliged to him, if he would take care of the children. He readily accepted the office;

Digitized by Google

but, upon offering his hand to Miss, she refused, and burst into tears. Upon which the tender mother resigned Booth to her children, and put herself under the sergeant's protection; who conducted her safe home, though she often declared she feared she should drop down by the way. The fear of which so affected the sergeant (for besides the honour which he himself had for the lady, he knew how tenderly his friend loved her) that he was unable to speak; and had not his nerves been so strongly braced that nothing could shake them, he had enough in his mind to have set him a trembling equally with the lady.

When they arrived at the lodgings, the mistress of the house opened the door, who, seeing Amelia's condition, threw open the parlour, and begged her to walk in; upon which she immediately flung herself into a chair, and all present thought she would have fainted away—However, she escaped that misery, and having drank a glass of water with a little white wine mixed in it, she began, in a little time, to regain her complexion; and, at length, assured Booth that she was perfectly recovered, but declared she had never undergone so much, and earnestly begged him never to be so rash for the future. She then called her little boy, and gently chid him, saying, 'You must never do so more, 'Billy; you see what mischief you might have 'brought upon your father; and what you have 'made me suffer.' 'La! mamma,' said the child, 'what harm did I do? I did not know that people 'might not walk in the green fields in London. 'I am sure, if I did a fault, the man punished me 'enough for it; for he pinched me almost through 'my slender arm.' He then bared his little arm, which was greatly discoloured by the injury it had received—Booth uttered a most dreadful execration at this sight; and the sergeant, who was now present, did the like.

Atkinson now returned to his guard, and went

Digitized by Google

directly to the officer to acquaint him with the soldier's inhumanity; but he, who was about fifteen years of age, gave the sergeant a great curse, and said the soldier had done very well; for that idle boys ought to be corrected. This, however, did not satisfy poor Atkinson, who, the next day, as soon as the guard was relieved, beat the fellow most unmercifully, and told him he would remember him as long as he stayed in the regiment.

Thus ended this trifling adventure, which some readers will, perhaps, be pleased with seeing related at full length. None, I think, can fail drawing one observation from it; namely, how capable the most insignificant accident is of disturbing human happiness, and of producing the most unexpected and dreadful events. A reflexion which may serve to many moral and religious uses.

This accident produced the first acquaintance between the mistress of the house and her lodgers; for hitherto they had scarce exchanged a word together. But the great concern which the good woman had shewn on Amelia's account at this time, was not likely to pass unobserved or unthanked either by the husband or wife. Amelia, therefore as soon as she was able to go up stairs, invited Mrs. Ellison (for that was her name) to her apartment, and desired the favour of her to stay to supper. She readily complied; and they past a very agreeable evening together, in which the two women seemed to have conceived a most extraordinary liking to each other.

Though beauty in general doth not greatly recommend one woman to another, as it is too apt to create envy; yet, in cases where this passion doth not interfere, a fine woman is often a pleasing object even to some of her own sex; especially when her beauty is attended with a certain air of affability, as was that of Amelia in the highest degree. She was, indeed, a most charming wo-

Digitized by Google

man; and I know not whether the little scar on her nose did not rather add to, than diminish her beauty.

Mrs. Ellison, therefore, was as much charmed with the loveliness of her fair lodger, as with all her other engaging qualities. She was, indeed, so taken with Amelia's beauty that she could not refrain from crying out in a kind of transport of admiration, 'Upon my word, Captain Booth, you 'are the happiest man in the world! Your lady is 'so extremely handsome, that one cannot look at 'her without pleasure.'

This good woman herself had none of these attractive charms to the eye. Her person was short, and immoderately fat; her features were none of the most regular; and her complexion (if indeed she ever had a good one) had considerably suffered by time.

Her good humour and complaisance, however, were highly pleasing to Amelia. Nay, why should we conceal the secret satisfaction which that lady felt from the compliments paid to her person? since such of my readers as like her best, will not be sorry to find that she was a woman.

CHAP. VIII.

Containing various Matters.

A FORTNIGHT had now passed, since Booth had seen or heard from the colonel; which did not a little surprise him, as they had parted so good friends, and as he had so cordially undertaken his cause concerning the memorial, on which all his hopes depended.

The uneasiness which this gave him, farther increased on finding that his friend refused to see him; for he had paid the colonel a visit at nine in the morning, and was told he was not stirring;

Digitized by Google

and at his return back an hour afterwards, the servant said his master was gone out; of which Booth was certain of the falsehood; for he had, during that whole hour, walked backwards and forwards within sight of the colonel's door, and must have seen him, if he had gone out within that time.

The good colonel, however, did not long suffer his friend to continue in the deplorable state of anxiety; for the very next morning Booth received his memorial inclosed in a letter, acquainting him that Mr. James had mentioned his affair to the person he proposed; but that the great man had so many engagements on his hands, that it was impossible for him to make any further promises at this time.

The cold and distant style of this letter, and, indeed, the whole behaviour of James, so different from what it had been formerly, had something so mysterious in it, that it greatly puzzled and perplexed poor Booth; and it was so long before he was able to solve it, that the reader's curiosity will, perhaps, be obliged to us for not leaving him so long in the dark as to this matter. The true reason, then, of the colonel's conduct was this: His unbounded generosity, together with the unbounded extravagance, and consequently the great necessity of Miss Matthews, had, at length, overcome the cruelty of that lady, with whom he likewise had luckily no rival. Above all, the desire of being revenged on Booth, with whom she was, to the highest degree, enraged, had, perhaps, contributed not a little to his success; for she had no sooner condescended to a familiarity with her new lover, and discovered that Captain James, of whom she had heard so much from Booth, was no other than the identical colonel, than she employed every art of which she was mistress, to make an utter breach of friendship between these two. For this purpose, she did not scruple to insinuate, that the

Digitized by Google

colonel was not at all obliged to the character given of him by his friend; and to the account of this latter she placed most of the cruelty which she had shewn to the former.

Had the colonel made a proper use of his reason, and fairly examined the probability of the fact, he could scarce have been imposed upon to believe a matter so inconsistent with all he knew of Booth, and in which that gentleman must have sinned against all the laws of honour without any visible temptation. But in solemn fact, the colonel was so intoxicated with his love, that it was in the power of his mistress to have persuaded him of any thing; besides, he had an interest in giving her credit; for he was not a little pleased with finding a reason for hating the man, whom he could not help hating without any reason, at least, without any which he durst fairly assign even to himself. Henceforth, therefore, he abandoned all friendship for Booth, and was more inclined to put him out of the world, than to endeavour any longer at supporting him in it.

Booth communicated this letter to his wife, who endeavoured, as usual, to the utmost of her power, to console him under one of the greatest afflictions which, I think, can befal a man, namely, the unkindness of a friend; but he had luckily at the same time the greatest blessing in his possession, the kindness of a faithful and beloved wife. A blessing however, which, though it compensates most of the evils of life, rather serves to aggravate the misfortune of distressed circumstances, from the consideration of the share which she is to bear in them.

This afternoon Amelia received a second visit from Mrs. Ellison, who acquainted her that she had a present of a ticket for the oratorio, which would carry two persons into the gallery; and therefore begged the favour of her company thither.

Digitized by Google

Amelia, with many thanks, acknowledged the civility of Mrs. Ellison, but declined accepting her offer; upon which Booth very strenuously insisted on her going, and said to her, 'My dear, 'if you knew the satisfaction I have in any of 'your pleasures, I am convinced you would not 'refuse the favour Mrs. Ellison is so kind to offer 'you; for as you are a lover of music, you, who 'have never been at an oratorio, cannot conceive 'how you will be delighted.'——'I well know 'your goodness, my dear,' answered Amelia, 'but 'I cannot think of leaving my children without 'some person more proper to take care of them 'than this poor girl.' Mrs. Ellison removed this objection by offering her own servant, a very discreet matron, to attend them; but notwithstanding this, and all she could say, with the assistance of Booth, and of the children themselves, Amelia still persisted in her refusal; and the mistress of the house, who knew how far good breeding allows persons to be pressing on these occasions, took her leave.

She was no sooner departed, than Amelia, looking tenderly on her husband, said, 'How can you, 'my dear creature, think that music hath any 'charms for me at this time—Or indeed, do you 'believe that I am capable of any sensation worthy 'the name of pleasure, when neither you nor my 'children are present, or bear any part of it?'

An officer of the regiment to which Booth had formerly belonged, hearing from Atkinson where he lodged, now came to pay him a visit. He told him that several of their old acquaintance were to meet the next Wednesday at a tavern, and very strongly pressed him to be one of the company. Booth was, in truth, what is called a hearty fellow, and loved now and then to take a cheerful glass with his friends; but he excused himself at this time. His friend declared he would take no denial, and he growing very importunate, Amelia at

Digitized by Google

length seconded him. Upon this Booth answered, 'Well, my dear, since you desire me, I will comply, but on one condition, that you go at the same time to the oratorio.' Amelia thought this request reasonable enough, and gave her consent; of which Mrs. Ellison presently received the news, and with great satisfaction.

It may, perhaps, be asked, Why Booth could go to the tavern, and not to the oratorio with his wife?—In truth, then, the tavern was within hallowed ground, that is to say, in the verge of the court; for, of five officers that were to meet there, three, besides Booth, were confined to that air, which hath been always found extremely wholesome to a broken military constitution. And here, if the good reader will pardon the pun, he will scarce be offended at the observation; since, how is it possible that, without running in debt, any persons should maintain the dress and appearance of a gentleman, whose income is not half so good as that of a porter? It is true, that this allowance, small as it is, is a great expense to the public; but if several more unnecessary charges were spared, the public might, perhaps, bear a little increase of this, without much feeling it. They would not, I am sure, have equal reason to complain at contributing to the maintenance of a set of brave fellows, who, at the hazard of their health, their limbs, and their lives, have maintained the safety and honour of their country; as when they find themselves taxed to the support of a set of drones, who have not the least merit or claim to their favour; and who, without contributing in any manner to the good of the hive, live luxuriously on the labours of the industrious bee.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. IX.

In which Amelia, with her Friend, goes to the Oratorio.

NOTHING happened between the Monday and the Wednesday worthy a place in this history. Upon the evening of the latter, the two ladies went to the oratorio, and were there time enough to get a first row in the gallery. Indeed, there was only one person in the house when they came; for Amelia's inclinations, when she gave a loose to them, were pretty eager for this diversion, she being a great lover of music, and particularly of Mr. Handel's compositions. Mrs. Ellison was, I suppose, a great lover likewise of music, for she was the more impatient of the two; which was rather the more extraordinary, as these entertainments were not such novelties to her as they were to poor Amelia.

Though our ladies arrived full two hours before they saw the back of Mr. Handel; yet this time of expectation did not hang extremely heavy on their hands; for, besides their own chat, they had the company of the gentleman whom they found at their first arrival in the gallery, and who, though plainly, or rather roughly dressed, very luckily for the women, happened to be not only well bred, but a person of very lively conversation. The gentleman, on his part, seemed highly charmed with Amelia, and in fact was so; for, though he restrained himself entirely within the rules of good breeding, yet was he in the highest degree officious to catch at every opportunity of shewing his respect, and doing her little services. He procured her a book and wax candle, and held the candle for her himself during the whole entertainment.

Digitized by Google

At the end of the oratorio, he declared he would not leave the ladies till he had seen them safe into their chairs or coach; and at the same time very earnestly entreated that he might have the honour of waiting on them. Upon which Mrs. Ellison, who was a very good-humoured woman, answered, 'Ay sure, Sir, if you please; you have been very 'obliging to us; and a dish of tea shall be at 'your service at any time;' and then told him where she lived.

The ladies were no sooner seated in their hackney-coach, than Mrs. Ellison burst into a loud laughter, and cried, 'I'll be hanged, Madam, if 'you have not made a conquest to-night; and, 'what is very pleasant, I believe the poor gentle-'man takes you for a single lady.' 'Nay,' answered Amelia very gravely, 'I protest I began to 'think at last he was rather too particular, though 'he did not venture at a word that I could be of-'fended at; but if you fancy any such thing, I 'am sorry you invited him to drink tea.' 'Why 'so?' replied Mrs. Ellison, 'Are you angry with 'a man for liking you? if you are, you will be 'angry with almost every man that sees you. If 'I was a man myself I declare I should be in the 'number of your admirers. Poor gentleman, I 'pity him heartily; he little knows that you have 'not a heart to dispose of. For my own part, I 'should not be surprised at seeing a serious propo-'sal of marriage; for I am convinced he is a man 'of fortune, not only by the politeness of his ad-'dress, but by the fineness of his linen, and that 'valuable diamond ring on his finger. But you 'will see more of him when he comes to tea.' 'In-'deed I shall not,' answered Amelia, 'though I 'believe you only rally me; I hope you have a 'better opinion of me, than to think I would go 'willingly into the company of a man who had 'an improper liking for me.' Mrs. Ellison, who

Digitized by Google

was one of the gayest women in the world, repeated the words, improper liking, with a laugh; and cried, 'My dear Mrs. Booth, believe me, you 'are too handsome and too good-humoured for a 'prude. How can you affect being offended at 'what I am convinced is the greatest pleasure of 'womankind, and chiefly, I believe, of us virtuous 'women? for, I assure you, notwithstanding my 'gaiety, I am as virtuous as any prude in Europe.' 'Far be it from me, Madam,' said Amelia, 'to 'suspect the contrary of abundance of women, 'who indulge themselves in much greater free-'doms than I should take, or have any pleasure 'in taking; for I solemnly protest, if I know my 'own heart, the liking of all men, but of one, is 'a matter quite indifferent to me, or rather would 'be highly disagreeable.'

This discourse brought them home, where Amelia, finding her children asleep, and her husband not returned, invited her companion to partake of her homely fare, and down they sat to supper together. The clock struck twelve; and no news being arrived of Booth, Mrs. Ellison began to express some astonishment at his stay, whence she launched into a general reflection on husbands, and soon past to some particular invectives on her own. 'Ah, my dear Madam,' says she, 'I know 'the present state of your mind, by what I have 'myself often felt formerly. I am no stranger to 'the melancholy tone of a midnight clock. It was 'my misfortune to drag on a heavy chain above 'fifteen years with a sottish yoke-fellow. But how 'can I wonder at my fate; since I see even your 'superior charms cannot confine a husband from 'the bewitching pleasures of a bottle.' 'Indeed, 'Madam,' says Amelia, 'I have no reason to 'complain, Mr. Booth is one of the soberest of 'men; but now and then to spend a late hour 'with his friend, is, I think, highly excusable.'

Digitized by Google

'O, no doubt!' cries Mrs. Ellison, 'if he can ex-'cuse himself; but if I was a man—' Here Booth came in and interrupted the discourse. Amelia's eyes flashed with joy the moment he appeared; and he discovered no less pleasure in seeing her. His spirits were indeed a little elevated with wine, so as to heighten his good-humour, without in the least disordering his understanding, and made him such delightful company, that though it was past one in the morning, neither his wife nor Mrs. Ellison thought of their beds during a whole hour.

Early the next morning the sergeant came to Mr. Booth's lodgings, and with a melancholy countenance acquainted him, that he had been the night before at an alehouse, where he heard one Mr. Murphy, an attorney, declare, that he would get a warrant backed against one Captain Booth at the next board of green-cloth. 'I hope, Sir,' said he, 'your honour will pardon me; but by 'what he said, I was afraid he meant your honour; 'and therefore I thought it my duty to tell you; 'for I knew the same thing happen to a gentleman 'here the other day.'

Booth gave Mr. Atkinson many thanks for his information. 'I doubt not,' said he, 'but I am 'the person meant; for it would be foolish in me 'to deny that I am liable to apprehensions of that 'sort.' 'I hope, Sir,' said the sergeant, 'your ho-'nour will soon have reason to fear no man living; 'but in the mean time, if any accident should 'happen, my bail is at your service as far as it 'will go; and I am a housekeeper, and can swear 'myself worth one hundred pounds.' Which hearty and friendly declaration received all those acknowledgements from Booth, which it really deserved.

The poor gentleman was greatly alarmed at this news; but he was altogether as much surprised at Murphy's being the attorney employed against

Digitized by Google

him, as all his debts, except only to Captain James, arose in the country, where he did not know that Mr. Murphy had any acquaintance. However, he made no doubt that he was the person intended, and resolved to remain a close prisoner in his own lodgings, till he saw the event of a proposal which had been made him the evening before at the tavern, where an honest gentleman, who had a post under the government, and who was one of the company, had promised to serve him with the secretary at war, telling him, that he made no doubt of procuring him whole pay in a regiment abroad, which in his present circumstances was very highly worth his acceptance; when, indeed, that and a gaol seemed to be the only alternatives that offered themselves to his choice.

Mr. Booth and his lady spent that afternoon with Mrs. Ellison—an incident which we should scarce have mentioned, had it not been that Amelia gave, on this occasion, an instance of that prudence which should never be off its guard in married women of delicacy; for, before she would consent to drink tea with Mrs. Ellison, she made conditions, that the gentleman who had met them at the oratorio should not be let in. Indeed, this circumspection proved unnecessary in the present instance; for no such visitor ever came; a circumstance which gave great content to Amelia; for that lady had been a little uneasy at the raillery of Mrs. Ellison, and had, upon reflection, magnified every little compliment made her, and every little civility shewn her by the unknown gentleman, far beyond the truth. These imaginations now all subsided again; and she imputed all that Mrs. Ellison had said, either to raillery or mistake.

A young lady made a fourth with them at whist, and likewise stayed the whole evening. Her name was Bennet. She was about the age of five-and-twenty; but sickness had given her an older look,

Digitized by Google

and had a good deal diminished her beauty; of which, young as she was, she plainly appeared to have only the remains in her present possession. She was in one particular the very reverse of Mrs. Ellison, being altogether as remarkably grave as the other was gay. This gravity was not, however, attended with any sourness of temper; on the contrary, she had much sweetness in her countenance, and was perfectly well bred. In short, Amelia imputed her grave deportment to her ill health, and began to entertain a compassion for her, which in good minds, that is to say, in minds capable of compassion, is certain to introduce some little degree of love or friendship.

Amelia was in short so pleased with the conversation of this lady, that, though a woman of no impertinent curiosity, she could not help taking the first opportunity of inquiring who she was. Mrs. Ellison said, that she was an unhappy lady, who had married a young clergyman for love, who, dying of a consumption, had left her a widow in very indifferent circumstances. This account made Amelia still pity her more, and consequently added to the liking which she had already conceived for her. Amelia, therefore, desired Mrs. Ellison to bring her acquainted with Mrs. Bennet, and said she would go any day with her to make that lady a visit. 'There need be no ceremony,' cried Mrs. Ellison, 'she is a woman of no form; and as I saw 'plainly she was extremely pleased with Mrs. 'Booth, I am convinced I can bring her to drink 'tea with you any afternoon you please.'

The two next days Booth continued at home, highly to the satisfaction of his Amelia, who really knew no happiness out of his company, nor scarce any misery in it. She had, indeed, at all times so much of his company when in his power, that she had no occasion to assign any particular reason for his staying with her, and consequently it could give her no cause of suspicion. The Saturday,

Digitized by Google

one of her children was a little disordered with a feverish complaint, which confined her to her room, and prevented her drinking tea in the afternoon with her husband in Mrs. Ellison's apartment, where a noble lord, a cousin of Mrs. Ellison, happened to be present; for though that lady was reduced in her circumstances, and obliged to let out part of her house in lodgings, she was born of a good family, and had some considerable relations.

His lordship was not himself in any office of state; but his fortune gave him great authority with those who were. Mrs. Ellison, therefore, very bluntly took an opportunity of recommending Booth to his consideration. She took the first hint from my lord's calling the gentlemen Captain—To which she answered—'Ay, I wish your 'lordship would make him so. It would be but 'an act of justice, and I know it is in your power 'to do much greater things.' She then mentioned Booth's services, and the wounds he had received at the siege, of which she had heard a faithful account from Amelia.—Booth blushed, and was as silent as a young virgin at the hearing her own praises. His lordship answered, 'Cousin Ellison, 'you know you may command my interest; nay, 'I shall have a pleasure in serving one of Mr. 'Booth's character: for my part, I think merit 'in all capacities ought to be encouraged; but I 'know the ministry are greatly pestered with so-'licitations at this time. However, Mr. Booth 'may be assured I will take the first opportu-'nity; and, in the mean time, I shall be glad of 'seeing him any morning he pleases.' For all these declarations, Booth was not wanting in acknowledgements to the generous peer, any more than he was in secret gratitude to the lady who had shewn so friendly and uncommon a zeal in his favour.

The reader, when he knows the character of this

Digitized by Google

nobleman, may, perhaps, conclude that his seeing Booth alone was a lucky circumstance; for he was so passionate an admirer of women, that he could scarce have escaped the attraction of Amelia's beauty. And few men, as I have observed, have such disinterested generosity as to serve a husband the better, because they are in love with his wife, unless she will condescend to pay a price beyond the reach of a virtuous woman.

Digitized by Google

AMELIA.

BOOK V.

CHAP. I.

In which the Reader will meet with an old Acquaintance.

BOOTH'S affairs put on a better aspect than they had ever worn before, and he was willing to make use of the opportunity of one day in seven to taste the fresh air.

At nine in the morning he went to pay a visit to his old friend Colonel James, resolving, if possible, to have a full explanation of that behaviour which appeared to him so mysterious; but the colonel was as inaccessible as the best defended fortress; and it was as impossible for Booth to pass beyond his entry, as the Spaniards found it to take Gibraltar. He received the usual answers; first, that the colonel was not stirring, and an hour after that he was gone out. All that he got by asking further questions, was only to receive still ruder and ruder answers; by which, if he had been very sagacious, he might have been satisfied how little worth his while it was to desire to go in; for the porter at a great man's door is a kind of thermometer, by which you may discover the warmth or coldness of his master's friendship. Nay, in the highest stations of all, as the great man himself hath his different kinds of salutation,

Digitized by Google

from an hearty embrace with a kiss, and my dear lord, or dear Sir Charles, down to, well Mr. —— what would you have me do? so the porter, to some bows with respect, to others with a smile, to some he bows more, to others less low, to others not at all. Some he just lets in, and others he just shuts out. And in all this they so well correspond, that one would be inclined to think that the great man and his porter had compared their lists together, and, like two actors concerned to act different parts in the same scene, had rehearsed their parts privately together before they ventured to perform in public.

Though Booth did not, perhaps, see the whole matter in this just light, for that in reality it is; yet he was discerning enough to conclude, from the behaviour of the servant, especially when he considered that of the master likewise, that he had entirely lost the friendship of James; and this conviction gave him a concern, that not only the flattering prospect of his lordship's favour was not able to compensate; but which even obliterated, and made him for a while forget, the situation in which he had left his Amelia: and he wandered about almost two hours, scarce knowing where he went, till at last he dropt into a coffee-house near St. James's, where he sat himself down.

He had scarce drank his dish of coffee, before he heard a young officer of the guards cry to another, 'Od, d—n me Jack, here he comes—here's 'old honour and dignity, faith.'' Upon which, he saw a chair open, and out issued a most erect and stately figure indeed, with a vast perriwig on his head, and a vast hat under his arm. This august personage, having entered the room, walked directly up to the upper end, where having paid his respects to all present of any note, to each according to seniority, he at last cast his eyes on Booth, and very civilly, though somewhat coldly, asked him how he did.

Digitized by Google

Booth, who had long recognized the features of his old acquaintance Major Bath, returned the compliment with a very low bow; but did not venture to make the first advance to familiarity, as he was truly possessed of that quality which the Greeks considered in the highest light of honour, and which we term modesty; though indeed, neither ours nor the Latin language hath any word adequate to the idea of the original.

The colonel, after having discharged himself of two or three articles of news, and made his comments upon them, when the next chair to him became vacant, called upon Booth to fill it. He then asked him several questions relating to his affairs; and, when he heard he was out of the army, advised him earnestly to use all means to get in again, saying, that he was a pretty lad, and they must not lose him.

Booth told him in a whisper, that he had a great deal to say to him on that subject, if they were in a more private place; upon this, the colonel proposed a walk in the Park, which the other readily accepted.

During their walk, Booth opened his heart, and among other matters acquainted Colonel Bath, that he feared he had lost the friendship of Colonel James; 'though I am not,' said he, 'conscious of 'having done the least thing to deserve it.'

Bath answered, 'You are certainly mistaken, 'Mr. Booth. I have indeed scarce seen my bro- 'ther since my coming to town; for I have been 'here but two days; however, I am convinced he 'is a man of too nice honour to do any thing in- 'consistent with the true dignity of a gentleman.' Booth answered, 'He was far from accusing him 'of any thing dishonourable.'—'D—n me,' said Bath, 'if there is a man alive can, or dare accuse 'him: if you have the least reason to take any 'thing ill, why don't you go to him? you are a 'gentleman, and his rank doth not protect him

Digitized by Google

'from giving you satisfaction.' 'The affair is not 'of any such kind,' says Booth; 'I have great 'obligations to the colonel, and have more reason 'to lament than complain; and if I could but 'see him, I am convinced I should have no cause 'for either; but I cannot get within his house; 'it was but an hour ago, a servant of his turned 'me rudely from the door.' 'Did a servant of my 'brother use you rudely?' said the colonel, with the utmost gravity. 'I do not know, Sir, in 'what light you see such things; but to me, the 'affront of a servant is the affront of the master; 'and if he doth not immediately punish it, by all 'the dignity of a man, I would see the master's 'nose between my fingers.' Booth offered to explain, but to no purpose; the colonel was got into his stilts; and it was impossible to take him down, nay, it was as much as Booth could possibly do to part with him without an actual quarrel; nor would he, perhaps, have been able to have accomplished it, had not the colonel by accident turned at last to take Booth's side of the question; and before they separated, he swore many oaths that James should give him proper satisfaction.

Such was the end of this present interview, so little to the content of Booth, that he was heartily concerned he had ever mentioned a syllable of the matter to his honourable friend.

CHAP. II.

In which Booth pays a Visit to the noble Lord.

WHEN that day of the week returned, in which Mr. Booth chose to walk abroad, he went to wait on the noble peer, according to his kind invitation.

Digitized by Google

Booth now found a very different reception with this great man's porter, from what he had met with at his friend the colonel's. He no sooner told his name, than the porter with a bow told him his lordship was at home; the door immediately flew wide open; and he was conducted to an antichamber, where a servant told him he would acquaint his lordship with his arrival. Nor did he wait many minutes before the same servant returned, and ushered him to his lordship's apartment.

He found my lord alone, and was received by him in the most courteous manner imaginable. After the first ceremonials were over, his lordship began in the following words: 'Mr. Booth, I do 'assure you, you are very much obliged to my 'cousin Ellison. She hath given you such a cha- 'racter that I shall have a pleasure in doing any 'thing in my power to serve you.—But it will be 'very difficult, I am afraid, to get you a rank at 'home. In the West-Indies, perhaps, or in some 'regiment abroad, it may be more easy; and 'when I consider your reputation as a soldier, I 'make no doubt of your readiness to go to any 'place where the service of your country shall call 'you.' Booth answered, 'That he was highly 'obliged to his lordship, and assured him he would 'with great cheerfulness attend his duty in any 'part of the world. The only thing grievous in 'the exchange of countries,' said he, 'in my opi- 'nion, is to leave those I love behind me, and I 'am sure, I shall never have a second trial equal 'to my first. It was very hard, my lord, to leave 'a young wife big with her first child, and so af- 'fected with my absence, that I had the utmost 'reason to despair of ever seeing her more. After 'such a demonstration of my resolution to sacri- 'fice every other consideration to my duty, I hope 'your lordship will honour me with some confi- 'dence, that I shall make no objection to serve

Digitized by Google

'in any country.' 'My dear Mr. Booth,' answered the lord, 'you speak like a soldier, and I greatly 'honour your sentiments. Indeed, I own the jus- 'tice of your inference from the example you 'have given; for to quit a wife, as you say, in 'the very infancy of marriage, is, I acknowledge, 'some trial of resolution.' Booth answered with a low bow; and then, after some immaterial conversation, his lordship promised to speak immediately to the minister, and appointed Mr. Booth to come to him again on the Wednesday morning, that he might be acquainted with his patron's success. The poor man now blushed and looked silly, till, after some time, he summoned up all his courage to his assistance, and relying on the other's friendship, he opened the whole affair of his circumstances, and confessed that he did not dare stir from his lodgings above one day in seven. His lordship expressed great concern at this account, and very kindly promised to take some opportunity of calling on him at his cousin Ellison's, when he hoped, he said, to bring him comfortable tidings.

Booth soon afterwards took his leave with the most profuse acknowledgements for so much goodness, and hastened home to acquaint his Amelia with what had so greatly overjoyed him. She highly congratulated him on his having found so generous and powerful a friend, towards whom both their bosoms burnt with the warmest sentiments of gratitude. She was not, however, contented, till she had made Booth renew his promise in the most solemn manner of taking her with him. After which, they sat down with their little children to a scrag of mutton and broth, with the highest satisfaction, and very heartily drank his lordship's health in a pot of porter.

In the afternoon this happy couple, if the reader will allow me to call poor people happy,

Digitized by Google

drank tea with Mrs. Ellison, where his lordship's praises being again repeated by both the husband and wife, were very loudly echoed by Mrs. Ellison. While they were here, the young lady, whom we have mentioned at the end of the last book to have made a fourth at whist, and with whom Amelia seemed so much pleased, came in; she was just returned to town from a short visit in the country, and her present visit was unexpected. It was, however, very agreeable to Amelia, who liked her still better upon a second interview, and was resolved to solicit her further acquaintance.

Mrs. Bennet still maintained some little reserve, but was much more familiar and communicative than before. She appeared moreover to be as little ceremonious as Mrs. Ellison had reported her, and very readily accepted Amelia's apology for not paying her the first visit, and agreed to drink tea with her the very next afternoon.

Whilst the above-mentioned company were sitting in Mrs. Ellison's parlour, sergeant Atkinson passed by the window, and knocked at the door. Mrs. Ellison no sooner saw him, than she said, 'Pray, Mr. Booth, who is that genteel young ser-'geant? he was here every day last week, to en-'quire after you.' This was indeed a fact; the sergeant was apprehensive of the design of Murphy; but as the poor fellow had received all his answers from the maid or Mrs. Ellison, Booth had never heard a word of the matter. He was however greatly pleased with what he was now told, and burst forth into great praises of the sergeant, which were seconded by Amelia, who added, that he was her foster brother, and she believed one of the honestest fellows in the world.

'And I'll swear,' cries Mrs. Ellison, 'he is one 'of the prettiest—Do, Mr. Booth, desire him to 'walk in. A sergeant of the guards is a gentle-

Digitized by Google

'man; and I had rather give such a man as you 'describe, a dish of tea, than any beau fribble of 'them all.'

Booth wanted no great solicitation to shew any kind of regard to Atkinson; and accordingly, the sergeant was ushered in, though not without some reluctance on his side. There is, perhaps, nothing more uneasy than those sensations which the French call the *mauvaise honte*, nor any more difficult to conquer; and poor Atkinson would, I am persuaded, have mounted a breach with less concern, than he shewed in walking cross a room before three ladies, two of whom were his avowed well wishers.

Though I do not entirely agree with the late learned Mr. Essex, the celebrated dancing-master's opinion, that dancing is the rudiment of polite education, as he would, I apprehend, exclude every other art and science; yet, it is certain, that persons whose feet have never been under the hands of the professors of that art, are apt to discover this want in their education in every motion, nay, even when they stand or sit still. They seem indeed, to be overburthened with limbs, which they know not how to use, as if, when nature hath finished her work, the dancing-master still is necessary to put it in motion.

Atkinson was at present an example of this observation, which doth so much honour to a profession for which I have a very high regard. He was handsome and exquisitely well made; and yet, as he had never learned to dance, he made so awkward an appearance in Mrs. Ellison's parlour, that the good lady herself, who had invited him in, could at first scarce refrain from laughter at his behaviour. He had not, however, been long in the room, before admiration of his person got the better of such risible ideas. So great is the advantage of beauty in men as well as women, and

Digitized by Google

so sure is this quality in either sex of procuring some regard from the beholder.

The exceeding courteous behaviour of Mrs. Ellison, joined to that of Amelia and Booth, at length dissipated the uneasiness of Atkinson; and he gained sufficient confidence to tell the company some entertaining stories of accidents, that had happened in the army, within his knowledge; which, though they greatly pleased all present, are not however of consequence enough to have a place in this history.

Mrs. Ellison was so very importunate with her company to stay supper, that they all consented. As for the sergeant, he seemed to be none of the least welcome guests. She was, indeed, so pleased with what she had heard of him, and what she saw of him, that when a little warmed with wine, for she was no flincher at the bottle, she began to indulge some freedoms in her discourse towards him, that a little offended Amelia's delicacy, nay, they did not seem to be highly relished by the other lady. Though I am far from insinuating that these exceeded the bounds of decorum, or were, indeed, greater liberties than ladies of the middle age, and especially widows, do frequently allow to themselves.

CHAP. III.

Relating principally to the Affairs of Sergeant Atkinson.

THE next day, when all the same company, Atkinson only excepted, assembled in Amelia's apartment, Mrs. Ellison presently began to discourse of him, and that in terms not only of approbation, but even of affection. She called him her clever sergeant, and her dear sergeant, repeated often that he was the prettiest fellow in the

Digitized by Google

army, and said it was a thousand pities he had not a commission; for that, if he had, she was sure he would become a general.

'I am of your opinion, Madam,' answered Booth; 'and as he hath got one hundred pounds 'of his own already, if he could find a wife now to 'help him to two or three hundred more, I think 'he might easily get a commission in a marching 'regiment; for I am convinced there is no colonel 'in the army would refuse him.'

'Refuse him, indeed!' said Mrs. Ellison; 'No; 'he would be a very pretty colonel that did. And 'upon my honour, I believe there are very few 'ladies who would refuse him, if he had but a 'proper opportunity of soliciting them. The co-'lonel and the lady both would be better off, than 'with one of those pretty masters that I see walk-'ing about, and dragging their long swords after 'them, when they should rather drag their lead-'ing-strings.'

'Well said,' cries Booth, 'and spoken like a 'woman of spirit.—Indeed, I believe, they would 'be both better served.'

'True, captain,' answered Mrs. Ellison, 'I 'would rather leave the two first syllables out of 'the word gentleman, than the last.'

'Nay, I assure you,' replied Booth, 'there is 'not a quieter creature in the world. Though the 'fellow hath the bravery of a lion, he hath the 'meekness of a lamb. I can tell you stories enow 'of that kind, and so can my dear Amelia, when 'he was a boy.'

'O! if the match sticks there,' cries Amelia, 'I 'positively will not spoil his fortune by my silence. 'I can answer for him from his infancy, that he 'was one of the best-natured lads in the world. 'I will tell you a story or two of him, the truth 'of which I can testify from my own knowledge. 'When he was but six years old, he was at play

Digitized by Google

'with me at my mother's house, and a great pointing-dog bit him through the leg. The poor lad, 'in the midst of the anguish of his wound, declared 'he was overjoyed it had not happened to Miss '(for the same dog had just before snapt at me, 'and my petticoats had been my defence).—— 'Another instance of his goodness, which greatly 'recommended him to my father, and which I 'have loved him for ever since, was this: My 'father was a great lover of birds, and strictly 'forbad the spoiling of their nests. Poor Joe was 'one day caught upon a tree, and being con-'cluded guilty, was severely lashed for it; but it 'was afterwards discovered that another boy, a 'friend of Joe's, had robbed the nest of its young 'ones, and poor Joe had climbed the tree in order 'to restore them, notwithstanding which, he sub-'mitted to the punishment rather than he would 'impeach his companion. But if these stories 'appear childish and trifling, the duty and kind-'ness he hath shewn to his mother, must recom-'mend him to every one. Ever since he hath 'been fifteen years old, he hath more than half 'supported her; and when my brother died, I re-'member particularly, Joe at his desire, for he was 'much his favourite, had one of his suits given 'him, but instead of his becoming finer on that 'occasion, another young fellow came to church 'in my brother's clothes, and my old nurse ap-'peared the same Sunday in a new gown, which 'her son had purchased for her with the sale of 'his legacy.'

'Well, I protest, he is a very worthy creature,' said Mrs. Bennet.

'He is a charming fellow,' cries Mrs. Ellison,— 'but then the name of sergeant, Captain Booth, 'there, as the plays says, my pride brings me off 'again.'

Digitized by Google

And whatsoever the sages charge on pride,
The angels fall, and twenty other good faults beside;
On earth I'm sure—I'm sure—something—calling
Pride saves man, and our sex too from falling.—

Here a footman's rap at the door shook the room. Upon which, Mrs. Ellison, running to the window, cried out, 'Let me die if it is not my lord; what 'shall I do? I must be at home to him; but sup- 'pose he should inquire for you, captain, what 'shall I say? or will you go down with me?'

The company were in some confusion at this instant, and before they had agreed on any thing, Booth's little girl came running into the room, and said, 'There was a prodigious great gentle- 'man coming up stairs.' She was immediately followed by his lordship, who, as he knew Booth must be at home, made very little or no inquiry at the door.

Amelia was taken somewhat at a surprise, but she was too polite to shew much confusion; for though she knew nothing of the town, she had had a genteel education, and kept the best company the country afforded. The ceremonies therefore past as usual, and they all sat down.

His lordship soon addressed himself to Booth, saying, 'As I have what I think good news for 'you, Sir, I could not delay giving myself the 'pleasure of communicating it to you. I have 'mentioned your affair where I promised you, and 'I have no doubt of my success. One may easily 'perceive, you know, from the manner of people's 'behaving upon such occasions; and, indeed, 'when I related your case, I found there was 'much inclination to serve you. Great men, Mr. 'Booth, must do things in their own time; but I 'think you may depend on having something 'done very soon.'

Booth made many acknowledgements for his lordship's goodness, and now a second time paid

Digitized by Google

all the thanks which would have been due, even had the favour been obtained. This art of promising is the œconomy of a great man's pride, a sort of good husbandry in conferring favours, by which they receive tenfold in acknowledgements for every obligation, I mean among those who really intend the service; for there are others who cheat poor men of their thanks, without ever designing to deserve them at all.

This matter being sufficiently discussed, the conversation took a gayer turn; and my lord began to entertain the ladies with some of that elegant discourse, which, though most delightful to hear, it is impossible should ever be read.

His lordship was so highly pleased with Amelia, that he could not help being somewhat particular to her; but this particularity distinguished itself only in a higher degree of respect, and was so very polite, and so very distant, that she herself was pleased, and at his departure, which was not till he had far exceeded the length of a common visit, declared he was the finest gentleman she had ever seen; with which sentiment her husband and Mrs. Ellison both entirely concurred.

Mrs. Bennet, on the contrary, expressed some little dislike to my lord's complaisance, which she called excessive. 'For my own part,' said she, 'I have not the least relish for those very fine 'gentlemen; what the world generally calls po-'liteness, I term insincerity; and I am more 'charmed with the stories which Mrs. Booth told 'us of the honest sergeant, than with all that the 'finest gentlemen in the world ever said in their 'lives.'

'O! to be sure,' cries Mrs. Ellison, '*All for* '*Love, or the World well Lost*, is a motto very 'proper for some folks to wear in their coat 'of arms; but the generality of the world will, 'I believe, agree with that lady's opinion of my 'cousin, rather than with Mrs. Bennet.'

Digitized by Google

Mrs. Bennet, seeing Mrs. Ellison took offence at what she said, thought proper to make some apology, which was very readily accepted, and so ended the visit.

We cannot however put an end to the chapter, without observing, that such is the ambitious temper of beauty, that it may always apply to itself that celebrated passage in Lucan,

Nec quenquam jam ferre potest Cæsarve priorem,
Pompeiusve parem.——

Indeed, I believe, it may be laid down as a general rule, that no woman, who hath any great pretensions to admiration, is ever well pleased in a company, where she perceives herself to fill only the second place. This observation, however, I humbly submit to the judgement of the ladies, and hope it will be considered as retracted by me, if they shall dissent from my opinion.

CHAP. IV.

Containing Matters that require no Preface.

WHEN Booth and his wife were left alone together, they both extremely exulted in their good fortune, in having found so good a friend as his lordship; nor were they wanting in very warm expressions of their gratitude towards Mrs. Ellison. —After which, they began to lay down schemes of living when Booth should have his commission of captain; and, after the exactest computation, concluded, that, with economy, they should be able to save at least fifty pounds a year out of their income, in order to pay their debts.

These matters being well settled, Amelia asked Booth what he thought of Mrs. Bennet? 'I think,

Digitized by Google

'my dear,' answered Booth, 'that she hath been 'formerly a very pretty woman.' 'I am mistaken,' replied she, 'if she be not a very good creature. 'I don't know I ever took such a liking to any one 'on so short an acquaintance. I fancy she hath 'been a very sprightly woman; for, if you ob- 'serve, she discovers, by starts, a great vivac'ty 'in her countenance.' 'I made the same obser- 'vation,' cries Booth: 'Sure some strange misfor- 'tune hath befallen her.' 'A misfortune indeed!' answered Amelia; 'sure, child, you forget what 'Mrs. Ellison told us, that she had lost a beloved 'husband. A misfortune which I have often won- 'dered at any woman's surviving.'—At which words she cast a tender look at Booth, and presently afterwards throwing herself upon his neck, cried—'O Heavens! what a happy creature am 'I? when I consider the dangers you have gone 'through, how I exult in my bliss!' The good-natured reader will suppose that Booth was not deficient in returning such tenderness, after which, the conversation became too fond to be here related.

The next morning, Mrs. Ellison addressed herself to Booth as follows: 'I shall make no apology, 'Sir, for what I am going to say, as it proceeds 'from my friendship to yourself and your dear 'lady. I am convinced then, Sir, there is some- 'thing more than accident in your going abroad 'only one day in the week. Now, Sir, if, as I 'am afraid, matters are not altogether as well as 'I wish them, I beg, since I do not believe you 'are provided with a lawyer, that you will suffer 'me to recommend one to you. The person I shall 'mention, is, I assure you, of much ability in his 'profession, and I have known him do great ser- 'vices to gentlemen under a cloud. Do not be 'ashamed of your circumstances, my dear friend. 'They are a much greater scandal to those who 'have left so much merit unprovided for.'

Digitized by Google

Booth gave Mrs. Ellison abundance of thanks for her kindness, and explicitly confest to her that her conjectures were right, and, without hesitation, accepted the offer of her friend's assistance.

Mrs. Ellison then acquainted him with her apprehensions on his account. She said, she had both yesterday and this morning seen two or three very ugly suspicious fellows pass several times by her window. 'Upon all accounts,' said she, 'my 'dear Sir, I advise you to keep yourself close con- 'fined till the lawyer hath been with you. I am 'sure he will get you your liberty, at least of 'walking about within the verge—There's some- 'thing to be done with the board of green-cloth, 'I don't know what; but this I know, that several 'gentlemen have lived here a long time very com- 'fortably, and have defied all the vengeance of 'their creditors. However, in the mean time, you 'must be a close prisoner with your lady; and I 'believe there is no man in England but would 'exchange his liberty for the same gaol.'

She then departed in order to send for the attorney, and presently afterwards the sergeant arrived with news of the like kind. He said, he had scraped an acquaintance with Murphy. 'I hope 'your honour will pardon me,' cries Atkinson, 'but I pretended to have a small demand upon 'your honour myself, and offered to employ him 'in the business. Upon which, he told me, that 'if I would go with him to the Marshal's Court, 'and make affidavit of my debt, he should be able 'very shortly to get it me; for I shall have the 'captain in hold,' cries he, 'within a day or two.' —'I wish,' said the sergeant, 'I could do your 'honour any service. Shall I walk about all day 'before the door? or shall I be porter, and watch 'it in the inside, till your honour can find some 'means of securing yourself? I hope you will not

Digitized by Google

'be offended at me, but I beg you would take 'care of falling into Murphy's hands; for he hath 'the character of the greatest villain upon earth. 'I am afraid you will think me too bold, Sir; but 'I have a little money, if it can be of any service, 'do, pray your honour, command it. It can 'never do me so much good any other way. Con-'sider, Sir, I owe all I have to yourself, and my 'dear mistress.'

Booth stood a moment, as if he had been thunderstruck, and then, the tears bursting from his eyes, he said: 'Upon my soul, Atkinson, you over-'come me. I scarce ever heard of so much good-'ness, nor do I know how to express my senti-'ments of it. But be assured, as for your money, 'I will not accept it, and let it satisfy you, that 'in my present circumstances it would do me no 'essential service; but this be assured of likewise, 'that whilst I live, I shall never forget the kind-'ness of the offer——However, as I apprehend I 'may be in some danger of fellows getting into 'the house, for a day or two, as I have no guard 'but a poor little girl, I will not refuse the good-'ness you offer to shew in my protection. And I 'make no doubt but Mrs. Ellison will let you sit 'in her parlour for that purpose.'

Atkinson, with the utmost readiness undertook the office of porter; and Mrs. Ellison as readily allotted him a place in her back-parlour, where he continued three days together, from eight in the morning till twelve at night; during which time, he had sometimes the company of Mrs. Ellison, and sometimes of Booth, Amelia, and Mrs. Bennet too; for this last had taken as great a fancy to Amelia, as Amelia had to her; and therefore, as Mr. Booth's affairs were now no secret in the neighbourhood, made her frequent visits during the confinement of her husband, and consequently her own.

Digitized by Google

Nothing, as I remember, happened in this interval of time, more worthy notice than the following card, which Amelia received from her old acquaintance Mrs. James: 'Mrs. James sends her 'compliments to Mrs. Booth, and desires to know 'how she does; for as she hath not had the fa- 'vour of seeing her at her own house, or of meet- 'ing her in any public place, in so long time, fears 'it may be owing to ill health.'

Amelia had long given over all thoughts of her friend, and doubted not but that she was as entirely given over by her; she was very much surprised at this message, and under some doubt whether it was not meant as an insult, especially from the mention of public places, which she thought so inconsistent with her present circumstances, of which she supposed Mrs. James was well apprised. However, at the entreaty of her husband, who languished for nothing more than to be again reconciled to his friend James, Amelia undertook to pay the lady a visit, and to examine into the mystery of this conduct, which appeared to her so unaccountable.

Mrs. James received her with a degree of civility that amazed Amelia, no less than her coldness had done before. She resolved to come to an eclaircissement, and having sat out some company that came in, when they were alone together, Amelia, after some silence, and many offers to speak, at last said, 'My dear Jenny (if you will now suffer 'me to call you by so familiar a name), have you 'entirely forgot a certain young lady who had the 'pleasure of being your intimate acquaintance at 'Montpelier?' 'Whom do you mean, dear Ma- 'dam?' cries Mrs. James, with great concern. 'I 'mean myself,' answered Amelia—'You surprise 'me, Madam,' replied Mrs. James: 'How can you 'ask me that question?'—'Nay, my dear, I do 'not intend to offend you,' cries Amelia, 'but I

Digitized by Google

'am really desirous to solve to myself the reason 'of that coldness which you shewed me, when you 'did me the favour of a visit. Can you think, my 'dear, I was not disappointed when I expected to 'meet an intimate friend, to receive a cold formal 'visitant? I desire you to examine your own heart, 'and answer me honestly, if you do not think I 'had some little reason to be dissatisfied with your 'behaviour?'—'Indeed, Mrs. Booth,' answered the other lady, 'you surprise me very much; if there 'was any thing displeasing to you in my beha-'viour, I am extremely concerned at it. I did 'not know I had been defective in any of the 'rules of civility, but if I was, Madam, I ask your 'pardon.'—'Is civility then, my dear,' replied Amelia, 'a synonymous term with friendship? 'Could I have expected, when I parted the last 'time with Miss Jenny Bath, to have met her the 'next time in the shape of a fine lady, complain-'ing of the hardship of climbing up two pair of 'stairs to visit me, and then approaching me with 'the distant air of a new or a slight acquaintance? 'Do you think, my dear Mrs. James, if the tables 'had been turned, if my fortune had been as high 'in the world as yours, and you in my distress 'and abject condition, that I would not have 'climbed as high as the monument to visit you?' —'Sure, Madam,' cried Mrs. James, 'I mistake 'you, or you have greatly mistaken me. Can you 'complain of my not visiting you, who have owed 'me a visit almost these three weeks? Nay, did I 'not even then send you a card, which sure was 'doing more than all the friendship and good-'breeding in the world required; but, indeed, as I 'had met you in no public place, I really thought 'you was ill.'—'How can you mention public 'places to me,' said Amelia, 'when you can 'hardly be a stranger to my present situation? 'Did you not know, Madam, that I was ruined?'

Digitized by Google

—'No, indeed, Madam, did I not,' replied Mrs. James; 'I am sure I should have been highly con-'cerned if I had.'—'Why, sure, my dear,' cries Amelia, 'you could not imagine that we were in 'affluent circumstances, when you found us in 'such a place, and in such a condition.'—'Nay, 'my dear,' answered Mrs. James, 'since you are 'pleased to mention it first yourself, I own, I was 'a little surprised to see you in no better lodg-'ings; but I concluded you had your own rea-'sons for liking them; and for my own part, I 'have laid it down as a positive rule, never to in-'quire into the private affairs of any one, espe-'cially of my friends. I am not of the humour of 'some ladies, who confine the circle of their ac-'quaintance to one part of the town, and would 'not be known to visit in the city for the world. 'For my part, I never dropt an acquaintance with 'any one, while it was reputable to keep it up; 'and I can solemnly declare I have not a friend in 'the world for whom I have a greater esteem than 'I have for Mrs. Booth.'

At this instant, the arrival of a new visitant put an end to the discourse; and Amelia soon after took her leave without the least anger, but with some little unavoidable contempt for a lady, in whose opinion, as we have hinted before, outward form and ceremony constituted the whole essence of friendship; who valued all her acquaintance alike, as each individual served equally to fill up a place in her visiting roll, and who, in reality, had not the least concern for the good qualities or well-being of any of them.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. V.

Containing much heroic Matter.

AT the end of three days, Mrs. Ellison's friend had so far purchased Mr. Booth's liberty, that he could walk again abroad within the verge, without any danger of having a warrant backed against him by the Board before he had notice. As for the ill-looked persons that had given the alarm, it was now discovered that another unhappy gentleman, and not Booth, was the object of their pursuit.

Mr. Booth now being delivered from his fears, went, as he had formerly done, to take his morning walk in the Park. Here he met Colonel Bath in company with some other officers, and very civilly paid his respects to him. But, instead of returning the salute, the colonel looked him full in the face with a very stern countenance; and, if he could be said to take any notice of him, it was in such a manner as to inform him he would take no notice of him.

Booth was not more hurt than surprised at this behaviour, and resolved to know the reason of it. He therefore watched an opportunity till the colonel was alone, and then walked boldly up to him, and desired to know if he had given him any offence?—The colonel answered hastily, 'Sir, I am 'above being offended with you, nor do I think it 'consistent with my dignity to make you any an-'swer.' Booth replied, 'I don't know, Sir, that 'I have done any thing to deserve this treatment.' —'Look'ee, Sir,' cries the colonel, 'if I had not 'formerly had some respect for you, I should not 'think you worth my resentment. However, as 'you are a gentleman born, and an officer, and as 'I have had an esteem for you, I will give you

Digitized by Google

'some marks of it by putting it in your power to 'do yourself justice. I will tell you therefore, Sir, 'that you have acted like a scoundrel.'—'If we 'were not in the Park,' answered Booth warmly, 'I would thank you very properly for that com- 'pliment.'—'O, Sir!' cries the colonel, 'we can be 'soon in a convenient place.' Upon which Booth answered, he would attend him wherever he pleased.—The colonel then bid him come along, and strutted forward directly up Constitution-Hill to Hyde-Park, Booth following him at first, and afterwards walking before him, till they came to that place which may be properly called the field of blood, being that part, a little to the left of the ring, which heroes have chosen for the scene of their exit out of this world.

Booth reached the ring some time before the colonel; for he mended not his pace any more than a Spaniard. To say truth, I believe it was not in his power; for he had so long accustomed himself to one and the same strut, that as a horse, used always to trotting, can scarce be forced into a gallop, so could no passion force the colonel to alter his pace.

At length, however, both parties arrived at the lists, where the colonel very deliberately took off his wig and coat, and laid them on the grass, and then drawing his sword, advanced to Booth, who had likewise his drawn weapon in his hand, but had made no other preparation for the combat.

The combatants now engaged with great fury, and after two or three passes, Booth ran the colonel through the body and threw him on the ground, at the same time possessing himself of the colonel's sword.

As soon as the colonel was become master of his speech, he called out to Booth in a very kind voice, and said, 'You have done my business, 'and satisfied me that you are a man of honour, 'and that my brother James must have been mis-

Digitized by Google

'taken; for I am convinced, that no man who 'will draw his sword in so gallant a manner, is 'capable of being a rascal; d—n me, give me a 'buss, my dear boy, I ask your pardon for that 'infamous appellation I dishonoured your dignity 'with; but, d—n me, if it was not purely out of 'love, and to give you an opportunity of doing 'yourself justice, which I own you have done 'like a man of honour. What may be the conse-'quence I know not, but I hope, at least, I shall 'live to reconcile you with my brother.'

Booth shewed great concern, and even horror in his countenance. 'Why, my dear colonel,' said he 'would you force me to this? for Hea-'ven's sake, tell me, what I have ever done to 'offend you?'

'Me!' cried the colonel. 'Indeed, my dear 'child, you never did any thing to offend me.— 'Nay, I have acted the part of a friend to you in 'the whole affair. I maintained your cause with 'my brother as long as decency would permit; I 'could not flatly contradict him, though, indeed, 'I scarce believed him. But what could I do; 'if I had not fought with you, I must have been 'obliged to have fought with him: however, I 'hope, what is done will be sufficient, and that 'matters may be discommodated without your 'being put to the necessity of fighting any more 'on this occasion.'

'Never regard me,' cried Booth eagerly, 'for 'Heaven's sake, think of your own preservation. 'Let me put you into a chair, and get you a sur-'geon.'

'Thou art a noble lad,' cries the colonel, who was now got on his legs, 'and I am glad the 'business is so well over. For though your sword 'went quite through, it slanted so, that I appre-'hend there is little danger of life. However, I 'think there is enough done to put an honour-'able end to the affair, especially as you was so

Digitized by Google

'hasty to disarm me. I bleed a little, but I can 'walk to the house by the water; and if you will 'send me a chair thither, I shall be obliged 'to you.'

As the colonel refused any assistance (indeed he was very able to walk without it, though with somewhat less dignity than usual), Booth set forward to Grosvenor-Gate, in order to procure the chair, and soon after returned with one to his friend; whom having conveyed into it, he attended himself on foot into Bond-street, where then lived a very eminent surgeon.

The surgeon having probed the wound, turned towards Booth, who was apparently the guilty person, and said, with a smile, 'Upon my word, 'Sir, you have performed the business with great 'dexterity.'

'Sir,' cries the colonel to the surgeon, 'I would 'not have you imagine I am afraid to die. I think 'I know more what belongs to the dignity of a 'man; and, I believe, I have shewn it at the head 'of a line of battle. Do not impute my concern 'to that fear, when I ask you whether there is or 'is not any danger?'

'Really, colonel,' answered the surgeon, who well knew the complexion of the gentleman then under his hands, 'it would appear like presump-'tion to say, that a man who hath been just run 'through the body, is in no manner of danger. 'But this, I think, I may assure you, that I yet 'perceive no very bad symptoms, and unless 'something worse should appear, or a fever be the 'consequence, I hope you may live to be again, 'with all your dignity, at the head of a line of 'battle.'

'I am glad to hear that is your opinion,' quoth the colonel, 'for I am not desirous of dying, 'though I am not afraid of it. But if any thing 'worse than you apprehend should happen, I de-'sire you will be a witness of my declaration, that

Digitized by Google

'this young gentleman is entirely innocent. I 'forced him to do what he did. My dear Booth, 'I am pleased matters are as they are. You are 'the first man that ever gained an advantage over 'me; but it was very lucky for you that you dis- 'armed me, and I doubt not but you have the 'equanimity to think so. If the business, there- 'fore, hath ended without doing any thing to the 'purpose, it was fortune's pleasure, and neither of 'our faults.'

Booth heartily embraced the colonel, and assured him of the great satisfaction he had received from the surgeon's opinion; and soon after the two combatants took their leave of each other. The colonel, after he was drest, went in a chair to his lodgings, and Booth walked on foot to his; where he luckily arrived without meeting any of Mr. Murphy's gang; a danger which never once occurred to his imagination till he was out of it.

The affair he had been about had indeed so entirely occupied his mind, that it had obliterated every other idea; among the rest, it caused him so absolutely to forget the time of the day, that though he had exceeded the time of dining above two hours, he had not the least suspicion of being at home later than usual.

CHAP. VI.

In which the Reader will find Matter worthy his Consideration.

AMELIA having waited above an hour for her husband, concluded, as he was the most punctual man alive, that he had met with some engagement abroad, and sat down to her meal with her children; which, as it was always uncomfortable in the absence of her husband, was very short; so

Digitized by Google

that before his return, all the apparatus of dining was entirely removed.

Booth sat some time with his wife, expecting every minute when the little maid would make her appearance; at last, curiosity, I believe, rather than appetite, made him ask, How long it was to dinner? 'To dinner! my dear,' answered Amelia, 'sure 'you have dined, I hope?' Booth replied in the negative; upon which his wife started from her chair, and bestirred herself as nimbly to provide him a repast, as the most industrious hostess in the kingdom doth, when some unexpected guest of extraordinary quality arrives at her house.

The reader hath not, I think, from any passages hitherto recorded in this history, had much reason to accuse Amelia of a blameable curiosity; he will not, I hope, conclude that she gave an instance of any such fault, when, upon Booth's having so long overstayed his time, and so greatly mistaken the hour of the day, and upon some other circumstances of his behaviour (for he was too honest to be good at concealing any of his thoughts), she said to him, after he had done eating, 'My dear, 'I am sure something more than ordinary hath 'happened to-day, and I beg you will tell me 'what it is.'

Booth answered, that nothing of any consequence had happened; that he had been detained by a friend, whom he met accidentally, longer than he expected. In short, he made many shuffling and evasive answers, not boldly lying out, which, perhaps, would have succeeded, but poorly and vainly endeavouring to reconcile falsehood with truth. An attempt which seldom fails to betray the most practised deceiver.

How impossible was it therefore for poor Booth to succeed in an art for which nature had so entirely disqualified him. His countenance, indeed, confessed faster than his tongue denied; and the whole of his behaviour gave Amelia an alarm, and

Digitized by Google

made her suspect something very bad had happened; and as her thoughts turned presently on the badness of their circumstances, she feared some mischief from his creditors had befallen him; for she was too ignorant of such matters to know, that if he had fallen into the hands of the Philistines (which is the name given by the faithful to bailiffs) he would hardly have been able so soon to recover his liberty. Booth at last perceived her to be so uneasy, that as he saw no hopes of contriving any fiction to satisfy her, he thought himself obliged to tell her the truth, or at least part of the truth, and confessed that he had had a little skirmish with Colonel Bath, in which, he said, the colonel had received a slight wound, not at all dangerous; and this, says he, is all the whole matter. 'If it be so,' cries Amelia, 'I thank Heaven 'no worse hath happened; but why, my dear, 'will you ever converse with that madman, who 'can embrace a friend one moment, and fight with 'him the next?' 'Nay, my dear,' answered Booth, 'you yourself must confess, though he be a little 'too much on the *qui vive*, he is a man of great 'honour and good-nature.' 'Tell me not,' replied she, 'of such good-nature and honour as 'would sacrifice a friend, and a whole family, to 'a ridiculous whim. O, Heavens!' cried she, falling upon her knees, 'from what misery have 'I escaped, from what have these poor babes 'escaped, through your gracious providence this 'day!'—Then turning to her husband—she cried —'But are you sure the monster's wound is no 'more dangerous than you say? a monster surely 'I may call him, who can quarrel with a man that 'could not, that I am convinced would not, offend 'him.'

Upon this question, Booth repeated the assurances which the surgeon had given them, perhaps with a little enlargement, which pretty well satisfied Amelia; and instead of blaming her hus-

Digitized by Google

band for what he had done, she tenderly embraced him, and again returned thanks to Heaven for his safety.

In the evening, Booth insisted on paying a short visit to the colonel, highly against the inclination of Amelia, who, by many arguments and entreaties, endeavoured to dissuade her husband from continuing an acquaintance in which, she said, she should always foresee much danger for the future. However, she was at last prevailed upon to acquiesce; and Booth went to the colonel, whose lodgings happened to be in the verge as well as his own.

He found the colonel in his night-gown, and his great chair, engaged with another officer at a game of chess. He rose immediately, and having heartily embraced Booth, presented him to his friend, saying, he had the honour to introduce to him as brave and as *fortitudinous* a man as any in the king's dominions—He then took Booth with him into the next room, and desired him not to mention a word of what had happened in the morning, saying, 'I am very well satisfied that no 'more hath happened; however, as it ended in 'nothing, I could wish it might remain a secret.' Booth told him he was heartily glad to find him so well, and promised never to mention it more to any one.

The game at chess being but just begun, and neither of the parties having gained any considerable advantage, they neither of them insisted on continuing it; and now the colonel's antagonist took his leave, and left the colonel and Booth together.

As soon as they were alone, the latter earnestly entreated the former to acquaint him with the real cause of his anger; 'for, may I perish,' cries Booth, 'if I can even guess what I have ever 'done to offend either you, or your brother, Co-'lonel James.'

Digitized by Google

'Look'ee, child,' cries the colonel, 'I tell you 'I am for my own part satisfied; for I am con-'vinced that a man who will fight, can never be 'a rascal; and, therefore, why should you inquire 'any more of me at present? when I see my bro-'ther James, I hope to reconcile all matters, and 'perhaps no more swords need be drawn on this 'occasion.' But Booth still persisting in his desire, the colonel, after some hesitation, with a tremendous oath, cried out, 'I do not think myself at li-'berty to refuse you after the indignity I offered 'you; so, since you demand it of me, I will in-'form you. My brother told me you had used 'him dishonourably, and had divellicated his cha-'racter behind his back. He gave me his word 'too, that he was well assured of what he said. 'What could I have done? though I own to you 'I did not believe him, and your behaviour since 'hath convinced me I was in the right; I must 'either have given him the lie, and fought with 'him, or else I was obliged to behave as I did, 'and fight with you. And now, my lad, I leave 'it to you to do as you please; but if you are laid 'under any necessity to do yourself further jus-'tice, it is your own fault.'

'Alas! colonel,' answered Booth, 'besides the 'obligations I have to the colonel, I have really 'so much love for him, that I think of nothing less 'than resentment. All I wish, is to have this af-'fair brought to an eclaircissement, and to satisfy 'him that he is in an error; for though his asser-'tions are cruelly injurious, and I have never de-'served them; yet I am convinced he would not 'say what he did not himself think. Some rascal, 'envious of his friendship for me, hath belied me 'to him; and the only resentment I desire, is 'to convince him of his mistake.'

At these words—the colonel grinned horribly a ghastly smile, or rather sneer, and answered, 'Young gentleman, you may do as you please;

Digitized by Google

'but by the eternal dignity of man, if any man 'breathing had taken a liberty with my character, '—Here, here—Mr. Booth, (shewing his fingers) 'here—d—n me, should be his nostrils, he should 'breathe through my hands, and breathe his last, 'd—n me.'

Booth answered, 'I think, colonel, I may ap- 'peal to your testimony that I dare do myself 'justice; since he who dare draw his sword 'against you, can hardly be supposed to fear any 'other person; but I repeat to you again, that I 'love Colonel James so well, and am so greatly 'obliged to him, that it would be almost indif- 'ferent to me, whether I directed my sword 'against his breast or my own.'

The colonel's muscles were considerably soft- ened by Booth's last speech; but he again con- tracted them into a vast degree of fierceness, be- fore he cried out——'Boy, thou hast reason 'enough to be vain; for thou art the first person 'that ever could proudly say he gained an advan- 'tage over me in combat. I believe, indeed, thou 'art not afraid of any man breathing, and as I 'know thou hast some obligations to my brother, 'I do not discommend thee; for nothing more be- 'comes the dignity of a man than gratitude. Be- 'sides, as I am satisfied my brother can produce 'the author of the slander—I say, I am satisfied 'of that, d—n me, if any man alive dares assert 'the contrary; for that would be to make my 'brother himself a liar, I will make him produce 'his author; and then, my dear boy, your doing 'yourself proper justice there will bring you 'finely out of the whole affair. As soon as my 'surgeon gives me leave to go abroad, which, 'I hope, will be in a few days, I will bring my 'brother James to a tavern, where you shall meet 'us; and I will engage my honour, my whole 'dignity to you, to make you friends.'

Digitized by Google

The assurance of the colonel gave Booth great pleasure; for few persons ever loved a friend better than he did James; and as for doing military justice on the author of that scandalous report which had incensed his friend against him, not Bath himself was ever more ready, on such an occasion, than Booth to execute it. He soon after took his leave, and returned home in high spirits to his Amelia, whom he found in Mrs. Ellison's apartment, engaged in a party at ombre with that lady and her right honourable cousin.

His lordship had, it seems, had a second interview with the great man, and having obtained further hopes (for I think there was not yet an absolute promise) of success in Mr. Booth's affairs, his usual good-nature brought him immediately to acquaint Mr. Booth with it. As he did not therefore find him at home, and as he met with the two ladies together, he resolved to stay till his friend's return, which he was assured would not be long, especially as he was so lucky, he said, to have no particular engagement that whole evening.

We remarked before, that his lordship, at the first interview with Amelia, had distinguished her by a more particular address from the other ladies; but that now appeared to be rather owing to his perfect good-breeding, as she was then to be considered as the mistress of the house, than from any other preference. His present behaviour made this still more manifest; for as he was now in Mrs. Ellison's apartment, though she was his relation and an old acquaintance, he applied his conversation rather more to her than to Amelia. His eyes, indeed, were now and then guilty of the contrary distinction, but this was only by stealth; for they constantly withdrew the moment they were discovered. In short, he treated Amelia with the greatest distance, and at the same time

Digitized by Google

with the most profound and awful respect; his conversation was so general, so lively, and so obliging, that Amelia, when she added to his agreeableness the obligations she had to him for his friendship to Booth, was certainly as much pleased with his lordship, as any virtuous woman can possibly be with any man, besides her own husband.

CHAP. VII.

Containing various Matters.

WE have already mentioned the good humour in which Booth returned home; and the reader will easily believe it was not a little increased by the good humour in which he found his company. My lord received him with the utmost marks of friendship and affection, and told him that his affairs went on as well almost as he himself could desire, and that he doubted not very soon to wish him joy of a company.

When Booth had made a proper return to all his lordship's unparalleled goodness, he whispered Amelia, that the colonel was entirely out of danger, and almost as well as himself. This made her satisfaction complete, threw her into such spirits, and gave such a lustre to her eyes, that her face, as Horace says, was too dazzling to be looked at; it was certainly too handsome to be looked at without the highest admiration.

His lordship departed about ten o'clock, and left the company in raptures with him, especially the two ladies, of whom it is difficult to say which exceeded the other in his commendations. Mrs. Ellison swore she believed he was the best of all human kind; and Amelia, without making any exception, declared he was the finest gentleman, and most agreeable man, she had ever seen in her life; adding, it was great pity he should remain

Digitized by Google

single. 'That's true, indeed,' cries Mrs. Ellison, 'and I have often lamented it, nay, I am astonished at it, considering the great liking he 'always shews for our sex, and he may certainly 'have the choice of all. The real reason, I believe, is, his fondness for his sister's children. 'I declare, Madam, if you was to see his behaviour to them, you would think they were his 'own. Indeed, he is vastly fond of all manner of 'children.' 'Good creature,' cries Amelia, 'if 'ever he doth me the honour of another visit, I 'am resolved I will shew him my little things. I 'think, Mrs. Ellison, as you say my lord loves 'children, I may say, without vanity, he will not 'see many such.' 'No, indeed, will he not,' answered Mrs. Ellison: 'and now I think on't, Madam, I wonder at my own stupidity in never 'making the offer before; but since you put it 'into my head, if you will give me leave, I'll take 'master and miss to wait on my lord's nephew and 'niece. They are very pretty behaved children; 'and little master and miss will be, I dare swear, 'very happy in their acquaintance; besides, if my 'lord himself should see them, I know what will 'happen; for he is the most generous of all human beings.'

Amelia very readily accepted the favour which Mrs. Ellison offered her; but Booth exprest some reluctance. 'Upon my word, my dear,' said he, with a smile, 'this behaviour of ours puts me in 'mind of the common conduct of beggars; who, 'whenever they receive a favour, are sure to send 'other objects to the same fountain of charity. 'Don't we, my dear, repay our obligations to my 'lord in the same manner, by sending our children a begging to him?'

'O beastly!' cries Mrs. Ellison, 'how could 'such a thought enter your brains? I protest, Madam, I begin to grow ashamed of this husband 'of yours. How can you have so vulgar a way

Digitized by Google

'of thinking? Begging, indeed! the poor little 'dear things a begging—If my lord was capable 'of such a thought, though he was my own bro- 'ther instead of my cousin, I should scorn him too 'much ever to enter his doors.'—'O dear Ma- 'dam!' answered Amelia, 'you take Mr. Booth 'too seriously, when he was only in jest; and the 'children shall wait upon you whenever you 'please.'

Though Booth had been a little more in earnest than Amelia had represented him, and was not, perhaps, quite so much in the wrong as he was considered by Mrs. Ellison; yet seeing there were two to one against him, he wisely thought proper to recede, and let his smile go off with that air of a jest, which his wife had given it.

Mrs. Ellison, however, could not let it pass without paying some compliments to Amelia's understanding, nor without some obscure reflexions upon Booth, with whom she was more offended than the matter required. She was indeed a woman of most profuse generosity, and could not bear a thought which she deemed vulgar or sneaking. She afterwards launched forth the most profuse encomiums of his lordship's liberality, and concluded the evening with some instances which he had given of that virtue, which, if not the noblest, is, perhaps, one of the most useful to society, with which great and rich men can be endowed.

The next morning early, Sergeant Atkinson came to wait on Lieutenant Booth, and desired to speak with his honour in private. Upon which, the lieutenant and sergeant took a walk together in the Park. Booth expected every minute when the sergeant would open his mouth; under which expectation he continued till he came to the end of the Mall, and so he might have continued till he came to the end of the world; for though several words stood at the end of the sergeant's lips, there

Digitized by Google

they were likely to remain for ever. He was, indeed, in the condition of a miser, whom a charitable impulse hath impelled to draw a few pence to the edge of his pocket, where they are altogether as secure as if they were in the bottom; for, as the one hath not the heart to part with a farthing, so neither had the other the heart to speak a word.

Booth at length, wondering that the sergeant did not speak, asked him, What his business was? when the latter with a stammering voice began the following apology: 'I hope, Sir, your honour will 'not be angry, nor take any thing amiss of me. 'I do assure you, it was not of my seeking, nay, 'I dare not proceed in the matter without first 'asking you leave. Indeed, if I had taken any 'liberties from the goodness you have been pleased 'to shew me, I should look upon myself as one of 'the most worthless and despicable of wretches; 'but nothing is farther from my thoughts. I 'know the distance which is between us; and 'because your honour hath been so kind and good 'as to treat me with more familiarity than any 'other officer ever did, if I had been base enough 'to take any freedoms, or to encroach upon your 'honour's goodness, I should deserve to be whipt 'through the regiment. I hope, therefore, Sir, 'you will not suspect me of any such attempt.'

'What can all this mean, Atkinson,' cries Booth; 'what mighty matter would you intro-'duce with all this previous apology?'

'I am almost ashamed and afraid to mention it,' answered the sergeant, 'and yet I am sure your 'honour will believe what I have said, and not 'think any thing owing to my own presumption; 'and, at the same time, I have no reason to think 'you would do any thing to spoil my fortune in an 'honest way, when it is dropt into my lap with-'out my own seeking. For, may, I perish, if it is

Digitized by Google

'not all the lady's own goodness, and I hope in 'Heaven, with your honour's leave, I shall live to 'make her amends for it.'—In a word, that we may not detain the reader's curiosity quite so long as he did Booth's, he acquainted that gentleman that he had an offer of marriage from a lady of his acquaintance, to whose company he had introduced him, and desired his permission to accept of it.

Booth must have been very dull, indeed, if, after what the sergeant had said, and after what he had heard Mrs. Ellison say, he had wanted any information concerning the lady. He answered him briskly and cheerfully, that he had his free consent to marry any woman whatever; 'and the greater 'and richer she is,' added he, 'the more I shall 'be pleased with the match. I don't inquire who 'the lady is,' said he, smiling, 'but I hope she 'will make as good a wife as, I am convinced, 'her husband will deserve.'

'Your honour hath been always too good to 'me,' cries Atkinson, 'but this I promise you, I 'will do all in my power to merit the kindness she 'is pleased to shew me. I will be bold to say, 'she will marry an honest man, though he is but 'a poor one; and she shall never want any thing 'which I can give her or do for her, while my 'name is Joseph Atkinson.'

'And so her name is a secret, Joe, is it?' cries Booth.

'Why, Sir,' answered the sergeant, 'I hope 'your honour will not insist upon knowing that, 'as I think it would be dishonourable in me to 'mention it.'

'Not at all,' replied Booth; 'I am the farthest 'in the world from any such desire. I know thee 'better than to imagine thou wouldst disclose the 'name of the fair lady.' Booth then shook Atkinson heartily by the hand, and assured him ear-

Digitized by Google

nestly of the joy he had in his good fortune; for which the good sergeant failed not of making all proper acknowledgements. After which they departed, and Booth returned home.

As Mrs. Ellison opened the door, Booth hastily rushed by; for he had the utmost difficulty to prevent laughing in her face. He ran directly up stairs, and, throwing himself into a chair, discharged such a fit of laughter as greatly surprised, and at first almost frightened, his wife.

Amelia, it will be supposed, presently inquired into the cause of this phænomenon, with which Booth, as soon as he was able (for that was not within a few minutes) acquainted her. The news did not affect her in the same manner as it had affected her husband. On the contrary, she cried, 'I protest I cannot guess what makes you see it in 'so ridiculous a light. I really think Mrs. Ellison 'has chosen very well. I am convinced Joe will 'make her one of the best of husbands; and in my 'opinion that is the greatest blessing a woman can 'be possessed of.'

However, when Mrs. Ellison came into her room a little while afterwards, to fetch the children, Amelia became of a more risible disposition, especially when the former, turning to Booth, who was then present, said, 'So, captain, my jantee-ser-'geant was very early here this morning. I 'scolded my maid heartily for letting him wait 'so long in the entry like a lacquais, when she 'might have shewn him into my inner apartment.' At which words Booth burst into a very loud laugh; and Amelia herself could no more prevent laughing than she could blushing.

'Heyday!' cries Mrs. Ellison, 'what have I said 'to cause all this mirth?' and at the same time blushed, and looked very silly, as is always the case with persons who suspect themselves to be the objects of laughter, without absolutely taking what it is which makes them ridiculous.

Digitized by Google

Booth still continued laughing; but Amelia, composing her muscles, said, 'I ask your pardon, dear 'Mrs. Ellison; but Mr. Booth hath been in a 'strange giggling humour all this morning; and 'I really think it is infectious.'

'I ask your pardon too, Madam,' cries Booth, 'but one is sometimes unaccountably foolish.'

'Nay, but seriously,' said she, 'what is the mat-'ter?—Something I said about the sergeant, I be-'lieve; but you may laugh as much as you please, 'I am not ashamed of owning, I think him one of 'the prettiest fellows I ever saw in my life; and, 'I own, I scolded my maid at suffering him to 'wait in my entry; and where is the mighty ridi-'culous matter, pray?'

'None at all,' answered Booth; 'and, I hope, 'the next time he will be ushered into your inner 'apartment.'

'Why should he not, Sir?' replied she; 'for 'wherever he is ushered, I am convinced he will 'behave himself as a gentleman should.'

Here Amelia put an end to the discourse, or it might have proceeded to very great lengths; for Booth was of a waggish inclination; and Mrs. Ellison was not a lady of the nicest delicacy.

CHAP. VIII.

The heroic Behaviour of Colonel Bath.

BOOTH went this morning to pay a second visit to the colonel, where he found Colonel James. Both the colonel and the lieutenant appeared a little shocked at their first meeting; but matters were soon cleared up; for the former presently advanced to the latter, shook him heartily by the hand, and said—'Mr. Booth, I am ashamed to 'see you; for I have injured you, and I heartily

Digitized by Google

'ask your pardon. I am now perfectly con-
'vinced, that what I hinted to my brother, and
'which I find had like to have produced such fatal
'consequences, was entirely groundless. If you
'will be contented with my asking your pardon,
'and spare me the disagreeable remembrance of
'what led me into my error, I shall esteem it as
'the highest obligation.'

Booth answered, 'As to what regards yourself,
'my dear colonel, I am abundantly satisfied; but
'as, I am convinced, some rascal hath been my
'enemy with you in the cruellest manner, I hope
'you will not deny me the opportunity of kicking
'him through the world.'

'By all the dignity of man,' cries Colonel Bath,
'the boy speaks with spirit, and his request is rea-
'sonable.'

Colonel James hesitated a moment, and then whispered Booth, that he would give him all the satisfaction imaginable concerning the whole affair, when they were alone together; upon which Booth addressing himself to Colonel Bath, the discourse turned on other matters, during the remainder of the visit, which was but short, and then both went away together, leaving Colonel Bath as well as it was possible to expect, more to the satisfaction of Booth than of Colonel James, who would not have been displeased if his wound had been more dangerous; for he was grown somewhat weary of a disposition that he rather called captious than heroic, and which, as he every day more and more hated his wife, he apprehended might some time or other give him some trouble; for Bath was the most affectionate of brothers, and had often swore, in the presence of James, that he would eat any man alive who should use his sister ill.

Colonel Bath was well satisfied that his brother and the lieutenant were gone out with a design of

Digitized by Google

tilting, from which he offered not a syllable to dissuade them, as he was convinced it was right, and that Booth could not in honour take, nor the colonel give, any less satisfaction. When they had been gone therefore about half an hour, he rang his bell, to inquire if there was any news of his brother; a question which he repeated every ten minutes, for the space of two hours, when having heard nothing of him, he began to conclude that both were killed on the spot.

While he was in this state of anxiety, his sister came to see him; for, notwithstanding his desire of keeping it a secret, the duel had blazed all over the town. After receiving some kind congratulations on his safety, and some unkind hints concerning the warmth of his temper, the colonel asked her, When she had seen her husband? she answered, not that morning. He then communicated to her his suspicion, told her he was convinced his brother had drawn his sword that day, and that as neither of them had heard any thing from him, he began to apprehend the worst that could happen.

Neither Miss Bellamy nor Mrs. Cibber were ever in a greater consternation on the stage, than now appeared in the countenance of Mrs. James. 'Good Heavens! brother,' cries she, 'what do 'you tell me! you have frightened me to death. '—Let your man get me a glass of water imme- 'diately, if you have not a mind to see me die 'before your face. When, where, how was this 'quarrel, why did you not prevent it, if you 'knew of it? is it not enough to be every day 'tormenting me with hazarding your own life, but 'must you bring the life of one who you know 'must be, and ought to be, so much the dearest of 'all to me, into danger? take your sword, bro- 'ther, take your sword, and plunge it into my 'bosom; it would be kinder of you than to fill it 'with such dreads and terrors.'—Here she swal-

Digitized by Google

lowed the glass of water; and then threw herself back in her chair, as if she had intended to faint away.

Perhaps, if she had so, the colonel would have lent her no assistance; for she had hurt him more than by ten thousand stabs. He sat erect in his chair, with his eyebrows knit, his forehead wrinkled, his eyes flashing fire, his teeth grating against each other, and breathing horror all round him. In this posture he sat for some time silent, casting disdainful looks at his sister. At last, his voice found its way through a passion which had almost choked him, and he cried out: 'Sister, what have 'I done to deserve the opinion you express of me? 'which of my actions hath made you conclude that 'I am a rascal and a coward? look at that poor 'sword, which never woman yet saw but in its 'sheath, what hath that done to merit your desire 'that it should be contaminated with the blood of 'a woman?'

'Alas! brother,' cried she, 'I know not what 'you say, you are desirous, I believe, to terrify me 'out of the little senses I have left. What can I 'have said, in the agonies of grief into which you 'threw me, to deserve this passion?'

'What have you said?' answered the colonel, 'you have said that which if a man had spoken, 'nay, d—n me, if he had but hinted that he 'durst even think, I would have made him eat 'my sword, by all the dignity of man, I would 'have crumbled his soul into powder.—But, I 'consider that the words were spoken by a woman, 'and I am calm again. Consider, my dear, that 'you are my sister, and behave yourself with more 'spirit. I have only mentioned to you my sur-'mise. It may not have happened as I suspect; 'but let what will have happened, you will have 'the comfort that your husband hath behaved 'himself with becoming dignity, and lies in the 'bed of honour.'

Digitized by Google

'Talk not to me of such comfort,' replied the lady, 'it is a loss I cannot survive. But why do I 'sit here lamenting myself; I will go this instant 'and know the worst of my fate, if my trembling 'limbs will carry me to my coach.—Good-morrow, 'dear brother; whatever becomes of me, I am glad 'to find you out of danger.'—The colonel paid her his proper compliments, and she then left the room, but returned instantly back, saying, 'Bro-'ther, I must beg the favour of you to let your 'footman step to my mantua-maker; I am sure it 'is a miracle in my present distracted condition, 'how it came into my head.' The footman was presently summoned, and Mrs. James delivered him his message, which was, to countermand the orders which she had given that very morning, to make her up a new suit of brocade. 'Heaven 'knows,' says she, 'now, when I can wear bro-'cade, or whether ever I shall wear it.' And now having repeated her message with great exactness, lest there should be any mistake, she again lamented her wretched situation, and then departed, leaving the colonel in full expectation of hearing speedy news of the fatal issue of the battle.

But though the reader should entertain the same curiosity, we must be excused from satisfying it, till we have first accounted for an incident which we have related in this very chapter, and which we think deserves some solution. The critic, I am convinced, already is apprized, that I mean the friendly behaviour of James to Booth, which, from what we had before recorded, seemed so little to be expected.

It must be remembered, that the anger which the former of these gentlemen had conceived against the latter, arose entirely from the false account given by Miss Matthews of Booth, whom that lady had accused to Colonel James of having as basely as wickedly traduced his character.

Now, of all the ministers of vengeance, there

Digitized by Google

are none with whom the devil deals so treacherously, as with those whom he employs in executing the mischievous purposes of an angry mistress; for no sooner is revenge executed on an offending lover, than it is sure to be repented, and all the anger which before raged against the beloved object, returns with double fury on the head of his assassin.

Miss Matthews, therefore, no sooner heard that Booth was killed (for so was the report at first, and by a colonel of the army) than she immediately concluded it to be James. She was extremely shocked with the news, and her heart instantly began to relent. All the reasons on which she had founded her love, recurred in the strongest and liveliest colours to her mind, and all the causes of her hatred sunk down and disappeared; or if the least remembrance of any thing which had disobliged her remained, her heart became his zealous advocate, and soon satisfied her that her own fates were more to be blamed than he, and that without being a villain, he could have acted no otherwise than he had done.

In this temper of mind, she looked on herself as the murderer of an innocent man, and what to her was much worse, of the man she had loved, and still did love with all the violence imaginable. She looked on James as the tool with which she had done this murder; and as it is usual for people who have rashly or inadvertently made any animate or inanimate thing the instrument of mischief, to hate the innocent means by which the mischief was effected; (for this is a subtle method which the mind invents to excuse ourselves, the last objects on whom we would willingly wreak our vengeance;) so Miss Matthews now hated and cursed James as the efficient cause of that act which she herself had contrived, and laboured to carry into execution.

She sat down therefore in a furious agitation,

Digitized by Google

little short of madness, and wrote the following letter:

'I HOPE this will find you in the hands of justice, for the murder of one of the best friends that ever man was blest with. In one sense, indeed, he may seem to have deserved his fate, by chusing a fool for a friend; for who but a fool would have believed what the anger and rage of an injured woman suggested; a story so improbable, that I could scarce be thought in earnest when I mentioned it.

'Know then, cruel wretch, that poor Booth loved you of all men breathing, and was, I believe, in your commendation, guilty of as much falsehood as I was in what I told you concerning him.

'If this knowledge makes you miserable, it is no more than you have made

'The unhappy

'F. MATTHEWS.'

CHAP. IX.

Being the last Chapter of the Fifth Book.

WE shall now return to Colonel James and Mr. Booth, who walked together from Colonel Bath's lodging with much more peaceable intention than that gentleman had conjectured, who dreamt of nothing but swords and guns, and implements of war.

The Birdcage-walk in the Park was the scene appointed by James for unburthening his mind. Thither they came, and there James acquainted Booth with all that which the reader knows already, and gave him the letter which we have inserted at the end of the last chapter.

Booth exprest great astonishment at this relation, not without venting some detestation of the

Digitized by Google

wickedness of Miss Matthews; upon which, James took him up, saying, he ought not to speak with such abhorrence of faults, which love for him had occasioned.

'Can you mention love, my dear colonel,' cried Booth, 'and such a woman in the same breath?'

'Yes, faith! can I,' says James; 'for the de-'vil take me, if I know a more lovely woman in 'the world.' Here he began to describe her whole person; but as we cannot insert all the description, so we shall omit it all; and concluded with saying, 'Curse me, if I don't think her the 'finest creature in the universe. I would give half 'my estate, Booth, she loved me as well as she 'doth you. Though, on second consideration, I 'believe I should repent that bargain; for then, 'very possibly, I should not care a farthing 'for her.'

'You will pardon me, dear colonel,' answered Booth; 'but to me there appears somewhat very 'singular in your way of thinking. Beauty is 'indeed the object of liking, great qualities of 'admiration, good ones of esteem; but the devil 'take me, if I think any thing but love to be the 'object of love.'

'Is there not something too selfish,' replied James, 'in that opinion; but without considering 'it in that light, is it not of all things the most 'insipid? all oil! all sugar! zounds! it is enough 'to cloy the sharp-set appetite of a parson. Acids 'surely are the most likely to quicken.'

'I do not love reasoning in allegories,' cries Booth: 'but with regard to love, I declare I never 'found any thing cloying in it. I have lived al-'most alone with my wife near three years toge-'ther, was never tired with her company, nor ever 'wished for any other; and I am sure, I never 'tasted any of the acid you mention to quicken 'my appetite.'

'This is all very extraordinary and romantic to

Digitized by Google

'me,' answered the colonel. 'If I was to be shut 'up three years with the same woman, which 'Heaven forbid! nothing, I think, could keep 'me alive, but a temper as violent as that of Miss 'Matthews. As to love, it would make me sick 'to death, in the twentieth part of that time. If 'I was so condemned, let me see, what would I 'wish the woman to be! I think no one virtue 'would be sufficient. With the spirit of a tigress, 'I would have her be a prude, a scold, a scholar, 'a critic, a wit, a politician, and a jacobite; and 'then, perhaps, eternal opposition would keep up 'our spirits; and wishing one another daily at the 'devil, we should make a shift to drag on a dam-'nable state of life, without much spleen or 'vapours.'

'And so you do not intend,' cries Booth, 'to 'break with this woman.'

'Not more than I have already, if I can help 'it,' answered the colonel.

'And you will be reconciled to her,' said Booth.

'Yes, faith! will I, if I can,' answered the colonel——'I hope you have no objection.'

'None, my dear friend,' said Booth, 'unless on 'your account.'

'I do believe you,' said the colonel; 'and yet, 'let me tell you, you are a very extraordinary 'man, not to desire me to quit her on your own 'account. Upon my soul, I begin to pity the 'woman, who hath placed her affection, perhaps, 'on the only man in England of your age, who 'would not return it. But for my part, I promise 'you, I like her beyond all other women; and 'whilst that is the case, my boy, if her mind was 'as full of iniquity as Pandora's box was of dis-'eases, I'd hug her close in my arms, and only 'take as much care as possible to keep the lid 'down for fear of mischief.——But come, dear 'Booth,' said he, 'let us consider your affairs; 'for I am ashamed of having neglected them so

Digitized by Google

'long; and the only anger I have against this 'wench is, that she was the occasion of it.'

Booth then acquainted the colonel with the promises he had received from the noble lord, upon which, James shook him by the hand, and heartily wished him joy, crying, 'I do assure you if 'you have his interest, you will need no other; 'I did not know you was acquainted with him.'

To which Mr. Booth answered, 'That he was 'but a new acquaintance, and that he was recommended to him by a lady.'

'A lady,' cries the colonel,—'well, I don't ask 'her name. You are a happy man, Booth, 'amongst the women; and I assure you, you 'could have no stronger recommendation. The 'peer loves the ladies, I believe, as well as ever 'Mark Antony did; and it is not his fault, if he 'hath not spent as much upon them. If he once 'fixes his eye upon a woman, he will stick at no-'thing to get her.'

'Ay, indeed!' cries Booth. 'Is that his cha-'racter?'

'Ay, faith!' answered the colonel, 'and the 'character of most men besides him. Few of 'them, I mean, will stick at any thing beside 'their money. Jusque à la Bourse, is sometimes 'the boundary of love as well as friendship. And, 'indeed, I never knew any other man part with 'his money so very freely on these occasions. 'You see, dear Booth, the confidence I have in 'your honour.'

'I hope, indeed, you have,' cries Booth, 'but 'I don't see what instance you now give me of 'that confidence.'

'Have not I shewn you,' answered James, 'where you may carry your goods to market? I 'can assure you, my friend, that is a secret I would 'not impart to every man in your situation, and 'all circumstances considered.'

'I am very sorry, Sir,' cries Booth very gravely,

Digitized by Google

and turning as pale as death, 'you should enter-
'tain a thought of this kind. A thought which
'hath almost frozen up my blood. I am unwil-
'ling to believe there are such villains in the
'world; but there is none of them whom I should
'detest half so much as myself, if my own mind
'had ever suggested to me a hint of that kind. I
'have tasted of some distresses of life, and I know
'not to what greater I may be driven; but my
'honour, I thank Heaven, is in my own power,
'and I can boldly say to Fortune, she shall not
'rob me of it.'

'Have I not expressed that confidence, my dear
'Booth?' answered the colonel. 'And what you
'say now well justifies my opinion; for I do agree
'with you, that, considering all things, it would
'be the highest instance of dishonour.'

'Dishonour, indeed!' returned Booth. 'What!
'to prostitute my wife!—Can I think there is
'such a wretch breathing?'

'I don't know that,' said the colonel; 'but I
'am sure it was very far from my intention to
'insinuate the least hint of any such matter to
'you. Nor can I imagine how you yourself could
'conceive such a thought. The goods I meant
'were no other than the charming person of Miss
'Matthews; for whom I am convinced my lord
'would bid a swinging price against me.'

Booth's countenance greatly cleared up at this declaration, and he answered with a smile, that he hoped he need not give the colonel any assurances on that head. However, though he was satisfied with regard to the colonel's suspicions; yet some chimeras now arose in his brain, which gave him no very agreeable sensations. What these were, the sagacious reader may probably suspect; but if he should not, we may, perhaps, have occasion to open them in the sequel. Here we will put an end to this dialogue, and to the fifth book of this history.

Digitized by Google

AMELIA.

BOOK VI.

CHAP. I.

Panegyrics on Beauty, with other grave Matters.

THE colonel and Booth walked together to the latter's lodgings; for as it was not that day in the week in which all parts of the town are indifferent, Booth could not wait on the colonel.

When they arrived in Spring-Garden, Booth, to his great surprise, found no one at home but the maid. In truth, Amelia had accompanied Mrs. Ellison and her children to his lordship's; for as her little girl shewed a great unwillingness to go without her, the fond mother was easily persuaded to make one of the company.

Booth had scarce ushered the colonel up to his apartment, when a servant from Mrs. James knocked hastily at the door. The lady not meeting with her husband at her return home, began to despair of him, and performed every thing which was decent on the occasion. An apothecary was presently called with hartshorn and sal volatile, a doctor was sent for, and messengers were dispatched every way; amongst the rest, one was sent to inquire at the lodgings of his supposed antagonist.

Digitized by Google

The servant hearing that his master was alive and well above stairs, ran up eagerly to acquaint him with the dreadful situation in which he left his miserable lady at home, and likewise with the occasion of all her distress, saying, That his lady had been at her brother's, and had there heard that his honour was killed in a duel by captain Booth.

The colonel smiled at this account, and bid the servant make haste back to contradict it.—And then turning to Booth, he said, 'Was there ever 'such another fellow as this brother of mine? I 'thought indeed his behaviour was somewhat odd 'at the time. I suppose he overheard me whisper 'that I would give you satisfaction, and thence 'concluded, we went together with a design of 'tilting. D—n the fellow, I begin to grow heartily sick of him, and wish I could get well rid 'of him without cutting his throat, which I sometimes apprehend he will insist on my doing, as a 'return for my getting him made a lieutenant-'colonel.'

Whilst these two gentlemen were commenting on the character of the third, Amelia and her company returned, and all presently came up stairs, not only the children, but the two ladies, laden with trinkets as if they had been come from a fair. Amelia, who had been highly delighted all the morning with the excessive pleasure which her children enjoyed, when she saw colonel James with her husband, and perceived the most manifest marks of that reconciliation which she knew had been so long and so earnestly wished by Booth, became so transported with joy, that her happiness was scarce capable of addition. Exercise had painted her face with vermilion; and the highest good-humour had so sweetened every feature, and a vast flow of spirits had so lightened up her bright eyes, that she was all a blaze of beauty. She

Digitized by Google

seemed, indeed, as Milton sublimely describes Eve,

—— Adorn'd
With what all Earth or Heaven could bestow
To make her amiable.——

Again,

Grace was in all her steps, Heaven in her eye,
In every gesture, dignity and love.

Or, as Waller sweetly, though less sublimely, sings:

Sweetness, truth, and every grace,
Which time and use are wont to teach,
The eye may in a moment reach,
And read distinctly in her face.

Or to mention one poet more, and him of all the sweetest, she seemed to be the very person of whom Suckling wrote the following lines, where, speaking of Cupid, he says,

— All his lovely looks, his pleasing fires,
All his sweet motions, all his taking smiles,
All that awakes, all that inflames desires,
All that sweetly commands, all that beguiles,
He does into one pair of eyes convey,
And there begs leave that he himself may stay.

Such was Amelia at this time when she entered the room; and having paid her respects to the colonel, she went up to her husband, and cried, 'O, my 'dear! never were any creatures so happy as your 'little things have been this whole morning; and 'all owing to my lord's goodness; sure never was 'any thing so good-natured and so generous!'— She then made the children produce their presents, the value of which amounted to a pretty large sum; for there was a gold watch, amongst the trinkets, that cost above twenty guineas.

Digitized by Google

Instead of discovering so much satisfaction on this occasion as Amelia expected, Booth very gravely answered, 'And pray, my dear, how are 'we to repay all these obligations to his lordship?' 'How can you ask so strange a question?' cries Mrs. Ellison, 'how little do you know of the soul 'of generosity (for sure my cousin deserves that 'name,) when you call a few little trinkets given 'to children, an obligation?' 'Indeed, my dear,' cries Amelia, 'I would have stopped his hand, if 'it had been possible; nay, I was forced at last 'absolutely to refuse, or I believe he would have 'laid a hundred pound out on the children; for I 'never saw any one so fond of children, which 'convinces me he is one of the best of men; but 'I ask your pardon, colonel,' said she, turning to him, 'I should not entertain you with these 'subjects; yet I know you have goodness enough 'to excuse the folly of a mother.'

The colonel made a very low assenting bow; and soon after they all sat down to a small repast; for the colonel had promised Booth to dine with him when they first came home together; and what he had since heard from his own house, gave him still less inclination than ever to repair thither.

But besides both these, there was a third and stronger inducement to him to pass the day with his friend; and this was the desire of passing it with his friend's wife. When the colonel had first seen Amelia in France, she was but just recovered from a consumptive habit, and looked pale and thin; besides, his engagements with Miss Bath at that time took total possession of him, and guarded his heart from the impressions of another woman; and when he had dined with her in town, the vexations through which she had lately passed, had somewhat deadened her beauty; besides, he was then engaged, as we have seen, in a very warm pursuit of a new mistress; but now he had

Digitized by Google

no such impediment; for though the reader hath just before seen his warm declarations of a passion for Miss Matthews, yet it may be remembered that he had been in possession of her for above a fortnight; and one of the happy properties of this kind of passion is, that it can with equal violence love half a dozen, or half a score, different objects at one and the same time.

But indeed such were the charms now displayed by Amelia, of which we endeavoured above to draw some faint resemblance, that perhaps no other beauty could have secured him from their influence; and here, to confess a truth in his favour, however the grave, or rather the hypocritical part of mankind may censure it, I am firmly persuaded, that to withdraw admiration from exquisite beauty, or to feel no delight in gazing at it, is as impossible as to feel no warmth from the most scorching rays of the sun. To run away is all that is in our power; and in the former case, if it must be allowed we have the power of running away, it must be allowed also, that it requires the strongest resolution to execute it; for when, as Dryden says,

All Paradise is opened in a face,

how natural is the desire of going thither! and how difficult to quit the lovely prospect!

And yet however difficult this may be, my young readers, it is absolutely necessary, and that immediately too; flatter not yourselves that fire will not scorch as well as warm, and the longer we stay within its reach, the more we shall burn. The admiration of a beautiful woman, though the wife of our dearest friend, may at first perhaps be innocent; but let us not flatter ourselves it will always remain so; desire is sure to succeed; and wishes, hopes, designs, with a long train of mischiefs, tread close at our heels. In affairs of this

Digitized by Google

kind we may most properly apply the well known remark of *nemo repente fuit turpissimus.* It fares, indeed, with us on this occasion, as with the unwary traveller in some parts of Arabia, the desert, whom the treacherous sands imperceptibly betray till he is overwhelmed and lost. In both cases the only safety is by withdrawing our feet the very first moment we perceive them sliding.

This digression may appear impertinent to some readers; we could not, however, avoid the opportunity of offering the above hints; since of all passions there is none against which we should so strongly fortify ourselves as this, which is generally called love; for no other lays before us, especially in the tumultuous days of youth, such sweet, such strong, and almost irresistible temptations; none hath produced in private life such fatal and lamentable tragedies; and what is worst of all, there is none to whose poison and infatuation the best of minds are so liable. Ambition scarce ever produces any evil, but when it reigns in cruel and savage bosoms; and avarice seldom flourishes at all but in the baset and poorest soil. Love, on the contrary, sprouts usually up in the richest and noblest minds; but there, unless nicely watched, pruned, and cultivated, and carefully kept clear of those vicious weeds which are too apt to surround it, it branches forth into wildness and disorder, produces nothing desirable, but chokes up and kills whatever is good and noble in the mind where it so abounds. In short, to drop the allegory, not only tenderness and good-nature, but bravery, generosity, and every virtue are often made the instruments of effecting the most atrocious purposes of this all-subduing tyrant.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. II.

Which will not appear, we presume, unnatural to all married Readers.

IF the table of poor Booth afforded but an indifferent repast to the colonel's hunger, here was most excellent entertainment of a much higher kind. The colonel began now to wonder within himself at his not having before discovered such incomparable beauty and excellence. This wonder was indeed so natural, that lest it should arise likewise in the reader, we thought proper to give the solution of it in the preceding chapter.

During the first two hours, the colonel scarce ever had his eyes off from Amelia; for he was taken by surprise, and his heart was gone before he suspected himself to be in any danger. His mind, however, no sooner suggested a certain secret to him, than it suggested some degree of prudence to him at the same time; and the knowledge that he had thoughts to conceal, and the care of concealing them, had birth at one and the same instant. During the residue of the day, therefore, he grew more circumspect, and contented himself with now and then stealing a look by chance, especially as the more than ordinary gravity of Booth made him fear, that his former behaviour had betrayed to Booth's observation the great and sudden liking he had conceived for his wife, even before he had observed it in himself.

Amelia continued the whole day in the highest spirits and highest good humour imaginable; never once remarking that appearance of discontent in her husband, of which the colonel had taken notice; so much more quick-sighted, as we have somewhere else hinted, is guilt than innocence. Whether Booth had in reality made any such ob-

Digitized by Google

servations on the colonel's behaviour as he had suspected, we will not undertake to determine; yet so far may be material to say, as we can with sufficient certainty, that the change in Booth's behaviour that day, from what was usual with him, was remarkable enough. None of his former vivacity appeared in his conversation; and his countenance was altered from being the picture of sweetness and good-humour, not indeed to sourness or moroseness, but to gravity and melancholy.

Though the colonel's suspicion had the effect which we have mentioned on his behaviour; yet it could not persuade him to depart. In short, he sat in his chair as if confined to it by enchantment, stealing looks now and then, and humouring his growing passion, without having command enough over his limbs to carry him out of the room, till decency at last forced him to put an end to his preposterous visit. When the husband and wife were left alone together, the latter resumed the subject of her children, and gave Booth a particular narrative of all that had passed at his lordship's, which he, though something had certainly disconcerted him, affected to receive with all the pleasure he could; and this affectation, however awkwardly he acted his part, passed very well on Amelia; for she could not well conceive a displeasure, of which she had not the least hint of any cause; and, indeed, at a time, when, from his reconciliation with James, she imagined her husband to be entirely and perfectly happy.

The greatest part of that night Booth past awake; and if during the residue he might be said to sleep, he could scarce be said to enjoy repose; his eyes were no sooner closed, than he was pursued and haunted by the most frightful and terrifying dreams, which threw him into so restless a condition, that he soon disturbed his Amelia, and greatly alarmed her with apprehensions that he

Digitized by Google

had been seized by some dreadful disease, though he had not the least symptoms of a fever by any extraordinary heat, or any other indication, but was rather colder than usual.

As Booth assured his wife that he was very well, but found no inclination to sleep, she likewise bid adieu to her slumbers, and attempted to entertain him with her conversation. Upon which his lordship occurred as the first topic; and she repeated to him all the stories which she had heard from Mrs. Ellison, of the peer's goodness to his sister and his nephew and niece. 'It is impossible, my dear,' says she, 'to describe their fondness for 'their uncle, which is to me an incontestible sign 'of a parent's goodness.'—In this manner she ran on for several minutes, concluding at last, that it was pity so very few had such generous minds joined to immense fortunes.

Booth, instead of making a direct answer to what Amelia had said, cried coldly, 'But do you think, 'my dear, it was right to accept all those expen-'sive toys which the children brought home? And 'I ask you again, what return we are to make for 'these obligations?'

'Indeed, my dear,' cries Amelia, 'you see this 'matter in too serious a light. Though I am the 'last person in the world who would lessen his lord-'ship's goodness (indeed I shall always think we are 'both infinitely obliged to him), yet sure you must 'allow the expense to be a mere trifle to such a vast 'fortune. As for return, his own benevolence, in 'the satisfaction it receives, more than repays it-'self, and I am convinced he expects no other.'

'Very well, my dear,' cries Booth, 'you shall 'have it your way; I must confess I never yet found 'any reason to blame your discernment; and per-'haps I have been in the wrong to give myself so 'much uneasiness on this account.'

'Uneasiness! child,' said Amelia eagerly. 'Good 'Heavens! hath this made you uneasy?'

Digitized by Google

'I do own it hath,' answered Booth, 'and it 'hath been the only cause of breaking my repose.'

'Why then I wish,' cries Amelia, 'all the 'things had been at the devil, before ever the chil-'dren had seen them; and whatever I may think 'myself, I promise you, they shall never more ac-'cept the value of a farthing—If upon this occa-'sion, I have been the cause of your uneasiness, 'you will do me the justice to believe that I was 'totally innocent.'

At those words Booth caught her in his arms, and with the tenderest embrace, emphatically repeating the word innocent, cried—'Heaven for-'bid I should think otherwise! O, thou art the 'best of creatures that ever blessed a man!'

'Well but,' said she, smiling—'Do confess, my 'dear, the truth; I promise you I won't blame 'you nor disesteem you for it; but is not pride 'really at the bottom of this fear of an obligation?'

'Perhaps it may,' answered he, 'or if you will, 'you may call it fear. I own I am afraid of obli-'gations, as the worst kind of debts; for I have 'generally observed those who confer them, ex-'pect to be repaid ten thousand fold.'

Here ended all that is material of their discourse; and a little time afterwards, they both fell fast asleep in one another's arms; from which time Booth had no more restlessness, nor any further perturbation in his dreams.

Their repose, however, had been so much disturbed in the former part of the night, that, as it was very late before they enjoyed that sweet sleep I have just mentioned, they lay abed the next day till noon, when they both rose with the utmost cheerfulness; and while Amelia bestirred herself in the affairs of her family, Booth went to visit the wounded colonel.

He found that gentleman still proceeding very fast in his recovery, with which he was more

Digitized by Google

pleased than he had reason to be with his reception; for the colonel received him very coldly indeed, and when Booth told him, he had received perfect satisfaction from his brother, Bath erected his head, and answered with a sneer, 'Very well, Sir, if you think these matters can be 'so made up, d—n me, if it is any business of 'mine. My dignity hath not been injured.'

'No one, I believe,' cries Booth, 'dare injure 'it.'

'You believe so!' said the colonel; 'I think, 'Sir, you might be assured of it; but this, at 'least, you may be assured of, that if any man 'did, I would tumble him down the precipice of 'hell, d—n me, that you may be assured of.'

As Booth found the colonel in this disposition, he had no great inclination to lengthen out his visit, nor did the colonel himself seem to desire it; so he soon returned back to his Amelia, whom he found performing the office of a cook, with as much pleasure as a fine lady generally enjoys in dressing herself out for a ball.

CHAP. III.

In which the History looks a little backwards.

BEFORE we proceed farther in our history, we shall recount a short scene to our reader which passed between Amelia and Mrs. Ellison, whilst Booth was on his visit to colonel Bath. We have already observed, that Amelia had conceived an extraordinary affection for Mrs. Bennet, which had still increased every time she saw her; she thought she discovered something wonderfully good and gentle in her countenance and disposition, and was very desirous of knowing her whole history.

Digitized by Google

She had a very short interview with that lady this morning in Mrs. Ellison's apartment. As soon therefore as Mrs. Bennet was gone, Amelia acquainted Mrs. Ellison with the good opinion she had conceived of her friend, and likewise with her curiosity to know her story: 'For there must 'be something uncommonly good,' said she, 'in 'one who can so truly mourn for a husband 'above three years after his death.'

'O!' cries Mrs. Ellison, 'to be sure the world 'must allow her to have been one of the best of 'wives. And indeed, upon the whole, she is a 'good sort of woman; and what I like her the 'best for, is a strong resemblance that she bears 'to yourself in the form of her person, and still 'more in her voice. But for my own part, I 'know nothing remarkable in her fortune, unless 'what I have told you, that she was the daughter 'of a clergyman, had little or no fortune, and 'married a poor parson for love, who left her in 'the utmost distress. If you please, I will shew 'you a letter which she writ to me at that time, 'though I insist upon your promise never to men-'tion it to her; indeed, you will be the first per-'son I ever shewed it to.' She then opened her scrutoire, and taking out the letter, delivered it to Amelia, saying, 'There, Madam, is, I believe, 'as fine a picture of distress as can well be drawn.'

'DEAR MADAM,

'As I have no other friend on earth but your-'self, I hope you will pardon my writing to you 'at this season; though I do not know that you 'can relieve my distresses, or if you can, have I 'any pretence to expect that you should. My 'poor dear, O Heavens—my——lies dead in the 'house; and after I had procured sufficient to 'bury him, a set of ruffians have entered my

Digitized by Google

'house, seized all I have, have seized his dear, 'dear corpse, and threaten to deny it burial. For 'Heaven's sake, send me, at least, some advice; 'little Tommy stands now by me crying for 'bread, which I have not to give him.—I can say 'no more than that I am, Your most distressed 'humble servant,

'M. BENNET.'

Amelia read the letter over twice, and then returning it, with tears in her eyes, asked how the poor creature could possibly get through such distress.

'You may depend upon it, Madam,' said Mrs. Ellison, 'the moment I read this account, I posted 'away immediately to the lady. As to the seiz- 'ing the body, that I found was a mere bugbear; 'but all the rest was literally true. I sent imme- 'diately for the same gentleman, that I recom- 'mended to Mr. Booth, left the care of burying the 'corpse to him, and brought my friend and her 'little boy immediately away to my own house, 'where she remained some months in the most 'miserable condition. I then prevailed with her 'to retire into the country, and procured her a 'lodging with a friend at St. Edmundsbury, the 'air and gaiety of which place by degrees reco- 'vered her; and she returned in about a twelve- 'month to town, as well, I think, as she is at 'present.'

'I am almost afraid to ask,' cries Amelia; 'and 'yet I long methinks to know what is become of 'the poor little boy.'

'He hath been dead,' said Mrs. Ellison, 'a 'little more than half a year; and the mother la- 'mented him at first almost as much as she did her 'husband; but I found it indeed rather an easier 'matter to comfort her, though I sat up with her 'near a fortnight upon the latter occasion.'

Digitized by Google

'You are a good creature,' said Amelia, 'and 'I love you dearly.'

'Alas! Madam,' cries she, 'what could I have 'done, if it had not been for the goodness of that 'best of men, my noble cousin! His lordship no 'sooner heard of the widow's distress from me, 'than he immediately settled one hundred and 'fifty pounds a year upon her during her life.'

'Well! how noble, how generous was that!' said Amelia. 'I declare I begin to love your 'cousin, Mrs. Ellison.'

'And I declare if you do,' answered she, 'there 'is no love lost, I verily believe; if you had heard 'what I heard him say yesterday behind your 'back——'

'Why, what did he say, Mrs. Ellison?' cries Amelia.

'He said,' answered the other, 'that you was 'the finest woman his eyes ever beheld. —Ah! it 'is in vain to wish, and yet I cannot help wishing 'too.—O Mrs. Booth! if you had been a single 'woman, I firmly believe I could have made you 'the happiest in the world. And I sincerely think, 'I never saw a woman who deserved it more.'

'I am obliged to you, Madam,' cries Amelia, 'for your good opinion; but I really look on my-'self already as the happiest woman in the world. 'Our circumstances, it is true, might have been a 'little more fortunate; but, O my dear Mrs. Elli-'son! what fortune can be put in the balance with 'such a husband as mine?'

'I am afraid, dear Madam,' answered Mrs. Elli-son, 'you would not hold the scale fairly.—I ac-'knowledge indeed, Mr. Booth is a very pretty 'gentleman; Heaven forbid I should endeavour to 'lessen him in your opinion; yet, if I was to be 'brought to confession, I could not help saying, I 'see where the superiority lies, and that the men 'have more reason to envy Mr. Booth, than the 'women have to envy his lady.'

Digitized by Google

'Nay, I will not bear this,' replied Amelia. 'You will forfeit all my love, if you have the least 'disrespectful opinion of my husband.—You do 'not know him, Mrs. Ellison, he is the best, the 'kindest, the worthiest of all his sex. I have ob- 'served, indeed, once or twice before, that you 'have taken some dislike to him. I cannot con- 'ceive for what reason. If he hath said or done 'any thing to disoblige you, I am sure I can justly 'acquit him of design. His extreme vivacity 'makes him sometimes a little too heedless; but, 'I am convinced, a more innocent heart, or one 'more void of offence, was never in a human 'bosom.'

'Nay, if you grow serious,' cries Mrs. Ellison, 'I have done. How is it possible you should 'suspect I had taken any dislike to a man, to 'whom I have always shewn so perfect a regard! 'but to say I think him, or almost any other man 'in the world, worthy of yourself, is not within 'my power with truth. And since you force the 'confession from me, I declare, I think such 'beauty, such sense, and such goodness united, 'might aspire without vanity to the arms of any 'monarch in Europe.'

'Alas! my dear Mrs. Ellison,' answered Amelia, 'do you think happiness and a crown so closely 'united? how many miserable women have lain 'in the arms of kings?—Indeed, Mrs. Ellison, if 'I had all the merit you compliment me with, I 'should think it all fully rewarded with such a 'man as, I thank Heaven, hath fallen to my lot; 'nor would I, upon my soul, exchange that lot 'with any queen in the universe.'

'Well, there are enow of our sex,' said Mrs. Ellison, 'to keep you in countenance; but I shall 'never forget the beginning of a song of Mr. 'Congreve's, that my husband was so fond of, 'that he was always singing it.

Digitized by Google

'Love's but a frailty of the mind,
'When 'tis not with ambition join'd.

'Love without interest makes but an unsavoury 'dish in my opinion.'

'And pray how long hath this been your opi- 'nion?' said Amelia, smiling.

'Ever since I was born,' answered Mrs. Ellison, 'at least, ever since I can remember.'

'And have you never,' said Amelia, 'deviated 'from this generous way of thinking?'

'Never once,' answered the other, 'in the 'whole course of my life.'

'O Mrs. Ellison! Mrs. Ellison!' cries Amelia, 'why do we ever blame those who are disingenuous 'in confessing their faults, when we are so often 'ashamed to own ourselves in the right. Some 'women now, in my situation, would be angry 'that you had not made confidantes of them; but 'I never desire to know more of the secrets of 'others, than they are pleased to entrust me with. 'You must believe, however, that I should not 'have given you these hints of my knowing all, if 'I had disapproved of your choice. On the con- 'trary, I assure you, I highly approve it. The 'gentility he wants, it will be easy in your power 'to procure for him; and as for his good qualities, 'I will myself be bound for them; and I make 'not the least doubt, as you have owned to me 'yourself, that you have placed your affections 'on him, you will be one of the happiest women 'in the world.'

'Upon my honour,' cries Mrs. Ellison, very gravely, 'I do not understand one word of what 'you mean.'

'Upon my honour, you astonish me,' said Amelia; 'but I have done.'

'Nay then,' said the other, 'I insist upon know- 'ing what you mean.'

Digitized by Google

'Why, what can I mean,' answered Amelia, 'but your marriage with sergeant Atkinson?'

'With sergeant Atkinson!' cries Mrs. Ellison eagerly, 'my marriage with a sergeant?'

'Well, with Mr. Atkinson then, Captain Atkinson, if you please; for so I hope to see him.'

'And have you really no better opinion of me,' said Mr. Ellison, 'than to imagine me capable 'of such condescension! What have I done, dear 'Mrs. Booth, to deserve so low a place in your 'esteem? I find, indeed, as Solomon says, *Women 'ought to watch the door of their lips.* How little 'did I imagine that a little harmless freedom in 'discourse, could persuade any one that I could 'entertain a serious intention of disgracing my 'family! for of a very good family am I come, I 'assure you, Madam, though I now let lodgings. 'Few of my lodgers, I believe, ever came of a 'better.'

'If I have offended you, Madam,' said Amelia, 'I am very sorry, and ask your pardon; but be-'sides what I heard from yourself, Mr. Booth told 'me ——'

'O yes!' answered Mrs. Ellison, 'Mr. Booth, I 'know is a very good friend of mine.—Indeed, 'I know you better than to think it could be 'your own suspicion.—I am very much obliged 'to Mr. Booth truly.'

'Nay,' cries Amelia, 'the sergeant himself is in 'fault; for Mr. Booth, I am positive, only re-'peated what he had from him.'

'Impudent coxcomb!' cries Mrs. Ellison. 'I 'shall know how to keep such fellows at a proper 'distance for the future—I will tell you, dear Ma-'dam, all that happened. When I rose in the 'morning, I found the fellow waiting in the en-'try; and as you had exprest some regard for him 'as your foster-brother, nay, he is a very genteel 'fellow, that I must own, I scolded my maid for 'not shewing him into my little back-room; and

Digitized by Google

'I then asked him to walk into the parlour. 'Could I have imagined he would have construed 'such little civility into an encouragement.'

'Nay, I will have justice done to my poor 'brother too,' said Amelia. 'I myself have seen 'you give him much greater encouragement than 'that.'

'Well, perhaps, I have,' said Mrs. Ellison. 'I 'have been always too unguarded in my speech, 'and cannot answer for all I have said.' She then began to change her note, and with an affected laugh, turned all into ridicule; and soon afterwards the two ladies separated, both in apparent good-humour; and Amelia went about those domestic offices in which Mr. Booth found her engaged at the end of the preceding chapter.

CHAP. IV.

Containing a very extraordinary Incident.

IN the afternoon, Mr. Booth, with Amelia and her children, went to refresh themselves in the Park. The conversation now turned on what past in the morning with Mrs. Ellison, the latter part of the dialogue, I mean, recorded in the last chapter. Amelia told her husband, that Mrs. Ellison so strongly denied all intentions to marry the sergeant, that she had convinced her the poor fellow was under an error, and had mistaken a little too much levity for serious encouragement; and concluded, by desiring Booth not to jest with her any more on that subject.

Booth burst into a laugh, at what his wife said. 'My dear creature,' said he, 'how easy is thy 'honesty and simplicity to be imposed on! how 'little dost thou guess at the art and falsehood of 'women! I knew a young lady, who, against her 'father's consent, was married to a brother officer

Digitized by Google

'of mine. And as I often used to walk with her '(for I knew her father intimately well), she would 'of her own accord take frequent occasions to 'ridicule and vilify her husband (for so he was at 'the time), and exprest great wonder and indig-'nation at the report which she allowed to pre-'vail, that she should condescend ever to look at 'such a fellow, with any other design than of 'laughing at, and despising him. The marriage 'afterwards became publicly owned, and the lady 'was reputably brought to bed. Since which, I 'have often seen her; nor hath she ever appeared 'to be in the least ashamed of what she had for-'merly said, though, indeed, I believe she hates 'me heartily for having heard it.'

'But for what reason,' cries Amelia, 'should she 'deny a fact, when she must be so certain of our 'discovering it, and that immediately?'

'I cannot answer what end she may propose,' said Booth. 'Sometimes one would be almost per-'suaded that there was a pleasure in lying itself. 'But this I am certain, that I would believe the 'honest sergeant on his bare word, sooner than I 'would fifty Mrs. Ellisons on oath. I am con-'vinced he would not have said what he did to me, 'without the strongest encouragement; and, I 'think, after what we have been both witnesses 'to, it requires no great confidence in his vera-'city, to give him an unlimited credit with regard 'to the lady's behaviour.'

To this Amelia made no reply; and they dis-coursed of other matters during the remainder of a very pleasant walk.

When they returned home, Amelia was sur-prised to find an appearance of disorder in her apartment. Several of the trinkets, which his lordship had given the children, lay about the room; and a suit of her own clothes, which she had left in her drawers, was now displayed upon the bed.

Digitized by Google

She immediately summoned her little girl up stairs, who, as she plainly perceived the moment she came up with a candle, had half cried her eyes out; for though the girl had opened the door to them, as it was almost dark, she had not taken any notice of this phænomenon in her countenance.

The girl now fell down upon her knees, and cried,—'For Heaven's sake, Madam, do not be 'angry with me. Indeed, I was left alone in the 'house; and hearing somebody knock at the door, 'I opened it, I am sure thinking no harm. I did 'not know but it might have been you, or my 'master, or madam Ellison; and immediately as 'I did, the rogue burst in and ran directly up 'stairs, and what he hath robbed you of I cannot 'tell; but I am sure I could not help it; for he 'was a great swinging man, with a pistol in each 'hand; and, if I had dared to call out, to be sure 'he would have killed me. I am sure I was never 'in such a fright in my born days, whereof I am 'hardly come to myself yet. I believe he is some-'where about the house yet; for I never saw him 'go out.'

Amelia discovered some little alarm at this narrative, but much less than many other ladies would have shewn; for a fright is, I believe, some time laid hold of as an opportunity of disclosing several charms peculiar to that occasion. And which, as Mr. Addison says of certain virtues,

> ——— Shun the day, and lie conceal'd
> In the smooth seasons, and the calms of life.

Booth having opened the window, and summoned in two chairmen to his assistance, proceeded to search the house; but all to no purpose; the thief was flown, though the poor girl, in her state of terror, had not seen him escape.

But now a circumstance appeared which greatly

Digitized by Google

surprised both Booth and Amelia; indeed, I believe it will have the same effect on the reader; and this was, that the thief had taken nothing with him. He had, indeed, tumbled over all Booth's and Amelia's clothes, and the children's toys, but had left all behind him.

Amelia was scarce more pleased than astonished at this discovery, and re-examined the girl, assuring her of an absolute pardon, if she confessed the truth, but grievously threatening her if she was found guilty of the least falsehood. 'As for a 'thief, child,' says she, 'that is certainly not 'true; you have had somebody with you, to 'whom you have been shewing the things; there-'fore tell me plainly who it was.'

The girl protested in the solemnest manner that she knew not the person; but as to some circumstances she began to vary a little from her first account, particularly as to the pistols; concerning which, being strictly examined by Booth, she at last cried—'To be sure, Sir, he must have had 'pistols about him.' And instead of persisting in his having rushed in upon her, she now confessed, that he had asked at the door for her master and mistress; and that at his desire she had shewn him up stairs, where he at first said he would stay till their return home; 'but, indeed,' cried she, 'I 'thought no harm; for he looked like a gentle-'man-like sort of man. And, indeed, so I thought 'he was for a good while, whereof he sat down and 'behaved himself very civilly, till he saw some of 'master's and miss's things upon the chest of 'drawers; whereof he cried, "Heyday! what's "here?" and then he fell to tumbling about the 'things like any mad. Then I thinks, thinks I 'to myself, to be sure he is a highwayman, whereof 'I did not dare to speak to him; for I knew ma-'dam Ellison and her maid was gone out, and 'what could such a poor girl as I do against a great strong man? and besides, thinks I, to be

Digitized by Google

'sure he hath got pistols about him, though I can-
'not indeed (that I will not do for the world)
'take my Bible oath that I saw any; yet to be
'sure he would have soon pulled them out and
'shot me dead, if I had ventured to have said any
'thing to offend him.'

'I know not what to make of this,' cries Booth.
'The poor girl, I verily believe, speaks to the best
'of her knowledge. A thief it could not be; for
'he hath not taken the least thing; and it is plain
'he had the girl's watch in his hand.—If it had
'been a bailiff, surely he would have staid till our
'return. I can conceive no other from the girl's
'account, than that it must have been some
'madman.—

'O good Sir!' said the girl, 'now you men-
'tion it, if he was not a thief, to be sure he must
'have been a madman; for indeed he looked, and
'behaved himself too, very much like a madman;
'for now I remember it, he talked to himself, and
'said many strange kind of words that I did not
'understand. Indeed, he looked altogether as I
have seen people in Bedlam; besides, if he was
'not a madman, what good could it do him to
'throw the things all about the room, in such a
'manner? and he said something too about my
'master, just before he went down stairs; I was
'in such a fright, I cannot remember particu-
'larly; but I am sure they were very ill words;
'he said he would do for him, I am sure he said
'that, and other wicked bad words too, if I could
'but think of them.'

'Upon my word,' said Booth, 'this is the most
'probable conjecture; but still I am puzzled to
'conceive who it should be; for I have no mad-
'man to my knowledge of my acquaintance; and
'it seems, as the girl says, he asked for me.' He
then turned to the child, and asked her if she was
certain of that circumstance.

The poor maid, after a little hesitation, an-

Digitized by Google

swered, 'Indeed, Sir, I cannot be very positive; 'for the fright he threw me into afterwards, drove 'every thing almost out of my mind.'

'Well, whatever he was,' cries Amelia, 'I am 'glad the consequence is no worse; but let this 'be a warning to you, little Betty, and teach you 'to take more care for the future. If ever you 'should be left alone in the house again, be sure 'to let no persons in, without first looking out at 'the window, and seeing who they are. I promised 'not to chide you any more on this occasion, and 'I will keep my word; but it is very plain you 'desired this person to walk up into our apart-'ment, which was very wrong in our absence.'

Betty was going to answer—but Amelia would not let her, saying, 'Don't attempt to excuse 'yourself; for I mortally hate a liar, and can for-'give any fault sooner than falsehood.'

The poor girl then submitted; and now Amelia, with her assistance, began to replace all things in their order; and little Emily, hugging her watch with great fondness, declared she would never part with it any more.

Thus ended this odd adventure, not entirely to the satisfaction of Booth; for, besides his curiosity, which, when thoroughly roused, is a very troublesome passion, he had, as is, I believe, usual with all persons in his circumstances, several doubts and apprehensions of he knew not what. Indeed, fear is never more uneasy than when it doth not certainly know its object; for on such occasions the mind is ever employed in raising a thousand bugbears and phantoms, much more dreadful than any realities, and like children, when they tell tales of hobgoblins, seems industrious in terrifying itself.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. V.

Containing some Matters not very unnatural.

MATTERS were scarce sooner reduced into order and decency, than a violent knocking was heard at the door, such indeed as would have persuaded any one not accustomed to the sound, that the madman was returned in the highest spring-tide of his fury.

Instead, however, of so disagreeable an appearance, a very fine lady presently came into the room, no other, indeed, than Mrs. James herself; for she was resolved to shew Amelia, by the speedy return of her visit, how unjust all her accusations had been of any failure in the duties of friendship; she had moreover another reason to accelerate this visit, and that was, to congratulate her friend on the event of the duel between Colonel Bath and Mr. Booth.

The lady had so well profited by Mrs. Booth's remonstrance, that she had now no more of that stiffness and formality which she had worn on a former occasion. On the contrary, she now behaved with the utmost freedom and good-humour, and made herself so very agreeable, that Amelia was highly pleased and delighted with her company.

An incident happened during this visit, that may appear to some too inconsiderable in itself to be recorded; and yet, as it certainly produced a very strong consequence in the mind of Mr. Booth, we cannot prevail on ourselves to pass it by.

Little Emily, who was present in the room while Mrs. James was there, as she stood near that lady, happened to be playing with her watch, which she was so greatly overjoyed had escaped safe from the madman. Mrs. James, who exprest great

Digitized by Google

fondness for the child, desired to see the watch, which she commended as the prettiest of the kind she had ever seen.

Amelia caught eager hold of this opportunity to spread the praises of her benefactor. She presently acquainted Mrs. James with the donor's name, and ran on with great encomiums on his lordship's goodness, and particularly on his generosity. To which Mrs. James answered, 'O! certainly, Ma-'dam, his lordship hath universally the character 'of being extremely generous—where he likes.'

In uttering these words, she laid a very strong emphasis on the three last monosyllables, accompanying them at the same time with a very sagacious look, a very significant leer, and a great flirt with her fan.

The greatest genius the world hath ever produced, observes in one of his most excellent plays, that

> —— Trifles, light as air,
> Are to the jealous confirmations strong
> As proofs of holy writ.

That Mr. Booth began to be possessed by this worst of fiends, admits, I think, no longer doubt; for at this speech of Mrs. James, he immediately turned pale, and from a high degree of cheerfulness, was all on a sudden struck dumb, so that he spoke not another word till Mrs. James left the room.

The moment that lady drove from the door, Mrs. Ellison came up stairs. She entered the room with a laugh, and very plentifully rallied both Booth and Amelia concerning the madman, of which she had received a full account below stairs; and at last asked Amelia, if she could not guess who it was; but without receiving an answer, went on, saying, 'For my own part, I fancy 'it must be some lover of yours! some person

Digitized by Google

'that hath seen you, and so is run mad with love. 'Indeed, I should not wonder if all mankind were 'to do the same. La! Mr. Booth, what makes 'you grave? why you are as melancholy as if you 'had been robbed in earnest. Upon my word, 'though, to be serious, it is a strange story; and 'as the girl tells it, I know not what to make of 'it. Perhaps it might be some rogue that in-'tended to rob the house, and his heart failed 'him; yet, even that would be very extraordinary. 'What, did you lose nothing, Madam?'

'Nothing at all,' answered Amelia. 'He did 'not even take the child's watch.'

'Well, captain,' cries Mrs. Ellison, 'I hope you 'will take more care of the house to-morrow; for 'your lady and I shall leave you alone to the care 'of it. Here, Madam,' said she, 'here is a pre-'sent from my lord to us; here are two tickets 'for the masquerade at Ranelagh. You will be so 'charmed with it! It is the sweetest of all diver-'sions.'

'May I be damned, Madam,' cries Booth, 'if 'my wife shall go thither.'

Mrs. Ellison started at these words, and, indeed, so did Amelia; for they were spoke with great vehemence. At length the former cried out with an air of astonishment, 'Not let your lady go to 'Ranelagh, Sir?'

'No, Madam,' cries Booth, 'I will not let my 'wife go to Ranelagh.'

'You surprise me,' cries Mrs. Ellison. 'Sure 'you are not in earnest.'

'Indeed, Madam,' returned he, 'I am seriously 'in earnest. And what is more, I am convinced 'she would of her own accord refuse to go.'

'Now, Madam,' said Mrs. Ellison, 'you are to 'answer for yourself; and I will for your husband, 'that, if you have a desire to go, he will not re-'fuse you.'

'I hope, Madam,' answered Amelia with great

Digitized by Google

gravity, 'I shall never desire to go to any place 'contrary to Mr. Booth's inclinations.'

'Did ever mortal hear the like?' said Mrs. Ellison; 'you are enough to spoil the best husband 'in the universe. Inclinations! what, is a woman 'to be governed then by her husband's inclina-'tions, though they are never so unreasonable?'

'Pardon me, Madam,' said Amelia, 'I will not 'suppose Mr. Booth's inclinations ever can be un-'reasonable. I am very much obliged to you for 'the offer you have made me; but I beg you will 'not mention it any more; for, after what Mr. 'Booth hath declared, if Ranelagh was a Heaven 'upon earth, I would refuse to go to it.'

'I thank you, my dear,' cries Booth; 'I do as-'sure you, you oblige me beyond my power of 'expression by what you say; but I will endea-'vour to shew you, both my sensibility of such 'goodness, and my lasting gratitude to it.'

'And pray, Sir,' cries Mrs. Ellison, 'what can 'be your objection to your lady's going to a place, 'which, I will venture to say, is as reputable as 'any about town, and which is frequented by the 'best company?'

'Pardon me, good Mrs. Ellison,' said Booth. 'As my wife is so good to acquiesce without know-'ing my reasons, I am not, I think, obliged to 'assign them to any other person.'

'Well,' cries Mrs. Ellison, 'if I had been told 'this, I would not have believed it. What, refuse 'your lady an innocent diversion, and that too 'when you have not the pretence to say it would 'cost you a farthing?'

'Why will you say any more on this subject, 'dear Madam?' cries Amelia. 'All diversions are 'to me matters of such indifference, that the bare 'inclinations of any one for whom I have the 'least value, would at all times turn the balance 'of mine. I am sure then after what Mr. Booth 'hath said ——'

Digitized by Google

'My dear,' cries he, taking her up hastily, 'I 'sincerely ask your pardon, I spoke inadvertently, 'and in a passion—I never once thought of con- 'trolling you—nor ever would.—Nay, I said in 'the same breath you would not go; and, upon 'my honour, I meant nothing more.'

'My dear,' said she, 'you have no need of mak- 'ing any apology. I am not in the least offended, 'and am convinced you will never deny me what 'I shall desire.'

'Try him, try him, Madam,' cries Mrs. Ellison; 'I will be judged by all the women in town, if it 'is possible for a wife to ask her husband any thing 'more reasonable. You cannot conceive what a 'sweet, charming, elegant, delicious place it is.— 'Paradise itself can hardly be equal to it.'

'I beg you will excuse me, Madam,' said Ame- lia; 'nay, I entreat you will ask me no more; for 'be assured I must and will refuse—Do let me de- 'sire you to give the ticket to poor Mrs. Bennet. 'I believe it would greatly oblige her.'——

'Pardon me, Madam,' said Mrs. Ellison. 'If 'you will not accept of it, I am not so distressed 'for want of company as to go to such a public 'place with all sorts of people, neither. I am al- 'ways very glad to see Mrs. Bennet at my own 'house; because I look upon her as a very good 'sort of woman; but I don't chuse to be seen with 'such people in public places.'

Amelia exprest some little indignation at this last speech, which she declared to be entirely be- yond her comprehension; and soon after Mrs. Elli- son, finding all her efforts to prevail on Amelia were ineffectual, took her leave, giving Mr. Booth two or three sarcastical words, and a much more sarcastical look at her departure.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VI.

A Scene, in which some Ladies will possibly think Amelia's Conduct exceptionable.

BOOTH and his wife being left alone, a solemn silence prevailed during a few minutes. At last, Amelia, who though a good, was yet a human creature, said to her husband, 'Pray, my dear, 'do inform me, what could put you into so great 'a passion when Mrs. Ellison first offered me the 'tickets for this masquerade?'

'I had rather you would not ask me,' said Booth. 'You have obliged me greatly in your ready ac-'quiescence with my desire, and you will add 'greatly to the obligation by not inquiring the 'reason of it. This you may depend upon, Amelia, 'that your good and happiness are the great ob-'jects of all my wishes, and the end I propose in 'all my actions. This view alone could tempt me 'to refuse you any thing, or to conceal any thing 'from you.'

'I will appeal to yourself,' answered she, 'whe-'ther this be not using me too much like a child, 'and whether I can possibly help being a little 'offended at it?'

'Not in the least,' replied he, 'I use you only 'with the tenderness of a friend. I would only en-'deavour to conceal that from you, which I think 'would give you uneasiness if you knew. These 'are called the pious frauds of friendship.'

'I detest all fraud,' says she; 'and pious is too 'good an epithet to be joined to so odious a word. 'You have often, you know, tried these frauds with 'no better effect than to tease and torment me.— 'You cannot imagine, my dear, but that I must 'have a violent desire to know the reason of words 'which, I own, I never expected to have heard.

Digitized by Google

'And the more you have shewn a reluctance to 'tell me, the more eagerly I have longed to know. Nor can this be called a vain curiosity; since I seem so much interested in this affair. If after 'all this, you still insist on keeping the secret, I 'will convince you, I am not ignorant of the duty 'of a wife, by my obedience; but I cannot help 'telling you, at the same time, you will make me 'one of the most miserable of women.'

'That is,' cries he, 'in other words, my dear 'Emily, to say, I will be contented without the 'secret; but I am resolved, to know it, neverthe-'less.'

'Nay, if you say so,' cries she, 'I am con-'vinced you will tell me—Positively, dear Billy, I 'must and will know.'

'Why, then, positively,' says Booth, 'I will tell 'you. And I think I shall then shew you, that 'however well you may know the duty of a wife, 'I am not always able to behave like a husband. 'In a word then, my dear, the secret is no more 'than this; I am unwilling you should receive 'any more presents from my lord.'

'Mercy upon me!' cries she, with all the marks of astonishment; 'what! a masquerade ticket!'—

'Yes, my dear,' cries he, 'that is, perhaps, the 'very worst and most dangerous of all. Few men 'make presents of those tickets to ladies, without 'intending to meet them at the place. And what 'do we know of your companion? To be sincere 'with you, I have not liked her behaviour for 'some time. What might be the consequence of 'going with such a woman to such a place, to 'meet such a person, I tremble to think.—And 'now, my dear, I have told you my reason of 'refusing her offer with some little vehemence, 'and, I think, I need explain myself no farther.'

'You need not, indeed, Sir,' answered she. 'Good Heavens! did I ever expect to hear this! 'I can appeal to Heaven, nay, I will appeal to

Digitized by Google

'yourself, Mr. Booth, if I have ever done any 'thing to deserve such a suspicion. If ever any 'action of mine, nay, if ever any thought had 'stained the innocence of my soul, I could be 'contented.'

'How cruelly do you mistake me,' said Booth—'what suspicion have I ever shewn?'

'Can you ask it,' answered she, 'after what you 'have just now declared?'

'If I have declared any suspicion of you,' replied he, 'or if ever I entertained a thought leading that way, may the worst of evils that ever 'afflicted human nature attend me. I know the 'pure innocence of that tender bosom, I do know 'it, my lovely angel, and adore it. The snares 'which might be laid for that innocence, were 'alone the cause of my apprehension. I feared 'what a wicked and voluptuous man, resolved to 'sacrifice every thing to the gratification of a 'sensual appetite with the most delicious repast, 'might attempt. If ever I injured the unspotted 'whiteness of thy virtue in my imagination, may 'hell——'

'Do not terrify me,' cries she, interrupting him, 'with such imprecations. O Mr. Booth! Mr. 'Booth! you must well know that a woman's 'virtue is always her sufficient guard. No husband, without suspecting that, can suspect any 'danger from those snares you mention—And 'why, if you are liable to take such things into 'your head, may not your suspicions fall on me, 'as well as on any other? for sure nothing was 'ever more unjust, I will not say ungrateful, than 'the suspicions which you have bestowed on his 'lordship. I do solemnly declare, in all the 'times I have seen the poor man, he hath never 'once offered the least forwardness. His behaviour hath been polite indeed, but rather remarkably distant than otherwise. Particularly 'when we played at cards together. I don't re-

Digitized by Google

'member he spoke ten words to me all the even-
'ing; and when I was at his house, though he
'shewed the greatest fondness imaginable to the
'children, he took so little notice of me, that a
'vain woman would have been very little pleased
'with him. And if he gave them many presents,
'he never offered me one. The first, indeed,
'which he ever offered me was that which you
'in that kind manner forced me to refuse.'

'All this may be only the effect of art,' said Booth. 'I am convinced he doth, nay, I am con-
'vinced he must like you; and my good friend
'James, who perfectly well knows the world, told
'me, that his lordship's character was that of the
'most profuse in his pleasures with women; nay,
'what said Mrs. James this very evening, "his
"lordship is extremely generous—where he likes."
'——I shall never forget the sneer with which
'she spoke these last words.'

'I am convinced they injure him,' cries Amelia.
'As for Mrs. James, she was always given to be
'censorious; I remarked it in her long ago, as her
'greatest fault. And for the colonel, I believe he
'may find faults enow of this kind in his own
'bosom, without searching after them among his
'neighbours. I am sure he hath the most impu-
'dent look of all the men I know; and I solemnly
'declare, the very last time he was here, he put
'me out of countenance more than once.'

'Colonel James,' answered Booth, 'may have
'his faults very probably. I do not look upon him
'as a saint, nor do I believe he desires I should; but
'what interest could he have in abusing this lord's
'character to me? or why should I question his
'truth, when he assured me that my lord had never
'done an act of beneficence in his life, but for the
'sake of some woman whom he lusted after?'

'Then I myself can confute him,' replied Amelia; 'for besides his service to you, which, for the
'future, I shall wish to forget, and his kindness to

Digitized by Google

'my little babes, how inconsistent is the character 'which James gives of him, with his lordship's be- 'haviour to his own nephew and niece, whose ex- 'treme fondness of their uncle sufficiently pro- 'claims his goodness to them?—I need not mention 'all that I have heard from Mrs. Ellison, every 'word of which I believe; for I have great reason 'to think, notwithstanding some little levity, 'which, to give her her due, she sees and con- 'demns in herself, she is a very good sort of 'woman.'

'Well, my dear,' cries Booth, 'I may have been 'deceived, and I heartily hope I am so; but in 'cases of this nature, it is always good to be on 'the surest side; for, as Congreve says,

'The wise too jealous are: Fools too secure.'

Here Amelia burst into tears, upon which, Booth immediately caught her in his arms, and endeavoured to comfort her.—Passion, however, for a while, obstructed her speech, and at last she cried, 'O, Mr. Booth! can I bear to hear the 'word jealousy from your mouth?'

'Why, my love,' said Booth, 'will you so fatally 'misunderstand my meaning; how often shall I 'protest that it is not of you, but of him that I 'was jealous. If you could look into my breast, 'and there read all the most secret thoughts of 'my heart, you would not see one faint idea to 'your dishonour.'

'I don't misunderstand you, my dear,' said she, 'so much as I am afraid you misunderstand your- 'self. What is it you fear?—you mention not 'force, but snares. Is not this to confess, at least 'that you have some doubt of my understanding? '—do you then really imagine me so weak as to 'be cheated of my virtue?—am I to be deceived 'into an affection for a man, before I perceive the 'least inward hint of my danger? No, Mr. Booth, 'believe me, a woman must be a fool indeed, who

Digitized by Google

'can have in earnest such an excuse for her ac-
'tions. I have not, I think, any very high opi-
'nion of my judgement; but so far I shall rely
'upon it, that no man breathing could have any
'such designs as you have apprehended, without
'my immediately seeing them; and how I should
'then act, I hope my whole conduct to you hath
'sufficiently declared.'

'Well, my dear,' cries Booth, 'I beg you will
'mention it no more; if possible, forget it. I hope,
'nay, I believe, I have been in the wrong; pray
'forgive me.'

'I will, I do forgive you, my dear,' said she, 'if
'forgiveness be a proper word for one whom you
'have rather made miserable than angry; but let
'me entreat you to banish for ever all such suspi-
'cions from your mind. I hope Mrs. Ellison hath
'not discovered the real cause of your passion;
'but, poor woman, if she had, I am convinced it
'would go no farther. Oh, Heavens! I would
'not for the world it should reach his lordship's
'ears. You would lose the best friend that ever
'man had.—Nay, I would not for his own sake,
'poor man! for I really believe it would affect
'him greatly, and I must, I cannot help having an
'esteem for so much goodness. An esteem which,
'by this dear hand,' said she, taking Booth's hand and kissing it, 'no man alive shall ever obtain by
'making love to me.'

Booth caught her in his arms and tenderly embraced her. After which, the reconciliation soon became complete; and Booth, in the contemplation of his happiness, entirely buried all his jealous thoughts.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VII.

A Chapter in which there is much Learning.

THE next morning, whilst Booth was gone to take his morning walk, Amelia went down into Mrs. Ellison's apartment, where, though she was received with great civility, yet she found that lady was not at all pleased with Mr. Booth; and by some hints which dropt from her in conversation, Amelia very greatly apprehended that Mrs. Ellison had too much suspicion of her husband's real uneasiness. For that lady declared very openly, she could not help perceiving what sort of man Mr. Booth was: 'And though I have the 'greatest regard for you, Madam, in the world,' said she, 'yet I think myself in honour obliged 'not to impose on his lordship, who, I know very 'well, hath conceived his greatest liking to the 'captain, on my telling him, that he was the best 'husband in the world.'

Amelia's fears gave her much disturbance; and when her husband returned, she acquainted him with them; upon which occasion, as it was natural, she resumed a little the topic of their former discourse, nor could she help casting, though in very gentle terms, some slight blame on Booth, for having entertained a suspicion, which, she said, might in its consequence very possibly prove their ruin, and occasion the loss of his lordship's friendship.

Booth became highly affected with what his wife said, and the more, as he had just received a note from Colonel James, informing him that the colonel had heard of a vacant company in the regiment which Booth had mentioned to him, and that he had been with his lordship about it, who had promised to use his utmost interest to obtain him the command.

The poor man now expressed the utmost concern

Digitized by Google

for his yesterday's behaviour, said, 'he believed 'the devil had taken possession of him,' and concluded with crying out, 'Sure I was born, my 'dearest creature, to be your torment.'

Amelia no sooner saw her husband's distress, than she instantly forbore whatever might seem likely to aggravate it, and applied herself with all her power to comfort him. 'If you will give me leave to offer 'my advice, my dearest soul,' said she, 'I think 'all might yet be remedied. I think you know me 'too well, to suspect that the desire of diversion 'should induce me to mention what I am now going 'to propose; and in that confidence, I will ask you 'to let me accept my lord's and Mrs. Ellison's offer, 'and go to the masquerade. No matter how little 'while I stay there; if you desire it, I will not be 'an hour from you. I can make an hundred ex-'cuses to come home, or tell a real truth, and say, 'I am tired of the place. The bare going will cure 'every thing.'

Amelia had no sooner done speaking, than Booth immediately approved her advice, and readily gave his consent. He could not, however, help saying, 'That the shorter her stay was there, the more 'agreeable it would be to him; for you know, my 'dear,' said he, 'I would never willingly be a 'moment out of your sight.'

In the afternoon, Amelia sent to invite Mrs. Ellison to a dish of tea; and Booth undertook to laugh off all that had passed yesterday, in which attempt, the abundant good-humour of that lady gave him great hopes of success.

Mrs. Bennet came that afternoon to make a visit, and was almost an hour with Booth and Amelia, before the entry of Mrs. Ellison.

Mr. Booth had hitherto rather disliked this young lady, and had wondered at the pleasure which Amelia declared she took in her company. This afternoon, however, he changed his opinion, and liked her almost as much as his wife had done. She did indeed

Digitized by Google

behave at this time with more than ordinary gaiety; and good-humour gave a glow to her countenance that set off her features, which were very pretty, to the best advantage, and lessened the deadness that had usually appeared in her complexion.

But if Booth was now pleased with Mrs. Bennet, Amelia was still more pleased with her than ever. For when their discourse turned on love, Amelia discovered that her new friend had all the same sentiments on that subject with herself. In the course of their conversation, Booth gave Mrs. Bennet a hint of wishing her a good husband, upon which both the ladies declaimed against second marriages, with equal vehemence.

Upon this occasion, Booth and his wife discovered a talent in their visitant, to which they had been before entirely strangers, and for which they both greatly admired her; and this was that the lady was a good scholar, in which, indeed, she had the advantage of poor Amelia, whose reading was confined to English plays and poetry; besides which, I think, she had conversed only with the divinity of the great and learned Dr. Barrow, and with the histories of the excellent bishop Burnet.

Amelia delivered herself on the subject of second marriages with much eloquence and great good sense; but when Mrs. Bennet came to give her opinion, she spoke in the following manner: 'I 'shall not enter into the question concerning the 'legality of bigamy. Our laws certainly allow 'it, and so, I think, doth our religion. We are 'now debating only on the decency of it, and in 'this light, I own myself as strenuous an advo-'cate against it, as any Roman matron would have 'been in those ages of the commonwealth, when 'it was held to be infamous. For my own 'part, how great a paradox soever my opinion 'may seem, I solemnly declare, I see but little 'difference between having two husbands at one 'time, and at several times; and of this I am very

Digitized by Google

'confident, that the same degree of love for a first 'husband, which preserves a woman in the one 'case, will preserve her in the other. There is one 'argument, which I scarce know how to deliver 'before you, Sir; but—if a woman hath lived with 'her first husband without having children, I think 'it unpardonable in her to carry barrenness into a 'second family. On the contrary, if she hath 'children by her first husband, to give them a 'second father is still more unpardonable.'

'But suppose, Madam,' cries Booth, interrupting her, with a smile, 'she should have had children 'by her first husband, and have lost them.'

'That is a case,' answered she, with a sigh, 'which I did not desire to think of, and, I must 'own it, the most favourable light in which a second 'marriage can be seen. But the scriptures, as Pe-'trarch observes, rather suffer them than com-'mend them; and St. Jerom speaks against them 'with the utmost bitterness.'—'I remember,' cries Booth, (who was willing either to shew his learn-ing, or to draw out the lady's) 'a very wise law of 'Charondas the famous lawgiver of Thurium, by 'which men, who married a second time, were re-'moved from all public councils; for it was scarce 'reasonable to suppose, that he who was so great 'a fool in his own family, should be wise in public 'affairs. And though second marriages were per-'mitted among the Romans, yet they were at the 'same time discouraged; and those Roman widows 'who refused them, were held in high esteem, and 'honoured with what Valerius Maximus calls the 'Corona Pudicitiæ. In the noble family of Ca-'milli, there was not, in many ages, a single in-'stance of this, which Martial calls adultery:

'Quæ toties nubit, non nubit; adultera lege est.'

'True, Sir,' says Mrs. Bennet, 'and Virgil calls 'this a violation of chastity, and makes Dido 'speak of it with the utmost detestation:

Digitized by Google

'Sed mihi vel Tellus optem prius ima dehiscat;
'Vel Pater omnipotens adigat me fulmine ad umbras,
'Pallentes umbras Erebi, noctemque profundam,
'Ante, pudor, quam te violo, aut tua jura resolvo.
'Ille meos, primum qui me sibi junxit, amores,
'Ille habeat semper secum, servetque Sepulchro.'

She repeated these lines with so strong an emphasis, that she almost frightened Amelia out of her wits, and not a little staggered Booth, who was himself no contemptible scholar—He expressed great admiration of the lady's learning; upon which she said it was all the fortune given her by her father, and all the dower left her by her husband; 'and sometimes,' said she, 'I am in-'clined to think I enjoy more pleasure from it, 'than if they had bestowed on me what the world 'would in general call more valuable.'—She then took occasion, from the surprise which Booth had affected to conceive at her repeating Latin with so good a grace, to comment on that great absurdity (for so she termed it) of excluding women from learning; for which they were equally qualified with the men, and in which so many had made so notable a proficiency; for a proof of which, she mentioned Madam Dacier, and many others.

Though both Booth and Amelia outwardly concurred with her sentiments, it may be a question whether they did not assent rather out of complaisance, than from their real judgement.

CHAP. VIII.

Containing some unaccountable Behaviour in Mrs. Ellison.

MRS. Ellison made her entrance at the end of the preceding discourse. At her first appearance, she put on an unusual degree of formality and re-

Digitized by Google

serve; but when Amelia had acquainted her that she designed to accept the favour intended her, she soon began to alter the gravity of her muscles, and presently fell in with that ridicule which Booth thought proper to throw on his yesterday's behaviour.

The conversation now became very lively and pleasant, in which Booth having mentioned the discourse that passed in the last chapter, and having greatly complimented Mrs. Bennet's speech on that occasion, Mrs. Ellison, who was as strenuous an advocate on the other side, began to rally that lady extremely, declaring it was a certain sign she intended to marry again soon. 'Married ladies,' cries she, 'I believe, sometimes think themselves 'in earnest in such declarations, though they are 'oftener perhaps meant as compliments to their 'husbands; but when widows exclaim loudly a-'gainst second marriages, I would always lay a 'wager, that the man, if not the wedding-day, is 'absolutely fixed on.'

Mrs. Bennet made very little answer to this sarcasm. Indeed, she had scarce opened her lips from the time of Mrs. Ellison's coming into the room, and had grown particularly grave at the mention of the masquerade. Amelia imputed this to her being left out of the party, a matter which is often no small mortification to human pride, and in a whisper asked Mrs. Ellison, if she could not procure a third ticket; to which she received an absolute negative.

During the whole time of Mrs. Bennet's stay, which was above an hour afterwards, she remained perfectly silent, and looked extremely melancholy. This made Amelia very uneasy, as she concluded she had guessed the cause of her vexation. In which opinion she was the more confirmed, from certain looks of no very pleasant kind, which Mrs. Bennet now and then cast on Mrs. Ellison, and the more than ordinary concern that appeared in

Digitized by Google

the former lady's countenance, whenever the masquerade was mentioned, and which, unfortunately, was the principal topic of their discourse; for Mrs. Ellison gave a very elaborate description of the extreme beauty of the place, and elegance of the diversion.

When Mrs. Bennet was departed, Amelia could not help again soliciting Mrs. Ellison for another ticket, declaring she was certain Mrs. Bennet had a great inclination to go with them; but Mrs. Ellison again excused herself from asking it of his lordship. 'Besides, Madam,' says she, 'if I would 'go thither with Mrs. Bennet, which, I own to 'you, I don't chuse, as she is a person whom *no-* '*body knows*, I very much doubt whether she her- 'self would like it; for she is a woman of a very 'unaccountable turn. All her delight lies in books; 'and, as for public diversions, I have heard her 'often declare her abhorrence of them.'

'What then,' said Amelia, 'could occasion all 'that gravity, from the moment the masquerade 'was mentioned?'

'As to that,' answered the other, 'there is no 'guessing. You have seen her altogether as grave 'before now. She hath had these fits of gravity at 'times ever since the death of her husband.'

'Poor creature!' cries Amelia, 'I heartily pity 'her; for she must certainly suffer a great deal 'on these occasions. I declare I have taken a 'strange fancy to her.'

'Perhaps you would not like her so well, if you 'knew her thoroughly,' answered Mrs. Ellison.— 'She is, upon the whole, but of a whimsical tem- 'per; and, if you will take my opinion, you should 'not cultivate too much intimacy with her. I know 'you will never mention what I say; but she is like 'some pictures which please best at a distance.'

Amelia did not seem to agree with these sentiments, and she greatly importuned Mrs. Ellison to be more explicit, but to no purpose; she continued

Digitized by Google

to give only dark hints to Mrs. Bennet's disadvantage; and, if ever she let drop something a little too harsh, she failed not immediately to contradict herself, by throwing some gentle commendations into the other scale; so that her conduct appeared utterly unaccountable to Amelia, and, upon the whole, she knew not whether to conclude Mrs. Ellison to be a friend or enemy to Mrs. Bennet.

During this latter conversation, Booth was not in the room; for he had been summoned down stairs by the sergeant, who came to him with news from Murphy, whom he had met that evening, and who assured the sergeant, that if he was desirous of recovering the debt, and which he had before pretended to have on Booth, he might shortly have an opportunity; for that there was to be a very strong petition to the board, the next time they sat. Murphy said further, That he need not fear having his money; for that to his certain knowledge the captain had several things of great value, and even his children had gold watches.

This greatly alarmed Booth, and still more, when the sergeant reported to him from Murphy, that all these things had been seen in his possession within a day last past. He now plainly perceived, as he thought, that Murphy himself, or one of his emissaries, had been the supposed madman; and he now very well accounted to himself in his own mind, for all that had happened, conceiving that the design was to examine into the state of his effects, and to try whether it was worth his creditors while to plunder him by law.

At his return to his apartment, he communicated what he had heard to Amelia and Mrs. Ellison, not disguising his apprehensions of the enemy's intentions; but Mrs. Ellison endeavoured to laugh him out of his fears, calling him faint-hearted, and assuring him he might depend on her lawyer. —'Till you hear from him,' said she, 'you may 'rest entirely contented; for, take my word for

Digitized by Google

'it, no danger can happen to you, of which you 'will not be timely apprised by him. And as for 'the fellow that had the impudence to come into 'your room, if he was sent on such an errand as 'you mention, I heartily wish I had been at home; 'I would have secured him safe with a constable, 'and have carried him directly before justice 'Thresher. I know the justice is an enemy to 'bailiffs, on his own account.'

This heartening speech a little roused the courage of Booth, and somewhat comforted Amelia, though the spirits of both hath been too much hurried, to suffer them either to give or receive much entertainment that evening; which Mrs. Ellison perceiving, soon took her leave, and left this unhappy couple to seek relief from sleep, that powerful friend to the distressed, though, like other powerful friends, he is not always ready to give his assistance to those who want it most.

CHAP. IX.

Containing a very strange Incident.

WHEN the husband and wife were alone, they again talked over the news which the sergeant had brought; on which occasion, Amelia did all she could to conceal her own fears, and to quiet those of her husband. At last she turned the conversation to another subject, and poor Mrs. Bennet was brought on the carpet. 'I should be 'sorry,' cries Amelia, 'to find I had conceived an 'affection for a bad woman; and yet I begin to 'fear Mrs. Ellison knows something of her more 'than she cares to discover; why else should she 'be unwilling to be seen with her in public? Be'sides, I have observed that Mrs. Ellison hath 'been always backward to introduce her to me, 'nor would ever bring her to my apartment, though

Digitized by Google

'I have often desired her. Nay, she hath given 'me frequent hints not to cultivate the acquain-'tance. What do you think, my dear?—I should 'be very sorry to contract an intimacy with a 'wicked person.'

'Nay, my dear,' cries Booth, 'I know no more 'of her, nor indeed hardly so much as yourself. 'But this I think, that if Mrs. Ellison knows any 'reason why she should not have introduced Mrs. 'Bennet into your company, she was very much 'in the wrong in introducing her into it.'

In discourses of this kind they past the remainder of the evening. In the morning Booth rose early, and going down stairs received from little Betty a sealed note, which contained the following words:

Beware, beware, beware,
For I apprehend a dreadful snare
Is laid for virtuous innocence,
Under a friend's false pretence.

Booth immediately inquired of the girl who brought this note? and was told, it came by a chairman, who, having delivered it, departed without saying a word.

He was extremely staggered at what he read, and presently referred the advice to the same affair on which he had received those hints from Atkinson the preceding evening; but when he came to consider the words more maturely, he could not so well reconcile the two last lines of this poetical epistle, if it may be so called, with any danger which the law gave him reason to apprehend. Mr. Murphy and his gang could not well be said to attack either his innocence or virtue; nor did they attack him under any colour or pretence of friendship.

After much deliberation on this matter, a very strange suspicion came into his head; and this was, that he was betrayed by Mrs. Ellison. He had for

Digitized by Google

some time conceived no very high opinion of that good gentlewoman, and he now began to suspect that she was bribed to betray him. By this means he thought he could best account for the strange appearance of the supposed madman. And when this conceit once had birth in his mind, several circumstances nourished and improved it. Among these, were her jocose behaviour and raillery on that occasion, and her attempt to ridicule his fears from the message which the sergeant had brought him.

This suspicion was indeed preposterous, and not at all warranted by, or even consistent with, the character and whole behaviour of Mrs. Ellison, but it was the only one which at that time suggested itself to his mind; and however blameable it might be, it was certainly not unnatural in him to entertain it; for so great a torment is anxiety to the human mind, that we always endeavour to relieve ourselves from it, by guesses, however doubtful or uncertain; on all which occasions, dislike and hatred are the surest guides to lead our suspicion to its object.

When Amelia rose to breakfast, Booth produced the note which he had received, saying, 'My dear, 'you have so often blamed me for keeping secrets 'from you, and I have so often, indeed, endea- 'voured to conceal secrets of this kind from you 'with such ill success, that, I think, I shall never 'more attempt it' Amelia read the letter hastily, and seemed not a little discomposed, then turning to Booth with a very disconsolate countenance, she said, 'Sure fortune takes a delight in terrify- 'ing us! what can be the meaning of this?'—Then fixing her eyes attentively on the paper, she perused it for some time, till Booth cried——'How 'is it possible, my Emily, you can read such stuff 'patiently! the verses are certainly as bad as ever 'were written.' 'I was trying, my dear,' answered she, 'to recollect the hand; for I will take my

Digitized by Google

'oath, I have seen it before, and that very lately,
'and suddenly she cried out with great emotion,
'I remember it perfectly now—It is Mrs. Bennet's
'hand. Mrs. Ellison shewed me a letter from her
'but a day or two ago. It is a very remarkable
'hand, and I am positive it is her's.'

'If it be her's,' cries Booth, 'what can she pos-
'sibly mean by the latter part of her caution? sure
'Mrs. Ellison hath no intention to betray us.'

'I know not what she means,' answered Amelia, 'but I am resolved to know immediately; for I
'am certain of the hand. By the greatest luck in
'the world, she told me yesterday where her lodg-
'ings were, when she pressed me exceedingly to
'come and see her. She lives but a very few doors
'from us, and I will go to her this moment.'

Booth made not the least objection to his wife's design. His curiosity was, indeed, as great as her's, and so was his impatience to satisfy it, though he mentioned not this his impatience to Amelia; and perhaps it had been well for him if he had.

Amelia, therefore, presently equipped herself in her walking dress, and leaving her children to the care of her husband, made all possible haste to Mrs. Bennet's lodgings.

Amelia waited near five minutes at Mrs. Bennet's door, before any one came to open it; at length, a maid-servant appeared, who being asked if Mrs. Bennet was at home, answered with some confusion in her countenance, that she did not know; 'but,
'Madam,' said she, 'if you will send up your name,
'I will go and see.' Amelia then told her name; and the wench, after staying a considerable time, returned and acquainted her that Mrs. Bennet was at home. She was then ushered into a parlour, and told that the lady would wait on her presently.

In this parlour, Amelia cooled her heels, as the phrase is, near a quarter of an hour. She seemed, indeed, at this time, in the miserable situation of one of those poor wretches, who make their morn-

Digitized by Google

ing visits to the great, to solicit favours, or perhaps to solicit the payment of a debt; for both are alike treated as beggars, and the latter sometimes considered as the more troublesome beggars of the two.

During her stay here, Amelia observed the house to be in great confusion; a great bustle was heard above stairs, and the maid ran up and down several times in a great hurry.

At length Mrs. Bennet herself came in. She was greatly disordered in her looks, and had, as the women call it, huddled on her clothes in much haste; for in truth, she was in bed when Amelia first came. Of this fact she informed her, as the only apology she could make for having caused her to wait so long for her company.

Amelia very readily accepted her apology, but asked her with a smile, if these early hours were usual with her? Mrs. Bennet turned as red as scarlet at the question, and answered, 'No, in-'deed, dear Madam. I am for the most part, a 'very early riser; but I happened accidentally to 'sit up very late last night. I am sure I had little 'expectation of your intending me such a favour 'this morning.'

Amelia looking very stedfastly at her, said: 'Is 'it possible, Madam, you should think such a note 'as this would raise no curiosity in me?' She then gave her the note, asking her, if she did not know the hand?

Mrs. Bennet appeared in the utmost surprise and confusion at this instant. Indeed, if Amelia had conceived but the slightest suspicion before, the behaviour of the lady would have been a sufficient confirmation to her of the truth. She waited not, therefore, for an answer, which, indeed, the other seemed in no haste to give; but conjured her in the most earnest manner, to explain to her the meaning of so extraordinary an act of friendship: 'For, so,' said she, 'I esteem it; being convinced

Digitized by Google

'you must have sufficient reason for the warning 'you have given me.'

Mrs. Bennet, after some hesitation, answered; 'I need not, I believe, tell you how much I am 'surprised at what you have shewn me, and the 'chief reason of my surprise is, how you came to 'discover my hand. Sure, Madam, you have not 'shewn it to Mrs. Ellison.'

Amelia declared she had not; but desired she would question her no farther. 'What signifies how 'I discovered it, since your hand it certainly is?'

'I own it is,' cries Mrs. Bennet, recovering her spirits; 'and since you have not shewn it to that 'woman, I am satisfied. I begin to guess now 'whence you might have your information; but 'no matter, I wish I had never done any thing of 'which I ought to be more ashamed—No one can, 'I think, justly accuse me of a crime on that ac-'count; and I thank Heaven, my shame will never 'be directed by the false opinion of the world.— 'Perhaps it was wrong to shew my letter; but when 'I consider all circumstances, I can forgive it.'

'Since you have guessed the truth,' said Amelia, 'I am not obliged to deny it. She, indeed, shewed 'me your letter; but I am sure you have not the 'least reason to be ashamed of it. On the contrary, 'your behaviour on so melancholy an occasion was 'highly praise worthy; and your bearing up under 'such afflictions, as the loss of a husband in so dread-'ful a situation, was truly great and heroical.'

'So Mrs. Ellison then hath shewn you my let-'ter?' cries Mrs. Bennet eagerly.

'Why, did not you guess it yourself?' answered Amelia, 'otherwise I am sure I have betrayed my 'honour in mentioning it. I hope you have not 'drawn me inadvertently into any breach of my 'promise. Did you not assert, and that with an 'absolute certainty, that you knew she had shewn 'me your letter, and that you was not angry with 'her for so doing?'

Digitized by Google

'I am so confused,' replied Mrs. Bennet, 'that 'I scarce know what I say; yes, yes, I remember 'I did say so——I wish I had no greater reason 'to be angry with her than that.'

'For Heaven's sake,' cries Amelia, 'do not de-'lay my request any longer; what you say now 'greatly increases my curiosity; and my mind will 'be on the rack till you discover your whole mean-'ing; for I am more and more convinced, that 'something of the utmost importance was the pur-'port of your message.'

'Of the utmost importance, indeed,' cries Mrs. Bennet, 'at least you will own my apprehensions 'were sufficiently well founded—O gracious Hea-'ven! how happy shall I think myself, if I should 'have proved your preservation! I will, indeed, 'explain my meaning; but, in order to disclose all 'my fears in their just colours, I must unfold my 'whole history to you. Can you have patience, 'Madam, to listen to the story of the most unfor-'tunate of women?'

Amelia assured her of the highest attention; and Mrs. Bennet soon after began to relate what is written in the seventh book of this history.

END OF THE EIGHTH VOLUME.

W. Marchant, Printer, 3, Greville-Street, Holborn.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google